

誅仙

第一集



Time: unknown, should be long, long time ago.

Location: Shenzhou

天地不仁, 以万物为刍狗! (Note 1)

There are no gods in this world; however, since the beginning of history, human beings observed the phenomena occurring around them. Various assortments of strange occurrences, unable to be created or withstood by human capabilities, appeared: lightning, storms as well as many other natural disasters cause death and destruction. As result, humans thought that above there are nine heavens containing the myriad gods; while below exist the nine nether-worlds containing the spirits and ghosts, in hell.

So, the rumor of gods spread around the world. Many humans created their own imaginary gods, praying for days and night; hoping for protection from suffering and harm.

Since ancient times, every living thing must die and meet its end; however, due to fear of Yama (The Lord of Death), humans began to seek the secrets of immortality.

When placed in comparison with other creatures human beings face physical disadvantage; however, they use everything available for advantage. Operating in the willful search of immortality many intelligent people, one after another, spent their entire lives seeking. So far, although true immortality has not been found, select cultivators are able to control significant power within a mortal body. Utilizing the strength of espers some could even deeply affect the world; harnessing powers as strong as thunder. By legend, such people were even said to live for thousands of years without succumbing to the ravages of death. As

people's thoughts turned to the world of the immortals, larger and more significant numbers began the pursuit of spiritual cultivation.

Shenzhou is a wide and boundless land, especially the Central Plains, bearing the most fertile of soil. Nine tenths of the world's population inhabited the rich localities. However, the wastelands surrounding the Central Plain were dangerous. The landscapes were perilous to travel and inhabited by dangerous beasts and poisonous plants; even the people were barbarians who guzzle blood and consume flesh. Legends speak of spiritual beasts which still inhabit the dark valley and forests.

Today, many people continue the search for immortality. The land of Shenzhou is wide, providing home to many wise individuals with diverse beliefs. Immortality, to this day, still has not been found and the cultivators have begun to split into different factions, of both Good and Evil, with conflicts arising between them.

With immortality still in the distance, the power brought forth from cultivation became of important focus to many people.

Today, the Good became strong, while the Evil hid themselves. The three main factions of the good were Jadeon, Skysong and Incense.

Our story began at Jadeon.

Note 1: a saying that complain nature abandon them, and they are being treated as dog

Chapter 1 Jadeon

Mount Jadeon is the highest mountain located in the Central Plain. To the west of the mountain is the river Hong Chuan; to the east lay Sunstream City; its geographic location is significant.

Mount Jadeon stretches for hundreds of miles and has seven peaks. Each peak reaches from into the clouds. Forest, rare ores, animals, waterfalls, and many of its other features are known world-wide.

However, the most famous aspect of Mount Jadeon is the faction which resides there — Jadeon

Jadeon had a long history, having been established more than two thousand years ago. Now, the faction is the leader of the Good. It was said that the founder of Jadeon was a wandering fortune teller, traveling throughout the world. At the age of forty-nine, he passed by Mount Jadeon; he could see the great spiritual power of it. Immediately he proceeded to transcend the mountain. Within a secret cave located there he unearthed an ancient tome. The tome contained a number of different types of magic; all of them were very powerful.

So, for twenty years, he inhabited the cave and studied the tome; doing so he

achieved a little of its attainment. After he left Jadeon, although he could not be the single strongest individual in the world, he was among the highest in strength. Subsequently, he returned to Mount Jadeon and founded a faction by the same name: Jadeon. The tome was comprised of Taoist ideas and, as such, he also dressed in appropriately Taoist clothing. He began to refer to himself as “Mister Jadeon.” Later people referred to him as Master Jadeon.

Master Jadeon died at the age of three hundred and sixty-seven years and left behind ten adopted disciples. Before his death he told them: “According to my knowledge, Mount Jadeon is a rare spiritual location. We Jadeon maintain control over this mountain. We will burgeon into the largest of all factions; never relinquish this mountain. You must remember! Must remember!”

All ten of the disciples nodded and believed the words of Master Jadeon. After a hundred years, as the gods love to play tricks on people; or, that Master Jadeon’s prediction was somehow incorrect, Jadeon did not become the largest faction. Instead, its strength was diminishing.

Out of the ten disciples many met unfortunate ends; two died early, four more were killed during duels, one was permanently disable, another disappeared. Only two disciples remained and, after another fifty years, the occurrence of an earthquake took the life of another, leaving only one of the initial ten alive. Because of the tome that Master Jadeon had located, many conflicts arose; if Master Jadeon had not left some powerful defense seals, Jadeon would already be gone.

As such events continued over four hundred years Jadeon still showed no signs of rising. All six of the peaks had been ransacked and taken control of except for the lone Peak of Widows. Bandits had now inhabited the other six peaks as their base. Many people thought Jadeon was behind all this; however, no matter how hard Jadeon tried to explain and to drive the bandits away, they could not establish the strength to complete the task.

Until thirteen hundred years ago, situations begun to shift.

Perhaps, Master Jadeon's predictions began to take hold, or the gods were growing weary and no longer fooling humans. At that time, in the eleventh generation, a disciple arose who is gift; and who, in the future, will be leader of all--Master Jade Leaf.

After he entered into Jadeon, he took only a year to learn everything that Wu Feng Zi, Jade Leaf's master, had to teach him. After a second year he could almost defeat Wu Feng Zi in cultivation. Wu Feng Zi is so happy and surprised by the outcome that he passed the tome to Jade Leaf. Jade Leaf went to the Moontop Hollow where he remained for thirteen years without leaving.

The night he emerged from Moontop Hollow was full moon and that night the entire Peak of Widows was lit as though it were morning. Strong wind arose, the roar of dragons filled the Mount Jadeon, a violet light struck at the sky, then Moontop Hollow opened, Maser Jadeon Leaf came out with white hair and light surrounding him; everyone thought he had become an immortal.

He then smiled to Wu Feng Zi, "Master please wait, disciple (note1) need to finish something. I will return tomorrow."

No one understood what he meant; the next day, Master Jade Leaf returned having slain the bandits on the other six peaks. Master Jade Leaf suddenly became the most famous person.

After one year had passed, Wu Feng Zi passed the Head of Jadeon to Master Jade Leaf. In fifty years, Jadeon became one of the main factions, and after two hundred years, Jadeon became the leader of the Good.

Master Jade Leaf died at the age of seven hundred and fifty, but only had seven disciples. Seven peaks were given to seven disciples. The main peak is Peak of Widows, where the Head of Jadeon live.

Now, Jadeon maintained nearly a thousand disciples. It was the main faction alongside Skysong and Incense; and, the Head of Jadeon, Master Doyel Shen, was the strongest person in the world.

※ ※ ※

At the foot of Jadeon, fifty miles North West from Sunstream City, there was a village by the name of “Grasstemple Village.” The village consisted of around forty houses of families. They traded firewood with Jadeon to earn money. People from the village saw Jadeon were flying around everyday and, because of such, they saw Jadeon as gods; Jadeon always take care of the villagers.

That day, dark clouds were coming.

The Mount Jadeon with dark cloud above it appeared to be a little frightening.

The villagers, however, have seen such phenomena thousands of times. No one even bothers to pay heed to it and the children, of course, don't care.

“Brat, where are you going?” a shout, with a little laughter, came from a large child, around ten years old leading four to five other children all chasing one more. The boy running away was about two years younger than the large child. With a smile on his face he continued running and turned his face back sometime to make a grimace.

“Shaw Danon, I dare you to keep running!” the big kid shouted again.

Shaw Danon responded, “you think I am idiot!” then he ran even faster.

As they ran, they got closer to the broken temple at the east of the village.

Shaw Danon rushed into the temple, and got tripped by the bottom of the door. The child from behind jumped and sat on him, and the big kid laughed, “I caught you.”

Shaw Danon rolled his eyes, “that doesn’t count. You cheated, how does that count?”

The boy blinked and said, “when did I cheat?”

Shaw Danon said, “Baye, you dare to say you didn’t put the door down there?”

Baye shouted, “no way!”

Shaw Danon turned his head, and not gave in. Baye became furious. He grabbed Shaw Danon’s neck, said angrily, “if I catch you, you lose. You give up?”

Shaw Danon didn’t listen.

Baye tightened his grip, “you give up?”

Shaw Danon's face began to turn red, but still not saying a word.

The more angry Baye became, the more strength he used, and was repeating the same word over and over again.

Other kids began to step back, leaving two ignorant children.

Suddenly a Buddhist phrase came out from the temple, "Amitabha, stop it."

A bony hand appeared, a flick on Baye's hand. Baye felt like he was being shocked by lightning, his hands let go.

Shaw Danon took a deep breath. They looked at each other and reflected on what just happened.

Baye said, "Xiao Fan, sorry, I didn't know..."

Shaw Danon shook his head, "I am alright. Huh, who are you?"

They looked at the temple and saw an old monk standing there, wearing an old cassock, dirty from top to bottom. His hand held a string of jade prayer beads with green glow. There was a dark purple orb mixed between the jade beads.

Note 1: not using "I" is a respect way to say to others.

Chapter 2 Confuse

The old monk did not respond. He peered down at the boys, looked at Baye a few more moments then thought “very good potential, but why such a bad temper?”

Shaw Danon stepped forward and said “hey, who are you? Why have I never seen you before?”

Grasstemple Village was near Jadeon. The inhabitants were mainly Taoist (Dagos); so, Buddhists (Fuwa) were rare near here which was why Shaw Danon was curious.

The old monk looked at him with a smile on his face and responded, “Young donor, your life was at stake. All you needed to do is give up. Had this old monk not helped you, you might have died already!”

Shaw Danon stood there a moment and thought about what the old monk had just said; however, he could not find an answer for him. All he could do was stand there.

Baye glared at the old monk and pulled on Shaw Danon’s hand saying, “Xiao

Fan, this old monk is weird, don't bother with him." Then Baye pulled Shaw Danon out of the temple; the other children followed behind them.

Shaw Danon looked back at the temple. The sky was getting dark, but he was still able to see the old monk in the standing in the temple lonely, but the face was getting fuzzy.

※ ※ ※

Midnight.

Thunder roared. The night wind blew. The dark clouds were coming.

A storm was coming, with a thirst for blood.

The old monk still in the temple, meditating, looked up, Mount Jadeon is getting hazy, with no sound of people, only the sounds of wind and thunder.

A great storm!

As lightning flashed, it lit up the temple for a second, the old monk was already standing at the door. Looking at the sky, he frowned.

At the west-end of the village, a black gas appeared. The old monk, standing in the temple, stared at the gas.

Suddenly, the black gas spiraled, like a tornado, moving toward to the temple.

Traveling at great speed; the monk could see Baye was within the black gas.

The old monk did not hesitate, his skinny body leaped into the black gas.

From an unknown place in the dark, a sound of surprise came, “huh?”

After a few moments, the black gas stopped and circled above the temple. The old monk carried Baye down, a part of his cassock had been torn off.

Under the weak light, Baye’s eyes were closed; breathing steadily, difficult to tell if he was sleeping or fainted.

The old monk didn’t put Baye down. Looking up at the black gas, he said, “Mister’s skill is deeply profound; why are you attacking a little child? What a shame.”

A voice responded from within the darkness; “and who are you? How you dare to interrupt my plan?”

The old monk did not answer, but said, “this is near Mount Jadeon, if Jadeon knew that you, sir, are killing people here, I am fear for you, sir, will have a really difficult time.”

The man in the darkness responded, with disdain, “What is Jadeon? They only have a large number of people. You old bald-headed monk, give me that boy now.”

The old monk clasped his hands together responding, “Amitabha, monks are

mercy. This old monk must not give the child to you.”

The man in the darkness responded, “stupid bald head, you want to die.”

As he spoke, a red light began flashing; Yin energy and ghostly spirits instantly flooded the temple.

“Poison Blood Banner!” the old monk’s face turned angry. “Animal! You practice that type of evil item, against nature and harm the people. I must not let you go!”

The voice did not respond, except for a cold laugh; suddenly, the sky turned red, the scent of blood permeated the air, a two yard banner appeared, ghostly wails grew louder, and the sound of bones crushing filled the air.

“Bald head, die!” the man in the black smoke shouted, and a ghostly face appeared on the banner bearing three horns, four eyes, pointed teeth, long fangs, the eyes on the ghost’s face opened, “Roar!” it became solid, arising out of the banner, attacking towards the old monk.

The old monk grew even more angry; the more powerful the Poison Blood Banner is, the more people need to be killed to power it. With the power of the banner the man is using, it must be fueled by at least three hundreds people’s blood.

That person is heartless!

The ghost is getting closer, old monk still didn’t put Baye down, using the left hand which is holding the Jade Prayer Beads, he drew a circle in mid air, forming

Lion Mark, gold light flash on the fingertips, a golden wheel appeared, blocking the ghost.

“All you have is just a little...” he not finish the word “trick”, when he felt his right arm got bitten by something, the body become numb with paralysis, eyes grew black, the wheel is about to fall.

The ghost’s face forehead separated in half, a large eye appeared, destroyed the wheel and hit hard against the monk’s chest.

The old monk fell back, Baye dropped to the ground, the old monk’s ribs broke, he fell onto the wall with so much force that the wall collapsed.

“HAHAHAHA...” the man laughed wildly.

The old monk stood up, blood spouted out from his mouth, dying the cassock crimson. The poison is getting closer to his heart.

He looked at Baye; he saw a colorful centipede coming out from his clothes. Size of a palm with 7 tails, each tail has its own individual color; very beautiful, but containing horror within.

“Seven Tails Centipede!” the monk’s voice let out as a low groan.

The black smoke growing heavier on his face, blood kept on flowing out from the mouth, seemed like he was going to fall, but not willing to. He look up at the black gas, “you hid that rare poison in that boy and waited, hiding your strength, finding the right time to attack me, you are after my life are you?”

The man in the gas gave a cold laugh “hehehe; right, I am after you Puzhi bald head. Had I not done this, it’s not easy to face your Skysong skills. Now hurry and give me Sinister Orb; in return, I will give you the antidote for Seven Tails Centipede, so you can live!”

Puzhi smiled, “shame that my name has ‘zhi’ (note1), and cannot stand the thought of you practicing Poison Blood Banner; as such, there is no way that I could want to give you Sinister Orb.” His face growing more serious, “If you want me to give you the vilest thing in this world, never think about it!”

The man in the dark got mad, “then go see your Buddha!” The ghost appeared again, it turned, and flew toward to Puzhi.

Puzhi roared, the cassock flapped wildly despite the lack of wind, his body looked bigger than before, left hand filled with strength, the string of Jade Prayer Bead broke, jade light flashed, the beads flew in front of Puzhi, only the purple orb fell straight toward to the ground.

Puzhi’s hand turns, and catches the falling orb, both hands forming Vase Mark, the whole body shone with gold light, and his mouth shouted, “Yan, Ma, Ne, Ba, Mi, Mou!”

“Six Words Incantation!”

When Puzhi said “Mou”, all of the Jade Beads lit up, the ghost came near, but couldn’t advance anymore. It froze in mid air.

Although he blocked it, his body still shook and fell back a little, the Seven

Tails Centipede is the most powerful poison, even with a hundred years of Fuwa practice, its still hard to defend against it. But on his face, a smile appeared.

“Dai!”

Puzhi made a Lion Roar, a Bead broke into pieces, forming the word “Buddha”, striking at the ghost.

The ghost screamed, the red light began to retreat. The man in the dark said, “You bald head!”

He tried to do something, seven, eight Jade bead turn into the word Buddha and hit against the ghost. When the ninth bead hit, five eyes smacked and the ghost fell on the ground, turning into blood.

At the same time, Puzhi coughed out blood, again, the blood had already turned black.

“Ah!” a scream came from the entrance of the the temple.

Puzhi and the man looked at the door, they saw Shaw Danon; Shaw Danon stared, horrified, at the scene.

The Seven Tails Centipede flew, as fast as lighting, toward to Shaw Danon.

Puzhi pointed, a Bead flew between Shaw Danon and the centipede; the centipede, knowing the power of the Bead, flew upward, into the black smoke.

The man in the smoke said, “Hehe, you are deserving to be known as Skysong’s Four Divine Monk, you can defend against my ‘King of Poison Blood’ while heavily injured, but you got poisoned by Seven Tails Centipede, how long you think you can survive? Now hurry and give me Sinister Orb.”

Puzhi’s eyes start to spout out black blood, “even if I am going to die, I need to kill you, devil!”

All the beads lit up, flew toward the black smoke, the bead that chased the Seven Tails Centipede went behind and ambushed him.

“Bang, Bang, Bang” green light shone everywhere, all the black smoke dispersed; a man in a black cloak descended slowly, his face could not be seen; only his eyes, a sword was tied on his back.

Puzhi said, “Sir, you are very strong, why not show your face?”

“Bald head, today I must kill you!”

He took his sword out, the sword has soft light, luminescent but not hurting the eyes.

“Nice sword,” Puzhi said.

The man walked seven steps, sword pointing toward the sky, saying:

“九天玄刹，化为神雷。

煌煌天威，以剑引之!” (Note 2)

Dark clouds gathered, lightning began flashing, huge storm started roaring.

“Thunderblade!” Puzhi said with surprise.

“You are Jadeon!”

Note 1: Zhi mean wisdom

Note 2: “Rage of Nine Skies, turn to divine thunder.

Might of heaven, arrive at this sword!”

Chapter 3 Wish

Shaw Danon's eyes had never witnessed a night such as this; the clouds had never hung so close to the ground as the darkness of this night. The thunder had never roared so loudly; lightning had never flashed so harshly, making it almost difficult for him to see.

It was as though the sky was falling down.

He stood there, watching the old monk and the man in the black glare at each other, as if it were a battle of wits.

Suddenly, he heard a loud clap of thunder, so loud the shock made his ears buzz, before bearing witness to a streak of lightning race across the sky; coming down into the earth and falling on top of the man's sword.

At that moment, the man in black clothes body swelled, his eyes wide open as though it were about to burst apart. Meanwhile, all of Grasstemple was lit by strong light as bright as the dawn.

Lightning dancing upon the tip of the sword in the night is so beautiful that Shaw Danon lost his breath; and, in the eyes of Puzhi, he appeared to be

excited.

“Is this the true power of the Taoists?”

The man only released a loud shout; his left hand pointed at Puzhi, thunder roared and the sword dashed toward Puzhi leaving a dark trail of scorched earth on the ground behind it.

Puzhi took three steps backward, removed the mark, clasped his palms together; cheeky, solemn, his whole body lit up with faint golden light. Puzhi whispered: “my Buddha of compassion!”

“Pop,” all the remaining seven jade beads shatter in front of Puzhi; they took the huge form of the word “Buddha”; so bright that it could not be seen.

The next moment, lightning and the word Buddha, clashed together.

Suddenly, Shaw Danon felt his heart begin to race; it was as though all of his body’s blood flowed in reverse in an instant. His limbs grew soft and he choked for breath; in this moment, the wind stopped, the thunder stopped, the entire world stopped.

Then, he flew backward involuntarily; without even a chance to feel afraid he witnessed bright white light, even brighter than the sun in the sky. Then, the Grasstemple fell apart.

His heart felt empty, all he could hear was fierce wind sweeping in his ear.

He felt terrified, subconsciously he wished to curl up; but, feeling powerless, he had flown to the unknown.

In his head, the idea arose: “Am I dying?”

Intense fear, sudden palpitations in his heart, his body broken into a cold sweat; trembling, slightly.

When standing in front of death, how to face it?

He passed out, unconscious.

※ ※ ※

Puzhi slowly walked over; shambling, carrying Baye and Shaw Danon to a slightly cleaner area. Placing the two children on the ground he felt a pain in his body, it almost split; no longer able to cope, he collapsed.

He inspected his chest; through the burned cassock, faintly visible, he could see a surge of black gas has gradually encircled the chest leaving only a small place uninvaded.

A smile slowly arose on his face as his arms reached into his clothes. His hand trembling, moving shakily and slowly, drew out a red pill; about the size of a fingertip.

Puzhi sigh and whispered: “Hard to believe Dr. Gho was right; I still need to take his ‘Three Days Death Pill’ at the end.”

He hesitated then finally nodded and swallowed the pill.

Then, he looked up to see the mountains.

Finally it begin to rain.

Mount Jadeon stands in the wind and rain, hazy mystery.

“Taoist surgical precision in its method is truly wonderful, it contains godly power. If used together with my Fuwa teachings, accenting each other, it may be possible to discern the secret of immortality. It is a pity that Master Doyel Shen is far stronger than me; like the three of my shixiongs, cannot relinquish faction differences and positions. Alas!”

Puzhi gave a long sigh; looking back, his sight fell on the two children. The rain, growing stronger, wet their hair and faces. Grasstemple was destroyed, there is no nearby place around to block the wind and rain.

His mind suddenly grew tight, he could not help but worry for the two children. He had been forced to use his spirit to form the “Fawin Wisdom” and relied on the Buddhist treasure “Jade Prayer Beads” to create a strong anti-Felkin power in order to block the strength of that man’s “Thunderblade”; the backlash having hit him caused him to run away. However, Puzhi is badly injured and poisoned; even his last chances of survival vanished. His only option, to use the “Three Days Death Pill” he received from Dr. Gho, extended his life by three days only.

“That devil was injured; however, I did not hurt him on the inside. After I have

departed, he will turn back to kill the witnesses. At that time it will not be only the two children; I am afraid that all of the village people's lives will be at risk. This...this...this...What should I do?"

Puzhi's mind was growing confused; although his knowledge was very high, one day he must die. Also, he found himself worrying about the lives of innocent people; however, that man seems to have a high status in Jadeon, if Puzhi rushed up the mountain for help his fears would be of no benefit.

In his mind the situation is most regrettable; however, there is something else that is a major wish in his life. A task he wishes to see completed. As he stands today as one of four Skysong's Divine Monks, admired by the world, honored by others; but for him, more important was, the riddle behind life and death, untying the knot of immortality. However, fifty years ago, he had already come to realize however long he had practiced Fuwa teachings he could only enhance the skill of his practice; he could not solve the riddle of life and death.

He pondered over a few decades; the developments in his thinking have been unprecedented. Today, the Fuwa, Dagos and Felkin reign as the most prosperous three religions, deeply seated in magic. Felkin has developed a bad reputation, having done things in many cruel ways that people could not take; however, Dagos, intensive training with wonderful skills combined with Fuwa teachings, each having their strength, joined in learning; they will be able to break the dead-knot.

But such a prospect had never been pursued; he had always been against by his open-minded shixions. They were saying it is evil thinking. He visited many different Dagos factions, Jadeon alone he had visited several times; however, every time Master Doyal Shen refused.

Thinking of this, he let out a smile; quite self-deprecating the thought arose:

there is only three-days left to live now, what use is there to wanting to live forever?

Although he is open-minded, seeing the two children laying on the ground and, unable to think of any good way, he looked instead to the left. Seeing, in the distance, there is a pine tree which can still block a little wind and rain; better than nothing, he picked up the two children and managed to walk there.

Unable, that is, until he came to stand under the tree; carefully putting the two children down Puzhi, exhausted, suddenly sat down and gasped for breath.

The sky is dark as ink, covering the world. Dark clouds grow lower to the earth, the rain comes down from the sky; cold wind blows, every raindrop on the face brings coldness into the heart.

He looked at the sky, slowly recoiling at the sight; looks at the two children and whispers, “two young donors, old monk wants to help, but does not have the strength. Everything happened because of me, but the harm came to you two; sin!” He lets out a sigh, “if you two were Jadeon disciples, now at Mount Jadeon, among all those people; it should be more safe, but now...”

Suddenly, Puzhi’s mouth dropped open shocked; he kept repeating, “Jadeon disciple, Jadeon disciple” his mind racing, seemed to think of something and had gone blank of the eyes. After a few moments, his whole body began to sweat.

Then, within his eyes, for an unknown reason the excitement began to appear again.

He laughed, traces of madness could be heard within the laughter

“Amazing, amazing! Although I am not able to live for long, if I pass one of them Fuwa practice, then put him in Jadeon to practice Dagos; isn’t it like two birds with one stone, able to save both their lives and still complete my wish!”

His mind settled on the task, his whole existence was very excited, cheeks flushed, eyes bloodshot, subconsciously he looked at Baye and stretched his hands out. But once they were half out he stopped, thought within his mind: “This is very important, today the difference of faction is very important; especially learning secret teachings behind a master, if people find out he will die certainly. Baye is excellent quality, if he is in Jadeon the masters will pay a lot of attention to him. At his young age I am afraid that he cannot hide this big secret!”

Once he thought of this, his mind began to turn; his eyes followed, turning to Shaw Danon, remembering the day he would rather to die than give up by his stubborn temper. Puzhi nodded his head and said: “Quality is not that good, but that does not matter; your future is dependent upon yourself.”

Finished thinking, he did not hesitate; he reached out and hit Shaw Danon a few times, using the last of his strength to wake him up.

※ ※ ※

Shaw Danon woke up, eyes blurred and ears ringing. It took a while before they returned to normal and could see things in front of himself; suddenly, his jaw dropped in shock.

He could see the old monk, wounded everywhere on his body, sitting in front of him. The left side of his body was burned, blackened and ugly; his face had a heavy, dark air about him. He looked as though he was about to die. He could not tell why, but the old monk appeared to be excited; smiling. In addition to this Shaw Danon could also see his friend Baye laying on the ground to the side, unconscious.

“What are you, you doing?” Shaw Danon froze for a long while before asking.

Puzhi did not answer, instead he looked at him and asked: “young donor, it’s raining here; you are a child, why come to this remote place?”

Shaw Danon was slightly startled and responded: “I saw you standing in the temple at dusk, then I saw it’s going to rain and knew the temple is in poor repair; I thought it will be cold, so I came to give you something to eat.”

Puzhi’s lip moved a little, placing his palms together he said: “Good, good. All things are fated, destined to be, my Buddha of compassion.”

Shaw Danon curiously responded: “What did you say?”

Puzhi smiled, “old monk is saying that it seems young donor and I have been meant to meet each other. If that is so, old monk practices a special set of incantations; perhaps, young donor would be willing to learn them?”

Shaw Danon responded: “What is an incantation?”

Puzhi was surprised, then laughed; he stretched out bony hands, touched Shaw Danon’s head and said: “it is nothing complicated, just teaching you some

breathing methods. After you learn them, I also need for you to promise me a few things, okay?”

Shaw Danon seemed to understand, simultaneously, seemed not to but still responded: “Say it.”

Puzhi said: “You never talk about this to anyone else, even to your closest relatives you can not speak of this, can you do that?”

Shaw Danon nodded his head and replied: “I know, I will not say even under threat of death.”

Puzhi’s heart was startled, seeing his young age but his face marked by perseverance; the rain bearing down like blade and sword wet his small face, looking slightly wan and shallow.

Puzhi suddenly took a deep breath and dropped his eyes, no longer able to see him the mouth continued: “In addition, you must practice this everyday, you cannot practice in front of people, only do it in the middle of the night when no one is near by. Finally, if it is not related to life and death you cannot use this practice; otherwise, there will be trouble.”

Here, he again opened his eyes; staring at Shaw Danon he said: “can you do that?”

Shaw Danon hesitated, tilted his head to one side and scratched it. He looked confused, but eventually gave a heavy nod.

Puzhi smiled, and then did not say much; he began to pass Shaw Danon a set

of words.

The words are not really long, only about a thousand in total; however, they are difficult to comprehend and steeped in meaning. Shaw Danon used all of his effort and, after about six hours, he had memorized everything.

Puzhi waited until he memorized everything, then gave a sigh of relief and looked extremely tired. He looked at Shaw Danon with deep compassion in his eyes and said: “old monk has spent his whole life practicing Fuwa skills but has never thought to have a disciple; now, at the edge of death, it is destined for you to be my disciple. Say, you should know my name.” He paused and said: “I am known as Puzhi, a Skysong monk. Uh, child, do you know what Skysong Temple is?”

Shaw Danon thought, shook his head.

Puzhi laughed, said: “what a child.” Then, he remembered something; he took out a deep purple bead, looked at it a few more times then gave it to Shaw Danon and said: “You take this bead and hide it. Do not allow outsiders to see. Once you settle down, find a cliff and throw it away; then, all will be fine. Also, the name I just revealed to you; you must not talk to anyone about it.”

Shaw Danon took the bead and replied: “understood.”

Puzhi touched his head, saying “You and I have fated bond, perhaps in the next life we will meet at the end? Child, you bow to me three times, call me master!”

Shaw Danon looked at Puzhi, he was surprised to find that his smile had

withdrawn in place of a solemn look. He nodded, called out “Master.” Then fell to his knees in prostration, knocking his head on the floor three times. He had just finished knocking and was about to rise when he hear Puzhi give a whispered laugh, laughter symbolizing a deep grief.

When Shaw Danon lifted his head he felt the back get hit, his eyes blacked out and he fell unconscious again.

Note:

Shixiong mean older disciple brother,

Shi mean master, disciple related,

xiong mean older brother.

Chapter 4 Surprise Change

Morning, the rain finally stopped.

The rain drops on the tree are crystal clear, slipping quietly from the edge of the leaves; dropping down, making a beautiful arc in the air, landing on Shaw Danon's face.

Ice coldness woke Shaw Danon up, he opened his eyes, unconsciously cried out: "Master," but there is no one, only Baye asleep beside him.

Everything seemed like a dream.

But, judging by the broken Grasstemple, and his sleeping friend, he knew that it was all true.

He started thinking for a moment, shook his head, went to Baye's side and shoved him hard. Baye's mouth muttered a few words, slowly woke up, rubbed his eyes; before saying a word, he felt a chill hit and could not help but sneeze.

His eyes opened and looked surprised to find himself and Shaw Danon wet,

resting under a pine tree; he could not help but feel stunned, said: “didn’t I sleep at home, how did I get here?”

Shaw Danon shrugged his shoulders and said: “I don’t know, but I am very cold; let go back quickly.”

Baye has all sorts of questions on his mind, but it is really cold out. Immediately he nodded, got up and ran to the village with Shaw Danon.

Upon arriving at the village, the two find things to be not quite right; usually, by this time, the villagers should be up. Today, however, is extremely quiet; even shadows are not to be seen and, with the blowing of the morning breeze a faint bloody smell was in the air.

The two looked at each other, seeing surprise in each other’s eyes, while quickening their pace as they ran to the village. It doesn’t take long for them to reach the entrance of the village; the view reveals the ground in the middle of the village to be covered, more than forty families of Grasstemple village, two hundred people, old and young, men and women, are strewn about the ground; the bodies stiffened into corpses, rivers of blood, flies buzzing about, the stench of blood wafting through the air.

Baye and Shaw Danon, surprised to see such a terrible scene, out of shock, screamed and fainted.

※ ※ ※

After an unknown span of time, Shaw Danon awoke; suddenly sat up, panting, his hands trembling slightly. When he fainted, his mind was full of the faces of

evil, bloody bones of the dead, many nightmares.

He calmed down, looked at the surroundings, saw this is a common room; two small windows, the room furnishings simple and clean, only a few pine tables and chairs, a kettle and cups.

Half of the room is taken up by four beds. Besides the one he is now laying upon, the bed next to him is also slightly messy; as though someone had just been sleeping. As for the other two, quilts are stacked neatly, meticulous.

Above each of the four beds, on the walls, hung a banner that read in large print:

Dao!

This place seemed like a common room inn, or a room for disciples.

Shaw Danon sat for a while; suddenly, his heart could not help but raise an idea: Perhaps, all of this is a nightmare, right? Maybe I've been sleeping here? Perhaps, out of the room, mother will, as usual, call and smile: "You little slacker!"

He slowly got out of bed, put on shoes, step by step, went over to the door.

The door was half shut; from the door, a light wind blew inside.

He walked step-by-step, the two hands holding tighter together. His heart beat fast, holding his breath; soon, he went to the entrance and placed his hand on the door.

At that moment, the door felt as heavy as mountains; sinking like iron.

He grit his teeth, “Ji ah” sound, opened the door.

The bright light from outdoor suddenly flooded in, causing his eyes to narrow. Sun shined on his body, with a slight touch of warmth.

But, his heart, suddenly fell into deep ice.

It's a small courtyard outside the door; there are pine and cypress trees, brush, several flowers. In front there is a corridor leading to outside of the courtyard. Four feet in front of the door, there are a few steps attaching the courtyard and corridors.

At the corner of the steps, sat a lonely child with his hand holding his cheek, sitting there motionless.

Perhaps the door opening disturbed him, The child hesitated, slowly turned.

Baye.

Shaw Dannon's mouth opened, there are hundreds of questions in his mind; but, when the words near the mouth, all turns into silence.

He wanted to shout aloud but, chest depressed, can not shout out.

Two lines of tears, just like that, quietly, slipping.

Two children, just like that, silently, look at each other in the eye.

From far away, there came the singing of the birds in the blue sky, white clouds.

※ ※ ※

Shaw Dannon sitting on the steps on the other side, head down, watching the stone in the courtyard's trail.

In the small courtyard, silence.

After long time, Baye said slowly: "I woke up earlier than you, there was several people in the room, I asked them; here is Mount Jadeon, Peak of Widow."

Shaw Dannon whispered: "Mount Jadeon"

Baye said: "Listen: they said, a few Jadeon disciples passing by saw the village, the village..." here, his voice could not help but choke up.

He put his hands firmly to rub his eyes, stretched his breath, then said: "Then, they found us in the village and brought us to the mountains."

Shaw Dannon's mouth moved a little, but still did not lift his head, and said: "what are we going to do, Jing Yu?"

Baye shook his head sadly and said: “I don’t know.”

Shaw Danon still wanted to talk; however, an unfamiliar voice suddenly intervened from behind: “ah, you all have woken up?”

They looked back at the same time and saw a young Taoist standing there, dressed in blue robes, a quite handsome individual. He trotted over, said: “Master would like to see you, he has some questions for you. Come with me.”

Shaw Danon and Baye looked at each, stood up; Baye said: “Yes, big brother bring us please.”

The young Taoist looked at Baye, nodded his head and said: “come with me.”

Following the Taoist, they leave the courtyard; seeing a much longer corridor in front of them, every twenty feet lays a red pillar. Between each set of two pillars, there is an archway.

They went forward along the corridor; after a few arches and pillars, they find out that in each archway there are almost identical small courtyards which seem like a living place for Jadeon disciples.

Just from the scale, no less than a hundred of those small courtyard, clearly shows the high number of Jadeon disciples.

Taking a long while to get to the end of this corridor immense white walls and a door come into view below. Two large wooden doors made of thick plates, up

to ten yards in height, no one knows where such timber was originally found.

The young Taoist didn't say anything, probably going through here daily, numb to the sights unlike the two children.

As soon as they passed through the doorway the two children held their breaths; eyes looked up in wonder.

Here, appears an almost legendary wonderland.

A very large square lay in the center, the ground is all paved with white marble, light flashes. Distant white clouds swell, seem to coat the area like a veil, actually rolling past under foot. In the center of the square stands a giant bronze tripod every few hundred feet, divided into three rows, each row of three, a total of nine, the rules are placed. Smoke pours from the tripods, clear and not scattering into the air.

"Come this way," seeming to understand the minds of these two children, the young Taoist smiled, let them gaze for a moment, then woke them up and moved along.

"This is one of the Jadeon's Six Scene, the 'Cloud Sea,' the wonders are even greater, ahead!" The young priest walked onward.

Baye could not help but inquire: "What?"

The young priest pointed, said: "Rainbow Bridge."

The two children looked over, saw in the distance at the end of the square, behind hazy mist and clouds, seeing something shiny, they sped up their pace and traveled forward.

The sound of water became audible; followed by a few strange sounds like thunder, coming from an unknown place.

They grew closer and closer, the clouds as gentle as fairies and gently surround by their side, and gradually lift the veil, revealing a clear face.

A stone bridge was placed at the end of the square reaching, with no seat nor pier, across the sky; traveling from one side of the square, going upward, deep into the clouds, like a dragon into the sky. The gentle sound of water came, under the sunlight the whole bridge shone colorfully with the seven colors falling like a rainbow into the earth.

Shaw Danon and Baye stared.

The young Taoist smiled and said: "Come with me." Then headed onto the stone bridge.

Setting foot onto the stone bridge, the two children found that there was water running down on both sides of the bridge's edge; very clear, but the middle remained dry. The sun shone through the clouds on the bridge but, also because of the water, the light turned into a brilliant rainbow.

The Taoist looked at their excitement. He concerned, said: "You must be

careful, if you accidentally fall down you will end up in the bottomless abyss, by that time we won't even have a body to bury."

Shaw Danon and Baye were both startled, then quickly calmed down, walked carefully.

This Rainbow Bridge was extremely long and high, the three walked along it, felt all the clouds around them gradually sink underfoot; they understood that they were getting higher and higher. The strange sound from up ahead still kept coming.

After walking for a while the clouds gradually become thinner; moving out of the clouds, seeing the blue sky stretching infinitely wide, with clouds now under their feet, floating lightly.

In front is where highest peak of Peak of Widow, Jadeon's main hall "Crystal Hall" is located.

The mighty "Crystal Hall" is located at the top of the mountain with clouds surrounding it. A few cranes fly by, circling around in the sky; such celestial environment fills people's hearts with admiration.

Rainbow Bride no longer continues rising into the sky at this time; arched in the air and landing on the ground next to the green pool. At the same time, Taoist songs faintly filter through the air out of "Crystal Hall." The strange sound from before grows ever more loud.

The three got off the Rainbow Bridge, next to the pool a set of large stone steps lead from the pool-side to the door of Crystal Hall. Green pond water,

clear as a mirror, shadows of mountain clearly visible.

They got onto the stone steps and were about to walk toward the door; suddenly, a roar arose from deep within the pond, like the sound of thunder. It was the noises that had boomed earlier.

The young Taoist has taken precaution, leading with his left hand the body floats upward, wafting back twenty feet, far from the pond, and stopping in mid-air. There is, however, no way for the two children to escape; suddenly, their bodies are splashed with pond-water.

But, they do not notice their own situation, simply stare at the giant in front of them, about five yards high, with a dragon head and lion body, covered with scales; giant eyes and a large mouth with two sharp fangs shining in the sun, face grim, frightening to anyone.

The monster shook itself, flapping in the wind; another spray dashed up and then, as though it found something, the giant head stretched over.

Shaw Danon and Baye saw the monster had a head substantially bigger than both of them; In the sunlight, sharp teeth were clearly visible protruding from its mouth. Looking at it ever more closely, they grew really frightened; could not help but hold together tightly, the heart pounding heavily.

At this time, the young Taoist drifted back closer, placing a single hand in front of the chest, respectfully said: "Mister Spirit, Master specially summoned them."

Monster glared down at him, "rip," and snapped the nose; a big pair of eyes

rolled as the Monster used its brains to ponder the situation. Then, ignoring the three, walked to the side; laying on dry ground in the pool, yawned, put its head down lazily, fell asleep under the sun.

The young Taoist told the two shocked children to continue walking, said: “Mister Spirit is an ancient animal tamed by our faction leader Master Jade Leaf a thousand years ago, called ‘Water Kirin.’ That year, Master Jade Leaf expanded Jadeon, slaying evil, Water Kirin also helped us a lot. Now, he is the mountain protector, people call him ‘Mister Spirit.’”

Finished speaking, he bowed to Water Kirin; Shaw Danon was day dreaming, but was pulled by Baye, giving him a look, then they also respectfully bowed to Water Kirin. Water Kirin didn’t look, motionless, but let out a loud snoring sound from his nose.

After completing the salute, the three moved on. Through the high stone steps a golden plaque can be seen, written upon it are the words: “Crystal Hall.” Arriving in front of the mighty hall, the doors open wide, well-lit interior, enshrines Yuanshi Tianzun, Lingbao Tianzun and Daode Tianzun the San Qing statues (note1).

In front of the statues, dozens of people stand within the hall, some in dao some in su (note2), seems like all are Jadeon. Before them there is seven large ebony chairs, three on each side; the center chair sits in front of all, but only six people are sitting there. The last chair, at the right, was empty.

Note 1: San Qing is the gods of Taoism, believe to be create this world. San mean three. Qing mean clear. So it mean those three gods, Yuanshi Tianzu, Lingbao Tianzun and Daode Tianzun, are already exist before the world is

created.

Note 2: Dao mean Taoism, or something similar to that. Su mean normal people. In this sentence it saying how the people look like, some wear taoist clothes and some wear normal people clothes.

Chapter 5 Adopt

Presently, the people inside the hall are discussing something. The young Taoist who lead Shaw Danon and Baye respectfully said: “Master, and Shishu(note 1), disciple Dubaku, in accordance with your orders, has brought two...”

Suddenly his words get interrupted by a mournful sound of shouting echoing from the hall: “Ghost, ghost! Ghosts!”

Dubaku is surprised, but notices Shaw Danon and Baye are even more-so. Although the sound is broken and ugly, it is of extreme familiarity to them. Shaw Danon, not caring much for keeping composure any longer, rushed into the hall and shouted: “Uncle Bozo, Uncle Bozo, is that you?”

Marked by his impatience, his voice contains slight anxiety and sadness. People see it in their eyes, sadness arising from their hearts. In the corner, behind the crowd of people, a middle-aged man dressed in woodcutter’s clothing; both hands clenched tight to cover his head, curled tightly in a corner, shaking. The “ghost, ghost” sound issues out from the gap between his hands.

Shaw Danon and Baye, who had just entered, immediately recognize that the person is a woodcutter from Grasstemple Village. Last name Wang, second child

of the family (note 2), a kind-hearted individual with a smile on his face all the time; always treats the children very well. Beside chopping firewood on the mountain, he also returns with fruits and shares them with all the children.

Shaw Danon rushed to Uncle Bozo without thinking, grabbed his shoulder and shouted loudly: “Uncle Bozo, what happened? Why are the village people all... all dead? My mother and my father, what happened to them? Say something!”

Uncle Bozo heard Shaw Danon asking the same question over and over again; seeming to have touched him on some level he ceased saying “ghost, ghost,” then, slowly, looked up at Shaw Danon.

Everyone in the hall grew quiet, even some of the people who had been seated could not help but stand up; all eyes turned to Shaw Danon.

Uncle Bozo’s eyes shone crimson, filled with fear. He stared at Shaw Dannon for a long while but said nothing, frowned, as though he were struggling to remember something.

At this time a Jadeon could not help but step forward, as he was about to speak he was quietly pulled back by the person beside him.

Shaw Danon witnessed Uncle Bozo’s lack of response; he saw Uncle Bozo staring at him lifelessly. Shaw Dannon could not wait any longer and again shouted: “Uncle Bozo, what happened to you?”

Unexpectedly as Uncle Bozo heard his loud shout, his body began to tremble, fear spread across his face again, he rolled to the other corner, curled up with both hands covering his face; his mouth kept moaning: “Ghost, ghost, ghosts!”

Sighs suddenly issued out from everywhere in the hall, Jadeon people are disappointed; those who stood up have not returned to sitting. Shaw Danon sought to ask again but was grabbed by Baye.

Shaw Danon, puzzled, looked back. Baye's eyes filled with tears, mournfully responded: "there is no use, he has gone insane."

Shaw Danon shocked, did not say anything.

Baye is one year older than him, more meticulous in his thoughts, he looked at everyone in the hall and noted all of them wearing Jadeon clothing, both men and women. Most people in the hall have a weapon with them, the majority being long swords. Six people sitting on chairs appear to be superior to the others, especially the one sitting in the middle dressed in a dark green robe; the head of Jadeon, Master Doyal Shen.

Baye pulled Shaw Danon toward the six people; kneeling in front of Doyal Shen he began to knock his head against the floor, "bang, bang, bang" kowtowing in honor of the faction head.

Doyal Shen looked over them carefully, sighed, said: "Poor child, you can stand up."

Baye has not arisen, peered up at these immortal-like people, sadly replied: "Master, we are young and ignorant but suddenly befallen by great changes; we do not know what to do. You elders are strong, know the past and future, please help us!"

Shaw Danon is not as intelligent as him, so he followed suit and said: “Yeah, immortal elders, you must help us!”

Everyone who was listening could not resist a smile spreading across their face. Shaw Danon is just an ignorant child; but, then, all eyes fall on Baye.

Baye is under great changes at a young age, also facing well-known individuals like Master Doyal Shen, but his speaking remains in perfect order; well organized, his calmness is far stronger than that of usual children, compared to the foolish Shaw Danon, who even thinks Doyal Shen is a god.

The Grasstemple Village tragedy is something that Jadeon had never dealt with for thousands of years. Things occurred right under the eyes of Jadeon, the whole Jadeon faction was shocked. Doyal Shen was surprised and angry when he heard this; he immediately called for a meeting with the other six heads of the houses. Now, except the head of “Bamboo Height” Master Shui Yue who did not attend, the other five are present within the hall.

Being one of the seven house’s heads in Jadeon, of course means they are Jadeon’s strongest people; and Jadeon’s strongest people are, of course, the strongest people in the world. Each of the leaders there are thinking the same thought in their heads as they peer at Baye: “A good piece of jade.”

Master Doyal Shen smiled, said: “I don’t know future or past, but you live near Mount Jadeon, Jadeon cannot ignore this. However, I would like to ask you a few questions, I hope you can answer.”

Baye nodded: “Yes, disciple will answer with all the knowledge I have. Master, please ask.”

Master Doyal Shen nodded his head and said: “how did you escape this tragedy unscathed?”

Baye was stunned for a moment, said: “replying to master’s question; I remember last night I was at home in bed sleeping. However, when I woke up this morning I found myself sleeping under a pine tree next to Xiaofan; I have no idea what happened. Xiaofan woke me up, we returned to the village, then we saw that...that...that scene, and fainted.”

Master Doyal Shen’s eyebrows frowned, he looked at Shaw Danon next and said: “You woke him up; how about you, then?”

Shaw Danon reflected for a moment, then replied: “I don’t know how I got there; when I woke up I saw only Jing Yu next to me, so I woke him up.”

Master Doyal Shen looked at the other leaders, eyes full of confusion. If someone had come to the rescue, why save only the two children? If not, then, there is no other answer for it!

Master Doyal Shen thought for a moment, said: “So that means you know nothing about what happened last night.”

Two of the them responded at the same time: “Yes.”

Master Doyal Shen sighed, cried out: “Xavion.”

“Disciple, here.” A tall and burly Jadeon disciple replied. He was standing behind a seated short, plump man. Xavion appears to be this man’s disciple.

Master Doyal Shen said: “You are the one who first discovered Grasstemple Village’s massacre; what happened that day, repeat it.”

Xavion said: “Yes. This morning, disciple and a few Shi Xiongdi (Note 3) returned from attending to a selection of affairs; we were flying back. When passing over Grasstemple Village, the disciples looked down inadvertently and discovered more than two hundred corpses piled together in the village; a miserable sight. Disciple and the others quickly went to examine but only found the two children. Noticing they were unconscious, allowed a Shidi to bring them back first. Later, in the village latrine,” his hand pointed toward Uncle Bozo who was curled in the corner, then continued “we found this person. But, his eyes are dead; entranced, no matter how disciple asked, no response. Simply kept repeatedly saying: ghost, ghosts, ghost.”

Baye’s body shook a little, asked: “Big brother, did you count the number of people?”

Xavion responded: “I found a Shidi who trades firewood with your village daily, he was very familiar with the people at your village. After he was identified and we were done counting the tally: Grasstemple Village, all forty-two families, a total of two hundred and forty-seven people, aside from you three, are all dead.”

Although his heart had already known, after hearing what Xavion said he comprehended. Baye and Shaw Danon are still not helped and their eyes almost black out and faint again.

Master Doyal Shen sighs softly, his left hand swings, a red bead flies out from his sleeve, flies in front of Shaw Danon and Bay, rolls across their foreheads;

suddenly, cool air flooded their bodies. Their minds, which had originally been taut, nerves seemed to loosen; they grew physically and mentally exhausted, could not help but fall asleep.

Doyal Shen waved his hand, the disciples who have been standing bow, then leave the hall. Within the hall, only six people remain.

At this moment the short, plump man said: “Shixiong, you used ‘Calming Beads’ to temporarily settle them; but, when they wake up, what are you going to do?”

Master Doyal Shen thought for a moment, turned to the Taoist sitting at left and asked: “Vasp Caelo Shidi, what do you think?”

Master Vasp Caelo is a tall, solemn man; head of Jadeon’s “Dragon Head Peak.” In Jadeon, except the head Master Doyal Shen’s main peak, his peak is the strongest. Vasp Caelo is a severe man, in addition to managing his own disciples he is also in charge of punishments in Jadeon. Jadeon disciples respect their head Master Doyal Shen of course, but the most feared is Vasp Caelo.

Master Vasp Caelo’s eyebrows wrinkled, after a while he said: “There is so many strange things in it, I am afraid we cannot clear this matter in a short time. However, Grasstemple Villagers living near us, we cannot ignore them. I think we should adopt them as disciples.”

Master Doyal Shen nodded and said: “Yes, that is what I thought. The two children will be lonely out there; we have to take care of them. I have not

adopted any disciples for years; which Shidi can help me adopt them?”

At that moment, the short plump man, head of Jadeon’s “Bamboo Peak” Tian Bolis, said: “Shixiong, from what I think, it is best not to let two of them remain under the same house. If they stay together, seeing each other constantly, it will remind them of the past; their sadness will never end, it will not be good for their future!”

Master Doyal Shen thought for a moment, said: “Tian Shidi’s right. They are still young, but facing such great changes; we have to resolve their anger in their hearts, so we really should not let them live together in the same place. That means we will need two Shidi to adopt them.” Then, he looked to the others.

Vasp Caelo, Tian Bolis and the rest of the five leaders turn their gaze toward Baye almost all at the same time; no one cares about Shaw Dannon.

In cultivation, quality is of considerable importance; being gifted is better than practicing for hundreds of years. When Jadeon almost fell, they needed to only rely upon Master Jade Leaf who, although very young was also very talented and understood the ancient scrolls; his skill was far greater than the ancestor’s practice. From a member of a small faction of Jadeon, to the leader of the Good.

In addition to strong talent, a good master is certainly hard to find; however, the disciples of superior quality are also rare. Baye’s talent is far greater than others, the heads of Jadeon naturally gravitate towards him.

After a while Tian Bolis coughed, said: “Hei hei, Shixiong, you know that my Bamboo Peak house always has a small amount of people, I’d help you and

adopt one.”

As he was about to point at Baye, the head of “Sun Rise Peaks” Shang Zheng Liang stood up, standing in front of Tian Bolis, and said to Master Doyal Shen: “Shixiong, today when I see this child I think there is a bond between us, it must be suyuan, how about letting him study under my house?”

Each of the houses are gentle to the others on the surface; however, on the inside they are competing with each other, seeing that Baye is extraordinary quality, who will ever know if he is going to be the next Master Jade Leaf. Even if adopting a far worse disciple, just a regular disciple, they never let the other houses have a chance. Because of Master Doyal Shen’s position and strength, no one will compete against him; however, Doyal Shen said he will not adopt; who would pass up this kind of golden opportunity?

Right after Shang Zheng Liang finished, the head of “Sun Set Peak” Master Tian Yun said: “Shang Shixiong, your house has more than two hundred disciples; if each of them have suyuan with you, don’t you have far too many bonds?”

Shang Zheng Liang blushed, was about to reply, Tian Bolis interrupted: “Tian Yun Shixiong is right, speaking of the number of disciples, all of you have more than a hundred. My Bamboo Peak only has seven people, how about...”

Master Vasp Caelo interrupted, said: “Tian Shidi, the two childrens’ lives are so poor, we need to give them the best care rather than focus on the number of people we have.” Then he turned to Master Doyal Shen and saluted, then continued: “Shixiong, this child is really good quality, please let him be adopted under my house; I will carefully teach him to comfort the souls of Grasstemple Village.”

Master Doyal Shen pondered for a moment, Tian Bolis, Shang Zheng Liang and the others' hearts shout: not good, and as expected, after a while, Master Doyal Shen indeed replied: "Vasp Caelo Shidi's right, let him be adopted under your house."

Vasp Caelo smiled and said: "Thank you, Shixiong."

In people's eyes, those who know Vasp Caelo for a long time, Vasp Caelo usually will not smile; today, his smile showed his heart is very happy. Now that Master Doyal Shen has said so, and Vasp Caelo's Dragon Head Peak is so powerful, the rest can only swallow their resentment.

Doyal Shen paused, then said: "Well, the other one"

Shang Zheng Liang coughed, eyes closed; Tian Yun stared at the ceiling of the hall, finding the patterns to be suddenly enthralling; Tian Bolis just: hei hei and gave a hollow laugh, suddenly falling asleep; the head of "Peak of Wind" Ceng Shu Chang, who did not even get time to say anything, is meditating, seeming as though he did not care from the very beginning.

Only the victorious Master Vasp Caelo looked at them coldly, but his eyes are smiling.

Master Doyal Shen cannot help but feel a little embarrassed, but of course he will not say: "so the low quality you will not even bother with." His mind pondered for a moment, then immediately found a scapegoat.

"Tian Shidi." Master Doyal Shen smiled.

Tian Bolis' heart jumped, he immediately got up and was about to speak, Master Doyal Shen interjected: "Grasstemple Village's murder is your disciple, Xavion's, discovery; it seems this child and your Bamboo Peak have a strong bond between you. Hei hei, let him be adopted under your house."

Tian Bolis is extremely anxious. Shaw Danon's quality is average, everyone can see that, so adopting him under the house is just a burden; of course he does not like it. He was about to speak, but how would Doyal Shen give him the opportunity to speak, finishing: "Well, this is the end, Shidi you must pay attention to investigating the murder, understand?"

Vasp Caelo, and the others stood up and said: "Yes."

Master Doyal Shen nodded, coughing several times, but did not look at Tian Bolis, quickly traveling into the back hall. After his shadow disappeared from the hall, in Jadeon Crystal Hall, the sudden laughter broke out.

※ ※ ※

Bamboo Peak disciple Xavion had been waiting outside of Crystal Hall, finally all the masters came out, he ran towards them; seeing Tian Bolis carrying Shaw Danon, could not help but be surprised for a moment and said: "Master, what happened?"

As Tian Bolis saw him his heart burst out with anger, he said furiously: "What, what happened? Are you being stupid!? Why not quickly take it over?"

Xavion quickly took Shaw Danon who is still sleeping. Tian Bolis was angry, his

eyes saw Shang Zheng Liang, Tian Yun, and others who are laughing, his heart grew even more angry, he shouted at Xavion: “Come on, what are you staring at?”

When he finished, ignoring the others, his right hand drew in mid-air, red light flashed, a red sword with red edging leapt to his hand; then, jumping on the sword and piercing through the air he left.

Xavion was puzzled for a moment, but at least he comprehended that he had gained one more Shidi. He looked at Shaw Danon in his arms and said: “Xiao Shidi, I do not even know your name yet.

Shaw Danon still sleeping, unaware of his own destiny, already having taken a great turn.

Note 1: Shiniang Shishu, Shibo, Shixiong, Shidi, Shijie, Shimei.

Shi mean master, so when character put behind “Shi”, it mean master related. Niang mean mom, so Shi niang mean master’s wife. Shu mean younger brother of father, uncle, so Shi Shu master’s Shidi or Shimei. Bo mean older brother of father, so Shi Bo mean master’s Shi Xiong or Shi Jie. Xiong mean older brother, Shi Xiong mean older male disciple. Di mean younger brother, Shidi mean younger male disciple. Jie mean older sister, Shi Jie mean older female disciple. Mei mean younger sister, Shi Mei mean younger female disciple.

Note 2: Uncle Bozo’s name in chinese is Wang Er Shu. Wang is a chinese last name. Er mean second. Shu mean uncle. His last name is Wang, and the second son, and children call him uncle, so his name is Wang Er Shu.

Note 3: Xiongdi-Xiong mean older brother, di mean younger brother, so Xiongdi mean bothers.

Chapter 6 Meeting Master

Shaw Danon awoke, startled for a moment then slowly sat up; the things that had happened over the past rushed into his heart like the tides onto the shore.

Feels like waking up from a nightmare!

“You’ve woken up; that’s good.” A voice issued from the door; a person entered.

Shaw Danon looked up and recognized that he was Xavion, the disciple he had seen in Peak of Widow. In his mind, seeing familiar people, he felt slightly warmer.

“Song big brother.” Shaw Danon cried.

Although Xavion is a large fellow, his heart cannot help but feel sorrow. He went to the bed, touched Shaw Danon’s head, said softly: “xiao shidi, don’t be sad; from now on, we are one big family.”

Shaw Danon not understanding, asked: “What family?”

Xavion smiled and told him that Tian Bolis had adopted him as a disciple. Of course, the minor conflict between the Jadeon elders during the day at the Peak of Widow's Crystal Hall, he will never learn of.

Shaw Danon listened, feeling a bit lost. Jadeon, in such a farm boy's eyes, are like immortals; never having thought for one day that he will have the opportunity to join Jadeon. However, the price is not what he would have willingly paid for it.

He grit his teeth, feeling that it's useless to think about the matter any longer. Then he said: "Song Shixiong."

Xavion smiled, nodded, said: "Good. Xiao Shidi, you have slept for a day and night; you are probably hungry, right?"

Shaw Danon did not think that he was; but, after Xavion asked this, his stomach growled twice.

Xavion laughed: "Come, Xiao Shidi, we will eat something first, and then you can learn a bit about our faction; after, you can go see master and shi niang, and the other shixions."

Shaw Danon nodded his head then got out of bed. Noticing the room he is in is quite similar to Peak of Widow Jadeon disciples' room, but it seemed even larger.

Xavion walked with him as he explained: "Bamboo Peak is different from the other houses in Jadeon. We have very few people, the total number of people is

ten, including you, so the room is larger.” Walking to the entrance there is also a similar small courtyard. Once out of the yard, there is also a hallway; but, there is only a dozen houses, far less than Peak of Widow.

Shaw Dannon followed Xavion toward the kitchen. Learning from his speech, Bamboo Peak has stood since Master Jade Leaf, reaching Tian Bolis’ hands now as the sixth generation; has always been the same way, not many people. Now the elders, except Master Tian Bolis, remain only as Shishu Surin, wife of Tian Bolis. The two have a daughter, Hidi, thirteen years old, two years older than Shaw Dannon; as such, Shaw Dannon is the true Xiao Shidi.

Among all of the disciples of Tian Bolis, Xavion is the oldest shixiong, following him is Wu Dayi, Zheng Dali, He Dazhi, Ludaxin, and Dubishu.

Shaw Danon trying his best to remember: “Oh, Dayi shixiong, Dali shixiong, Dazhi shixiong, Daxin shixiong, Dashu shixiong.....”

Xavion laughed: “it’s Dubishu shixiong.”

Shaw Danon was slightly startled, then realizing, asked: “Why isn’t sixth shixiong the same?”

Xavion said: “Originally, he was indeed called Dashu, but you say that again and listen to it.”

Shaw Dannon murmured: “Dudashu, Dudashu, Uncle Du... ..” then understood and began laughing.

Xavion also laughed: “You know, in fact, master does not really care about it.

However, shi niang is very annoyed and, after a few times, she said how Du shidi does not respect his master and that he needed to learn some lessons; the Du shidi was scared half to death and quickly asked master and shi niang to provide a new name for him. Later, shi niang gave him the name 'Dubishu.' Say this name a few more times."

Shaw Danon lightly said: "Dubishu, Dubishu, gambling must lose" broke out in laughter so hard that he bent himself forward.

Xavion had originally planned to make him laugh, perhaps it would help diminish his feelings of grief; seeing Shaw Danon happy, he smiles: "Sixth shidi was really addicted to gambling before he arrived here. Later, by chance, master brought him here; although he does not gamble anymore, he usually loves to put bets down for fun, shi niang doing this is also a warning."

Shaw Danon smiled, the mournful mood had been softened a lot. Also seeing da shixiong is so kind, the fear of the future also gradually settled down.

After eating in the kitchen, Xavion took Shaw Danon to the Bamboo Peak's main hall "Hall of Quietude." All of the people from Jadeon's Bamboo Peak at the moment are all in the Hall of Quietude. Paved with red bricks, red tiles and stone pillars; a "Tai Chi" carved on the ground, everything is simple.

There are two people seated on chairs, one is Tian Bolis, the second person is a quiet, graceful woman of about thirty; there is an adorable little girl standing beside her with a pair of watery bright eyes.

The other five male disciples lined up, standing below, tall or short, strong or thin, at that moment all of their eyes were peering at Shaw Danon.

Xavion stepped up and said respectfully: “master, shi niang, disciple has brought Xiao Shidi here.”

Tian Bolis snorted, slightly impatient, Surin looked at Shaw Danon, said: “Daren, he had slept for a day and a night. I fear he is hungry, you should take him to eat something first.”

Xavion said: “In reply to Shi niang, I had just went to the kitchen with Xiao Shidi.”

Surin nodded, looked at Tian Bolis, no longer speaking. Tian Bolis snorted again, said: “let’s begin.”

Shaw Danon, uncertain what to do, heard Xavion whisper behind him: “Xiao Shidi, quickly kneel down and kowtow to master.”

Shaw Danon immediately knelt down, “dong dong dong” kowtowed more than ten times in a row, heavily and loudly.

“Ha ha.” Hidi, the little girl could not help laughing. Surin smile: “Good boy, nine times is enough.”

Shaw Danon replied “Oh,” then stopped and looked up. People saw his large, red forehead; could not help laughing aloud. However, in Tian Bolis’ eyes, Shaw Danon was so stupid that he could not even be more stupid; the thought of teaching another idiot in the future, his large head seems to grow slightly bigger.

“Well, that’s it,” Tian Bolis was in a very bad mood, waving: “Daren, you take

care of him first, teach him the rules of our faction and some basic methods of Taoism.”

Xavion answered: “Yes,” hesitated, then said, “But Master, xiao shidi was still little, this entry disciple’s homework”

Tian Bolis rolled his eyes, responded: “do it.” Stood up, and, without looking back, went to the back hall; all the disciples bowed together, said: “escort master.”

After Tian Bolis left, and before anyone said anything, the little girl Hidi already jumped in front of Shaw Danon and started staring at him closely. Shaw Danon, seeing her cute face in front of his eyes, although still young, but already beautiful; when he was in Grasstemple Village, he had never seen such a beautiful girl around his age. He could not help blushing.

“Ha,” Hidi seeming like she had found a treasure, pointing to Shaw Danon, laughed out loud: “shixions, you see, he blushes when he sees me.”

Bursts of laughter filled the hall, Shaw Danon’s face became even more red. Surin came over and said: “Ling’er, don’t make fun of shidi.”

Hidi made a face, but does not take her mother’s words into mind; standing straight up she tells Shaw Danon: “Hey, call me shijie.”

Shaw Danon’s heart was angry, but seeing Hidi’s bright eyes and beautiful body, his heart grew confused, can not help but respond: “shijie.”

Hidi was always the youngest in Bamboo Peak, but now she has gained a shidi

that is younger than her, she was very happy. She was pretending to be an elder in front of Shaw Danon, said: “good boy, xiao shidi, you need to listen to shijie oh.”

Shaw Dannon answered: “Yes.”

Surin pulled her daughter aside, said: “don’t speak anymore nonsense.” Then, she turned to Xavion and said, “Daren, xiao shidi is still young, I am worried that homework may be a little difficult; so, take good care of him.”

Xavion said respectfully: “Yes.”

The other five shidi stood together laughing, looking at each other; all are happy that Xavion is the one tasked with taking care of Shaw Danon.

Just then, Surin suddenly made a strange movement; turning the neck as though she were stretching muscles, significantly different than her graceful temperament just moments before. Just at that moment, all Bamboo Peak disciples stopped laughing, tongue-tied; they seemed like they sensed disaster coming.

Surin cleared her throat, said: “You

“Shi niang,” Xavion shouted, forehead sweating.

Surin frowned and said: “what?”

The remaining five shidi also said at the same time: “da shixiong, what are you doing?”

Xavion hurriedly said: “Shi niang, Xiao Shidi just started, disciple is following master’s order to teach him the rules of our faction and the daily homework. So, we need to go now.”

Surin was quiet for a moment, then nodded and said: “you are right, go.”

“What?” The remaining five shidi shouted.

Xavion laughed hollowly, stepped forward and picked up Shaw Danon, not waiting for anyone to say anything, immediately they went outside, he said: “xiao shidi, let shixiong find a quiet place first, then teach you the rules.”

Hidi followed with a smile. Someone behind him scolded loudly: “Shame on you Da shixiong!”

“Coward!”

.....

Shaw Danon heard these and was puzzled. Thinking to himself: “why would people call da shixiong coward for teaching him the rules?”

As his mind was thinking, Surin suddenly shouted, as cold as ice and snow: “Shut up!”

The hall was quiet immediately.

Surin said: “All of you are useless; all of you got scared once you saw that I want to test your cultivation. Another five years from now is Jadeon’s ‘Seven Peak Tournament’ held every sixty years; the last time you had your master and I angry half to death, if this time you do not try harder, we will look shameful in front of other houses! Come on, all five of you come together... ..”

Xavion ran faster and faster, ran out of the hall and went straight to the back hill. Shaw Danon sprawled over his shoulder, the brushes on both sides pass by at high speed. Hidi had taken out a red silk with light amber coloring; half transparent, radiating soft red light, apparently a cultivator esper. At this time Hidi, standing on top of the red silk, made a random sign with her hand and the silk carried her flying in the air, following Xavion from behind.

Shaw Danon had never seen such a miraculous thing, he was more than surprised. Seeing Hidi flying, his eyes showed admiration.

Hidi saw his expression and felt very proud, catching up with Shaw Danon flying next to him, she said: “what is it, aren’t I powerful?”

Shaw Danon kept on nodding and said: “Yes, yes, yes, yes, shijie you are really powerful, shijie you can run very fast while standing on red cloth!”

Hidi thought for a moment, then realized, figuring out what he meant by the red cloth, she could not help laughing: “fool!”

Shaw Danon, puzzled, heard Xavion laugh: “xiao shidi, what you are talking

about, that is 'Phoenix Soul' crafted by shi niang while she was young, her famous esper. Very powerful. One of the most well known cultivator espers in Jadeon, how is it become the, the red cloth?"

Shaw Danon blushed and secretly looked at Hidi, only saw her laughing at him.

After running for a while, the three went to the slopes of the small back hill. Xavion stopped and put down Shaw Danon. Hidi also landed on earth, hand's sign to return, seeming like there is a spirit within "Phoenix Soul," it automatically rolled up, plate around her waist, appearing like a nice red belt.

This hillside was covered with bamboo, some thick some thin, flourishing across the forest. But, looking closely, the bamboo is different and unusual; it had black bamboo joint.

Xavion, pointing to the bamboo forest, tells Shaw Danon: "Xiao shidi, we Bamboo Peak house have a rule; the early entry disciples need to cut down bamboo here daily. You are still young, just chop one down daily for the first three months; as for the thickness, that is up to you."

When Shaw Danon heard Xavion talk about homework at the beginning, Surin also needed Xavion to take care of him, his mind thought it should be difficult, but he found out it is like chopping firewood. He was born in Grasstemple Village, as a farmer's child, he went with adults to the hill several times to cut firewood; his heart widened with a smile, he said "da shixiong, I have chopped wood before, don't worry."

Xavion wanted to say something, but paused; smiled for a moment and said: "That's good. We will walk back slowly, I will let you remember the trail, then

you can come here alone in the future. On the way back, I will teach you the rules of our faction.”

Hidi laughed: “Da shixiong, why do you run in such a hurry to say something so useless and then slowly walk back; are you afraid my mother will beat you up?”

Xavion’s face grew red, not bothering with her and instead telling Shaw Danon: “xiao shidi, you must remember well, the faction’s first regulation, must respect master... ..”

In fact, Jadeon Bamboo Peak’s head Tian Bolis is just lazy, although he seeks reputation he has always been too lazy to discipline his disciples. Generally, he just teaches them the basics of Taoism then later pays no attention, letting the disciples off on their own self study. But his wife, Surin, always loves to compete with others, often getting into fights. Very famous when she was young, but after marrying Tian Bolis, her temper had reduced significantly but then often felt bored. Also, secondly, the disciples are so useless, in Jadeon’s “Seven Peak Tournament” held every sixty years, for many sessions, all the Bamboo Peak disciples were defeated; aside from Da Shixiong Xavion who won one round, the rest had all lost and become Jadeon’s joke.

Surin always wants to win, how could she bear such a shame of loss, so, often, she “teaches” the disciples on her husband, Tian Bolis’, behalf. Although she looks soft, her temper is quite urgent; her cultivation is extremely high, she may beat the disciples black and blue all over if not careful. People fear the beautiful shi niang far more than the fat, short master.

By this time, it was already late, the sun sunk to the west; a brilliant sunset painted the sky. Sun shining down on Bamboo Peak, they walk slowly to the mountain. The barking of a dog came from the house on top of the peak mixed

with scream of some poor men.

Chapter 7 New Beginning

The sky is already dark by dinner hour.

On Bamboo Peak, the entire back of the mountain was filled with forests of bamboo. The people's houses are all built at the front hill, the largest and most important is the main hall, Hall of Quietude, the Tian Bolis couple and their daughter lived in one of the back halls. Next to Hall of Quietude is the courtyard where the disciples live. Because there is only a few people, a small number of house is higher than the population, everyone has their own room; even the newly arrived Shaw Danon has one as well. If comparing the living conditions Bamboo Peak is superior to the other peaks.

The only remaining locations are the Tai Chi Cave, kitchen and the dining hall. At this time all the disciples gathered in the dining hall; Sixth disciple Amandla (Dubishu), who is in charge of cooking, is serving foods to the table, mostly vegetables, few are meats. Disciples are seated on the right side of the long table following order of oldest to youngest, Xavion sat in the front, Shaw Danon sat at the end. Across the table there is a large chair and two smaller chairs, the place seems to be prepared for Tian Bolis' family.

Shaw Danon saw there is an empty seat next to him, where Amandla had set. After a while Amandla, finally finished serving meals, washed his hands then went back to the seat, waiting with the other disciples for their master to arrive.

Amandla looked quite young, thin, pointed face, large eyes; looking like a thief, seemed to be clever. He sat down and looked at Shaw Danon, smiling: “Xiao shidi, what is your name?”

Shaw Danon honestly said: “Shaw Danon.”

Amandla nodded, point to himself, said: “I am your sixth shixiong Amandla.”

Shaw Danon respectfully said : “Sixth shixiong.”

Amandla coughed, patted on his shoulder and smiles: “In a minute, you can try your Shixiong’s cooking skill..”

See this table full of foods, Shaw Danon could not help but swallow, nodding firmly.

Amandla suddenly smiled, pointed to the hall entrance, said: “Xiao Shidi, after a moment master shi niang and Xiao Shimei will come, we’ll make a bet, okay?”

Shaw Danon froze, the other disciples had turned their heads with a smile, fifth disciple Ludaxin, who sat on the other side of Amandla, laughed: “old sixth, your gambling addiction arises again, ah?”

Fourth disciple He Dazhi said: “He hasn’t won for a long time, and now seeks to fool a child?”

“Get lost!” Amandla waved again and again, ignoring the other people,

smiling and telling Shaw Danon: “Xiao Shidi, who do you think from master’s family will be the first one to enter? Well, you are new; you can have first guess, so people won’t say sixth shixiong bullied you.”

Second disciple Wu Dayi, sitting at the far side, cried loudly: “Xiao shidi, this is a bet; first, ask him what will happen if you lose or win?”

Amandla grunted and said: “What? You are afraid I will bilk, ah? I, Amandla, walk across the whole world; what I rely on is my gamblers conduct which is famous around the world (everyone laughed: “but you have never won!”), xiao shidi, if you guess right, I will help you chop down the bamboo for ten days. If you lose, you need to help me wash the dishes for ten days, how does that sound?”

Everyone is laughing, Xavion scoffs: “useless.”

Shaw Danon seeing all shixiong smile, kind and friendly, not thinking him as an outsider, his heart feeling warm, said: “Deal.”

Amandla slapped his leg, suddenly feeling energetic and radiant, said: “xiao shidi, tell me, master, shi niang and xiao shimei; who will come in first?”

All eyes fall on Shaw Danon, Shaw Danon pondered for a moment; Jadeon always respect their master as most important; so, Tian Bolis, as a master, should enter first. Immediately he said loudly: “I guess that master will come in first.”

Everyone laughed, Ludaxin shook his head: “can’t believe that today someone really got fooled by old sixth.”

Amandla very happy, looking at Shaw Danon, said: “xiao shidi, in fact, xiao shimei is always the first one rushed in. Haha, you will stay to help me wash dishes then. “

Shaw Danon touched his head, could not help but laugh out, nodded: “Yes, sixth shixiong.”

The short third disciple Zheng Dali laughed: “old sixth, are you serious?”

Amandla rolling his eyes, said: “what are you saying old third, I did not force him, we are all happy to lose isn’t it xiao shidi?”

Shaw Danon nodded, suddenly Xavion said: “master is here.”

Everyone hid their expression, stood up, facing the door, ready to greet the master. A moment later, Tian Bolis’ stout body appeared at the entrance, and behind him is

Empty!

He came alone.

Everyone is stunned, Amandla can not help but ask immediately: “Master, where are shi niang and xiao shimei?”

Tian Bolis stared at him, said lightly: “Shi niang went back home with xiao shimei.”

All are stunned, but after a moment they could not help laughing, watching Tian Bolis coming, Shaw Danon felt embarrassed, would like to laugh but not dare to laugh, Amandla was stunned and speechless.

Tian Bolis sat in his large chair, waved his hand and said: “eat.”

All disciples sat down, everyone looked at Amandla with a faint smile. Tian Bolis looked Shaw Dannon then turn to Xavion: “Have you told him the rules and precepts of the our faction?”

Xavion nodded: “Yes, I told xiao shidi twelve rules twenty precepts. As for the basic Dagos cultivation practices, disciple saw xiao shidi is tired today since it’s his first day, intend to formally teach him tomorrow.”

Tian Bolis nodded, agreeing, turn to Shaw Danon and said: “Seventh.”

Shaw Danon had not realized, Amandla pushed him, that remind him that master is calling himself, quickly stood up and said: “Disciple is here.”

Tian Bolis shook his head and lost a bit of confidence on that slow-reacting disciple, said: “You first follow da shixiong, remember to try hard; knowledge is boundless, diligence is your friend. Even if your quality is not as good as others, as long as you persevere, you will get it someday, understand?”

Shaw Danon respectfully said: “Yes.”

Tian Bolis waved: “eat.”

Shaw Danon was still young and short, sitting on a chair holding a large bowl, he has difficulty reaching foods from the dish that is slightly too far; however, Amandla who is seated next to him helps him get it several times, chuckles: “Xiao shidi, eat more.” Seems like he totally doesn’t care that he just lost the bet, his gambling conduct really is not bad.

Shaw Danon grateful hearted, nodded, eats for a while, secretly asked: “Sixth shixiong.”

Amandla turned his head and said: “What?”

Shaw Danon said: “Does shi niang still have a home?” In his little mind, Jadeon are like immortals, how can they still be concerned about the outside world.

Amandla said: “Of course, shi niang is still a human being. But Master said shi niang went back home, it’s not really her parents’ home, it means she went back to Bamboo Height, Shui Yue shishu’s place.”

Shaw Danon was surprised and said: “What?”

Amandla lowered his voice, said: “Shi niang was from house of Bamboo Height, with the Head of Bamboo Height, Master Shui Yue, were shijiemei. But then, no idea how, she was as pretty as flower, suprisingly married to master, I heard a lot of male shishu in Jadeon don’t understand... ..”

“Puff”, a chopstick fell on Amandla’s forehead; the strength is not light, causing his forehead to turn red. They were shocked, seeing Tian Bolis’ angry face, his hand missing a chopstick. Amandla turned to Shaw Danon and stuck

out his tongue, not daring to say anymore, then put his head down and resumed eating.

At this time, Xavion asked Tian Bolis: “Master, the Head of the Faction asked to have a meeting between seven houses, how come only Shui Yue shishu didn’t show up?”

Tian Bolis grunted and picked up another pair of chopsticks, said: “That old nun pretended to be sick, sent someone to tell the Head of the Faction about what...she had a fever and could not go; also, shixiong actually believed it. Hmph! Today, if she came, I can rob the boy which will be easier, may not lose everything...”

Fourth disciple He Dazhi coughed twice, whispered: “Master, Shui Yue shishu’s house never adopts male disciples.”

Tian Bolis stopped, shook his head and said: “And your shi niang too, once she heard Shui Yue had any problems, immediately took Ling’er and saw her, seems like the end of the world, really.”

All the disciples looked at each other, all are filled with happy expressions on their face, Xavion hesitated a moment, and asked: “Master, how long shi niang will stay with Shui Yue shishu?”

Tian Bolis glared at him, said: “What do you mean how long? Went today, tonight will be back.”

“Aw!” all disciples sighed, all of them were disappointed. Tian Bolis looks around, snorted, and asked Xavion: “Today shi niang guide you guys on practice

again?”

Xavion did not even have time to speak, second disciple Wu Dayi already cut in: “Master, don’t ask him, da shixiong deserted us today, what a shame.”

Xavion said angrily: “Nonsense, I have instruction from the master to help xiao shidi... ..”

“Boo” crowd booed everywhere.

They spent an hour eating, then everyone was gone, Shaw Danon wanted to stay and help Amandla to wash the dishes, Amandla laughed: “Xiao shidi, thank you; however, I can do it myself. You won the bet, don’t worry, tomorrow I’ll help you chop the bamboo.”

Shaw Danon, quite embarrassed, was about to say something; Xavion’s voice issued in from outside: “sixth, don’t help him.” Xavion came in from outside, told Shaw Danon: “xiao shidi, come, I’ll take you to your room.”

Shaw Danon nodded, but Amandla said: “da shixiong, what did you say?”

Xavion said: “xiao shidi has just started, needs to build a solid foundation, not the time to be lazy.”

Amandla scratched his head and said: “that’s right, how about this, xiao shidi, this time I owe you one, if you need me to do something for you in future, just

tell me, ok?”

Shaw Danon said: “Sixth shixiong, what about we just forgot about, it’s just ...”

Amandla become serious, said righteously: “What are you talking about, am I the kind of people who doesn’t know the different between right or wrong, good or evil, a promise is a promise, or other shixionsgs will laugh at me.”

Shaw Danon nodded his head, but didn’t understand what that had to do with right or wrong, good or evil?

Xavion pulled Shaw Danon’s hand, said: “Xiao shidi, come, I’ll take you to your new room.”

They leave the kitchen, sky already darkened, bright moon slowly rising, hanging on the east sky. They passed Hall of Quietude’s entrance, Shaw Danon looked to the inside and saw all the lights had gone out; all are darkness except the moonlight shining at the front entrance, quite ghastly.

Walking for another moment, they returned to the courtyard where the disciples live; Xavion took him to the far right house, said: “xiao shidi, today when you woke up the room you were in is where I live; the other shide’s houses are all following order, all on the right side; the several rooms on the left were empty.” Pausing, he looked at Shaw Danon and said: “You live by yourself, are you scared?”

Shaw Danon shook his head.

Xavion smiled: "This is it. We are men, how can we be afraid of loneliness! Come, we will go inside." Talking with Shaw Danon and went inside.

Shaw Danon carefully examined this strange place but later will be accompanied with it for a long time: a small courtyard's corner, pine tree on the left, five to six bamboo on the right, two or three people high. The small stones paved into a trail in the courtyard, lined with grass, the night wind blowing, gently shaking the bamboo leaves, a faint wave of grass fragrance came, everything is quiet.

Xavion opened the door, lit up the candles, said: "Xiao shidi, come in."

Shaw Danon went in, saw the house furnished as simply as Xavion's room, table, chairs, bed, have nothing else.

Xavion said: "I had already cleaned a bit today, you stay here for now. Life on the mountain is harsh, you are still small, may feel lonely, but we cultivator, must able to bear all kind of suffering, the matters of daily life, you will have to do all by yourself. "

Shaw Danon said: "Yes, da shixiong."

Xavion nodded his head, looked around, said: "If there is nothing more then I will go back. You've been tired, get some early rest."

Shaw Danon answered, then suddenly remembered something, said: "da shixiong, it just getting dark, why don't other shixiong move around?"

Xavion laughed: "You don't know, we studied Taoism cultivation in Bamboo

Peak at least four decades already, rarely go out. Bamboo Peak is already boring to us, so too lazy for a walk, like fourth loves to read, second loves to hum songs, hard working people like third will stay in the house and practice, normally won't come out. “

Shaw Danon understand, Xavion smiled and patted his head, and remind him a few things, then turned away.

Shaw Danon went back to his house, closed the door, suddenly feeling the whole world had been quieted down, without any voice. He went back to the table, sat blankly for a while, nothing to do, then blew out the lights, took off his coat then went to bed. Turning over and over again, drowsily falling asleep.

“Ah!”

In the dark, Shaw Danon shouted and sat up, gasping for air. He was dreaming back to Grasstemple Village, saw his father and mother, but also able to see every child playmates, uncles and aunts, all smiling, but all the sudden they have become dead, bloody, horror. His body shaking, that's why he woke up.

He sat a while on the bed, breath getting slower and more calm, eyes slowly adjusted to the darkness. Saw that window opened a bit, a faint pale moonlight shines on the brick surface, seem like frost and snow.

Shaw Danon is not sleepy, got up and went to the door, opened the door and went outside.

Silence surrounding him, faint sounds coming from unknown insects. Moonlight like water, shine on his body.

He look up watched the sky and saw many stars. Moon on mid-air, white and bright.

“How is Jingyue doing now, is he unable to sleep too?” He whispered, sighed, returned to the room; suddenly, his close loosen up a little, a thing rolled out from his clothes, fell on the ground.

Shaw Danon shocked, leaned over and picked it up; but, it is a dim dark purple bead, there is a hole on the bead. It seem like the purple bead is string with the Jade Prayer Bead that day. These days he was facing series of great changes, has been forgotten this thing, but now remember that Pozhi told him to throw this bead away.

Thinking of this, suddenly his heart grew bitter, his father and mother did not leave him anything, the bond between Pozhi and himself is light, but that night together, they saw each other as family; and that ugly bead is the only thing Pozhi left him.

Shaw Danon raised his hand, holding the bead in the air, facing the moon. Under the moonlight, the bead's color grew lighter, into a light purple; translucent. Inside a green energy swirl can constantly be seen; it seemed to have a spirit within, wanting to hatch. However, everytime the green grew closer to the surface of the bead, it will light up a little “卐” word and block it back.

Shaw Danon looking at it for a long time, begins to like it, but also because this is the only thing Pozhi left behind, and Shaw Danon doesn't want to lose it. He thought for a long time, took off a red string, it was a gift his father and mother gave to him wishing for long life and peace. Most people will use gold or

silver lock, but his poor family can only use red string instead.

He tied the bead with red string and wore it, hung on his chest. Not feeling cold, but warmth. He smiled to himself, looked up at the sky to the moon, turned back to his room and went to bed.

His first day in the Jadeon has ended.

Chapter 8 Teaching

“Shaw Danon!”

A sweet voice in a deafening pitch cried out waking Shaw Danon from his dream. Opening his eyes he suddenly saw a big mouth, two rows of sharp teeth, laying right before him; he let out a scream: “AH!”

“Kaka kaka” a burst of laughter came from behind.

Shaw Danon finally calmed down, saw a big brown dog in front of him. Half a man high, with shiny bright yellow hair, lying on his bed. Behind the yellow dog, Hidi in tight red clothes, laughing.

Shaw Danon secretly glance at the large yellow dog, seeing its large body, sharp fangs, a long tongue sticking out, a ferocious look. He had never seen such a large dog before, he felt a little fearful but then saw Hidi smiling at him, he murmured said: “Shijie, what’s up?”

“What’s up?” Hidi said smiling, suddenly turning serious, frowns and shouts loudly: “It’s already morning and you ask me what’s up? Hurry and get up, we are going to the mountain to chop bamboo.”

Shaw Danon curious: “You need to go too?”

Hidi said: “nonsense, any new disciples of our house need to go up to the mountain and cut down ‘Black Bamboo’ for the first three years, I started at ten years old, so this is my last year. Hey, why are you still in bed?”

Shaw Danon quickly answered, and carefully moved away from the big dog, got off the bed, hurried through getting dressed.

Hidi shouted: “catch it.” Threw a machete over.

Shaw Danon caught it with both hands, saw that it was a common machete, quite heavy. Getting everything ready, he said to Hidi: “Shijie, do we need to ask Da Shixiong to come too?”

Hidi rolled her eyes at him, said: “Didn’t you hear me say only new disciples new to do homework, so it’s just me and you now who need to chop bamboo, let’s go.”

She waved her hand, Shaw Danon did not move, but the big yellow dog jumped out of bed, shaking his tail, then barked twice at Shaw Danon, growled bearing its teeth, and then ran outside.

Shaw Danon head this many times, remembered there was the sound of barking while following Da Shixiong coming back from the rear hill; seemed to be this dog. His mind could not help but secretly think: “Jadeon is so cool, even a random dog is much larger than the one we had in the village.”

He followed Hidi out of the room, saw it is still early morning. Walking out of the corridor, looking at the back hill from a distance, hazy fog rolled through the mountains.

Two people and a dog walking towards Bamboo Peak back hill.

Yesterday, Shaw Danon was carried by Xavion to the hill; it seemed reasonably quick to reach there, and the trail seemed comfortable too. But, today, when only half way there; they discovered that the slope is increasing, the distance far further than what he had imagined.

Hidi, on the other hand, did not use the “Phoenix Soul” today; still, she had a very easy time with walking. The red figure walking on the trail, fast and light-footed. The large brown dog traveled easily, as well; unusually energetic, sometimes in the front, sometimes in the back and sometimes running into the woods. With no idea what he is doing in there, bursting out from the other side after a moment, very excited.

After half hour, Shaw Danon grew very tired, panting, legs aching.

Hidi walking in the front, and looking back at him, grunted, said: “completely useless, just stop and rest a bit then.”

Shaw Danon nodded and sat down, breathing hard. That big yellow dog was gone, ran off somewhere else.

Shaw Danon rested for a moment. He sat on the trail, looked down and saw Bamboo Peak stands tall and straight, near by mountains seem a much shorter distance away.

“Shijie, I have something to ask you, don’t know”

Hidi noticed his words are kind of timid, pair of eyes looked toward, feeling sort of proud, subconsciously fixed her hair a little. Her face got a little serious: “Just ask.”

“Why we do need to cut the bamboo as homework, I thought homework is to practice cultivation?”

Hidi curled up her lip, said: “You know nothing. For a cultivator, the body is one of the most important aspects. My mom said, if the body is not strong enough, no matter how strong the magic is, it is difficult to learn. We Jadeon are branched from Taoism , very focus on health. When learning deeper, the body will be even more important. Take our Jadeon strongest magic spell ‘Thunderblade’ as example... ..”

Shaw Danon body twitched, his face became pale.

Hidi felt strange: “what happen to you?”

Shaw Danon’s face still not settled, stammered: “No..nothing, I just think it must be very powerful because name of it.”

Hidi glared at him, said: “Of course it is powerful, this is one of our Jadeon secret skills, not many people can cultivate it. I heard my dad said, to use this magic, they must use themselves, with the help of esper, to attract the godly lighting from nine skies, as powerful as god, anyone there will be dead all at once, peerless power. “

Shaw Danon sighed: “Yeah.”

Hidi spoke again: “Think about it, even with protective spells protecting you, it is the power of god’s thunder. When normal people touch it, they will immediately turn to ashes. Of course the caster’s cultivation must be deep, but with poor health, they will get killed by the lightning before anybody else does; how would they still be able to kill anyone?” She looked at Shaw Danon, said, “so, my dad told you doing homework is good for you, yet you seem reluctant.”

Shaw Danon shocked, quickly jumped up and said: “No such thing, I never... never dare to disrespect master, and no reluctance. I have rested enough, let go, go! “

He picked up the machete, began to move, ran really quickly to the mountain. Hidi looked at his back, smiled gently, and followed him.

Finally reaching the hill, Shaw Danon was already out of breath. The big yellow dog has been laying in the bamboo forest. Seeing the two of them coming, he barks a few times, but does not even bother to get up; then, he turned his head.

Shaw Danon said: “really fast!”

“Are you talking about Big Yella?” Hidi came up from behind, her face is not red nor is she out of breath.

Shaw Dannon pointed to the big dog, said: “Its name is Big Yella?”

Hidi said: “Yeah, don’t underestimate him, he is strong.”

Shaw Dannon murmured: “Tell from the size, at least twenty years old.”

Hidi shouted: “No way!”

Shaw Dannon was surprised: “He is less than twenty years old? Then Big Yella must grow really fast.”

At this moment Big Yella barked ruthlessly at Shaw Danon.

Hidi said: “I meant not that few years. Uh, let’s see, he was already here when fourth Shixiong came and that’s seventy years; no, third shixiong said that Big Yella was already here when he came, then that’s ninety-seven years. Ah!” She suddenly shouted, Shaw Dannon was surprised, quickly said: “what?”

Hidi happily said: “I remember. When I was a child, one day Mom and Dad were arguing; she said she is going to kill the dog that Dad raised when he was a child to cook dog soup, made Dad very angry. Big Yella was also scared for many days and did not dare to go home!”

Shaw Danon suprised, said: “Big Yella afraid to return home?”

Hidi said: “Yeah, Big Yella has lived for many years, he understands humans; and, knowing how strong Mom is, he was really afraid he was going to be killed by her, so escape is the best. Smart, right?”

“Of course!” Shaw Danon . He glared at the big yellow dog again. Big Yella ignored him, snored then shook his tail, turned over his body and lazily lay on the ground.

When they got near the forest, Shaw Danon asked Hidi: “Shijie, when I arrived at Peak of Widow, I saw a monster that is much larger than Big Yella, from what I heard, it’s called ‘Water Kirin’, is Big Yella the same as him? “

Hidi walked into bamboo forest, shaking her head: “No, Mister Spirit is an ancient rare beast, spiritual animal, far stronger than Big Yella, they can’t be compared.”

While talking, she took Shaw Danon through the woods. After a while, they came to a place with more bamboo, the Black Bamboo here are all about wrist wide, very slim.

“Here, for next three months you only need to chop down one bamboo daily.” Hidi seriously said.

“That thin? Only one?” Shaw Danon said surprised.

Hidi grunted and said: “try to cut it.”

Shaw Danon nodded, held up the machete and went toward a stalk of bamboo; looked at it for a moment, then swung the machete at it. It felt like the machete had struck against a stone, the force shocked Shaw Danon’s hands. The bamboo bent forward a bit, then flicked back. Shaw Danon is not fast enough to dodge, his head got hit by the bamboo, leaving a red mark where it

had contacted.

“Ka ka” Hidi laughed again, after a moment she said: “You stay here and work, I will do my own homework.” She smiled and walked away.

Shaw Danon touched his face where it had been hit and saw a faint white mark was left at the place where the bamboo had been cut. For the whole morning, Shaw Danon dealt with that Black Bamboo, cut, split, saw, grind, press, bend; he tried every single method. Four hours passed, the sun rose up into the sky, his whole body was sweating, hands and feet felt powerless; he could only create a small wound on the Black Bamboo.

Sounds of the singing arose; Hidi skipping back while humming an unknown song. She looked at Shaw Danon, then looked at that Black Bamboo, shook her head and raised her machete, ready to chop it.

Shaw Danon quickly asked: “Shijie, what are you doing?”

Hidi impatiently responded: “helping you chop it down.”

Shaw Danon forcefully shook his head, breathing heavily and said: “Thank shijie but no. This is my homework, I have finish it myself.”

Hidi grunted, pointed to the sun, said: “Do you know what time it is now?”

Shaw Danon grit his teeth and said: “I still have to even when it’s dark”

“Idiot!” Hidi suddenly shouted at him. Shaw Danon shocked, speechless for a

moment, only watching Hidi.

Hidi shouted at him angrily, quite like a mother: “You don’t look at the time, don’t think about others. You need to do it until it is dark out, does that mean you want me to stay with you until darkness falls? If you really want to be successful then work harder each day and think of a way to complete your homework within four hours rather than just speaking nonsense about working until it is dark!”

Right after she finished talking, her machete swung piercing through air, after four slices, the bamboo fell on the ground, while Shaw Danon watched with his mouth open wide.

Hidi looked at him, lightly said: “Let’s go.” and walked outside of the forest. Shaw Danon feeling embarrassment and shame, secretly made a resolution to work harder when doing homework.

※ ※ ※

Shaw Danon went back to Bamboo Peak with a extremely tired body. It’s already noon. Hidi silently walked back to the Hall of Quietude. Shaw Danon stood still for a moment, then walked toward to his room with difficulty. At corridor entrance, Da Shixiong Xavion was standing there.

Xavion smiled, asking: “How it is Xiao Shidi, are you tired?”

Shaw Danon smiled tiredly, and shook his head.

Xavion seeing him, although still young, but quite stubborn, could not help

smiling. He walked with him to his room first, then said: “usually there will be hot water in the kitchen, in the future you can go shower when you come back, then have lunch after a moment. You take a break first, I will come tell you when it’s time for lunch, we have another homework to do after lunch. “

Shaw Danon shocked, asked: “There is still homework during the afternoon?”

Xavion saw Shaw Danon’s great reaction, startled for a bit, then realizes and smiles: “Oh, my fault, afternoon is the time for disciples to practice cultivation, today I will start teach you some basics of cultivation. “

Shaw Danon was relieved, surprised and happy, whispered: “Da shixiong, is cultivation very powerful; very difficult to learn?”

Xavion smiled: “When practice is deep, of course it is extremely powerful. As for is it hard to learn; that depends on their own quality and understanding. However, it does not matter if your quality is not as good as others, you heard what master said last night: knowledge is boundless, diligence is your friend, but as long as your persevere and practice hard, no matter how difficult it is, you will still get it.”

Shaw Danon nodded hard.

That day at lunch, Tian Bolis asked a few question of how Shaw Danon did on his homework, Hidi reproved Shaw Danon with much exaggeration about it, causing Shaw Danon to blush, he did not dare to look up.

Tian Bolis listened to her, then shook his head, waved his hand, only said: “eat.”

Tian Bolis was too lazy to scold Shaw Danon, but in Shaw Danon's eyes, he felt his master was really concerned about him, but that he himself could not do well. Master was not mad at him, very generous; a really rare good master. He felt ashamed in his heart, not daring to say anything more, just swore to himself that he must practice harder in the future to repay his master.

After lunch, Tian Bolis returned to Hall of Quietude. While other disciples walked to Tai Chi Cave, only Xavion and Shaw Danon returned to his room, said: "xiao shidi, our faction's practice really focuses on the basics, you just arrived, I will teach you the basis cultivation. After you remember what I said then practice on your own, if there is something you don't understand, come ask me, you got that? "

Shaw Danon nodded, growing excited.

Xavion's face growing serious said: "Another thing, I must warn you: our faction cultivation is extremely powerful, people from the evil side will try to spy on us. You must swear that after you learn this, if not our own faction's disciple, you can not teach it to others. "

Shaw Danon's heart moved, not quite understanding, but then realized, there is firmness on his face, said: "Yes. To God above, disciple Shaw Danon, if telling anyone else about Jadeon secret cultivation in the future, shall die under five thunder, leaving no body behind. "

Xavion smiled, nodded and let him sit in front of the table, first taught Xavion him how to meditate, and then roughly talked about the body's energy movement, and finally taught him, "Pure Essence""s the first layer method of cultivation.

“Pure Essence” is the basic of all Jadeon’s magical technique, found by Master Jadeon two thousand years ago from a Nameless Tome. Through many generation of Jadeon’s masters research, and today, it has already become a powerful, amazing supreme cultivation.

Pure Essence has three stages: Yu Qing, Shang Qing, Tai Qing. Most Jadeon disciples, including many intelligent people, spending whole life time, can never break through Yu Qing, although like that, even those with the top Yu Qing practice is already rare.

Jadeon, with thousands of overall members, has only about ten people, including the head of Jadeon Doyal Shen, that can pass through Yu Qing and enter Shang Qing. But, with only those people, Jadeon became one of the strongest factions within cultivators. As for the legendary realm of Tai Qing, according to legend, only Master Jade Leaf ever reached there.

Chapter 9 Dagos and Fuwa

It was Xavion's first time playing the role of teacher, seeing Shaw Danon hand holding his cheek and enchanted, he could not help but increase in enthusiasm and continue talking:

Pure Essence process from simple to most complicated. Most people need only one year to master Yu Qing's first level; however, later on greater difficulties will appear. Normal people need five years for the second level. The third level is like a watershed, it separates the strong from the weak. If quality is just a little poor, they will be stuck there for the rest of their life, more accomplished people may need as many as fifty to sixty years.

Shaw Danon was tongue tied, Xavion smiled, and continued.

Pure Essence's main cultivation incantation is roughly completed in terms of outside instruction at the third level; following that is dependent upon quality and self-study. A master with high cultivation may be of slight assistance, the experiential is personal, only in ensuring disciples can experience a less crooked path. Of course, this so-called "crooked road" is measured in terms of a hundred years or more.

When practice of Pure Essence reaches Yu Qing fourth level, meaning they

have mastered the basic principles, disciples then can practice different types of magic and craft their own esper. The origin of espers is a long story. Myths and legends purported that the gods of heave have their own artifacts with peerless power. In the human world, cultivators are also able to develop. Those of weaker strength can fly at the speed of lightning, while the stronger are able to shake heaven and earth, destroy mountains and rivers.

There are varieties of esper materials, some are strange. One thing, however, is certain; esper's material decides the esper's strength after it has been crafted. If simply normal iron is utilized to cast "Thunderblade," the sword and the owner will have already turned to ashes before they even have an opportunity to attack enemies.

In Jadeon, because Master Jade Leaf found the ancient sword "Regenesi" in the "Moontop Hollow," with no comparable opponent. Many younger generations not only admired him, most people practice with swords as their esper. Thousands of years later, many people became swordsmen, it has almost become Jadeon's unwritten rule, even the change of its name to Jadeon Sword Faction is not surprising.

Here, there is need to mention the specifics of the head of Bamboo Peak, Tian Bolis. He himself crafted a sword esper, "Flame Spirit"; it is one of the most famous swords of Jadeon. However, for some unknown reason, he does not wish to encourage his disciples to practice swords. Not only that, he often "encourages" his disciples to craft some different sorts of esper which creates a bit of criticism within Jadeon. Since there is no written rule, however, and, secondly, Tian Bolis' disciples quality is just normal and low in number, people generally let them be.

Within all of Bamboo Peak's disciples, da shixiong Xavion maintains the highest level of cultivation, he has already reached Pure Essence's Yu Qing fifth level. Then, following his attainment, is fourth disciple He Dazhi, who has

reached fourth level. Although he started later than Wu Dayi, Zheng Dali, he is the wisest of all the disciples; as such, he was capable of catching up even though he started late.

As for the second disciple Wu Dayi, third disciple Zheng Dali, fifth disciple Ludaxin, sixth disciple Amandla, all were struggling in Yu Qing third level. But xiao shi mei Hidi was of extraordinary intelligence, parents carefully taught her while she was still a child. Although she started to do bamboo chopping homework at 10 years of age, she had already practiced Pure Essence for many years. At thirteen years old she reached Yu Qing fourth level, is able to use esper, is known as one of the famous precocious children in Jadeon, favoured by her parents and elders, Surin has given Hidi her famous “Phoenix Soul” as a self-defense esper.

“Wow shijie is so smart!” Shaw Danon said.

Xavion smiled: “Yes, xiao shimei is very intelligent. Very talented at cultivation. When master and shi niang teach her something, she will comprehend it. Her quality is far better than us. Now she is still young, not practicing enough yet, it’s just a matter of time for her to become far more successful than us. To flourish, Bamboo Peak all rely on her.”

His eyes full of expectation, it is clear that he also put his hope on that lovely xiao shimei.

Then, Xavion told Shaw Danon something to pay attention to during cultivation, and finally seriously said: :“Xiao shidi, I must tell you one last thing: our faction’s cultivation is about progressing slowly, remaining down to earth. If you grow greedy and want to look for a short cut, not only will work not be completed, it will also create disaster. To be successful or not, was originally destined and can not be forced. Evil heretics and their Felkin evil practices are

not to be satisfied and perpetually create more desire, they may bring forth nature's judgement, poor and pathetic. You must be careful."

Shaw Danon frightened, hurriedly said: "Yes, Da shixiong, I understand."

Xavion nodded, stood up and said: "That should be enough, Tai Chi Cave is in the back hill; only disciples with Pure Essence third level can go in and practice. Before this, you can practice first in your room; it is quiet here, master and shi niang will usually not come by, so work hard."

Shaw Danon stood up and said: "Thank you, da shixiong."

Xavion smiled, patted his head and turned away.

※ ※ ※ ※ ※

After Xavion left, Shaw Danon returned to his room and shut the door. There is an indescribable excitement in his heart, even the tiredness from cutting bamboo has subsided.

He took a deep breath, calmed down, walked slowly to the bed. He meditated in the position Xavion had taught him, then closed his eyes. Remembering the incantation of Pure Essence's Yu Qing first level Xavion had taught him; ready to practice, but all of a sudden his heart began to think of something, his eyes shot open, said: "That's wrong!"

Pure Essence's Yu Qing first level that Xavion taught him is the most basic incantation, a practitioner need only to focus on two words: Obtain Energy. When a cultivator is meditating, the mind must open and cast aside all sorts of

trouble, obtain the spirit energy within the sky and earth into the body and meditate; use it to bind the oneself to the world, feeling change within sky and earth. If able to obtain spirit and meditate thirty-six times in a row, then the body's channel becomes stable and one is able to practice higher levels.

This type of cultivation has been a part of Taoism for thousands of years, there should be no error. But at that moment, Shaw Danon's mind, like a violent storm, keeps on shaking; because everything he had learned today is completely opposite of the incantation monk Pozhi taught him.

In the night before Grasstemple Village massacre, when Pozhi taught him the incantation he clearly told him, when meditating, be sure to cut off all contact with the outside world; gain understanding of the truth of self also known as: "Form here is only emptiness, emptiness is only form. Form is no other than emptiness, emptiness no other than form. Feeling, thought, and choice, consciousness itself, are the same as this. Dharmas here are empty, all are the primal void. None are born or die. Nor are they stained or pure, nor do they wax or wane. So in emptiness no form, no feeling, thought, or choice, nor is there consciousness. No eye, ear, nose, tongue, body, mind; no color, sound, smell, taste, touch, or what the mind takes hold of, nor even act of sensing. No ignorance, or end of it, nor all that comes of ignorance: no withering, no death, no end of them. Nor is their pain, or cause of pain, or cease in pain, or noble path to lead from pain, not even wisdom to attain, attainment too is emptiness." (note 1)

The deep meaning within it, of course Shaw Danon won't understand clearly; however, he can sort out that the two incantations are totally different from one another; he is now utterly confused, not knowing what to do.

In fact Shaw Danon didn't know, Pure Essence is Dagos' supreme incantation, but Pozhi had put his most important hope on him, and the incantation he taught him is also the supreme incantation of Fuwa: Fawin Wisdom.

Two incarnations, practiced in two very different ways, all come from their respective basic idea.

Fuwa and Dagos hold a long history, never mixing together, the art of cultivation all originated from distinctly different types of thought. Dagos, as example, the main subject is “Dao,” also known as: From Dao comes one, from one comes two, from two comes three, from three arises the ten thousand things. All things have both yin and yang; the combination of the two maintains a neutral harmony. (Note 2) Daoism comes from Daoist’s thoughts, even the Pure Essence’s three stages, also from Daoist mythology: Yuanshi Tianzun, Lingbao Tianzun and Daode Tianzun’s Yu Qing, Shang Qing, Tai Qing, named after “The Three Qing.” Daoist cultivation focuses on combining the self with the world, using the body to control nature, harnessing powerful magic.

But Fuwa, on the other hand, the main subject is: “everything that happens is answer to the heart, it cannot leave the self.” also said: Understand self, originally clean; understand self, originally no birth and no death; understand self, originally enough; understand self, originally static; understand self, can give birth to everything! (Note 3) Fuwa cultivation, focuses on understanding of self, can reflect the truth, “one wisdom can give birth to eight-four thousand intelligences” is what it means.

Buddhist and Daoist thought were very different, the way to practice were also completely opposite, but because people kept their secrets for thousands of years, no one knew anything about it. Now a small disciple named Shaw Danon in Jadeon’s Bamboo Peak was having a headache because of it.

“Which one is right?”

Shaw Danon jumped out of the bed and began walking back and forth in the room. His mind was confused but he dared not to ask anyone. Then he finally sat on his bed, sighed, not saying anything.

He was not intelligent originally, as a farmer boy of young age, of course he did not have much knowledge; and now he needed to decide such an important matter. Thinking it over for the whole day, simply wasted time and could not develop a solution. In the end, Shaw Danon told himself: “Anyway, the master Pozhi did not tell me that from the beginning, I can just practice both, that should solve the problem.” Not thinking anymore, just relieved in his mind, he returned to his bed and began practicing Pure Essence.

He thought it would be easy, but when actually doing it things became entirely different. Pure Essence’s refining spirit; open the pores and let the spirit within sky and earth enter into the body and let it run through the veins; doing it to strengthen the vigor and veins within the body. Fawin Wisdom needs a practitioner to enter the state of quietude, block all senses from the outside world, see the self as the world, find the true self, strengthen the vigor.

The method of practice is completely opposite, giving Shaw Danon a pain in the neck. For the next three months, besides cutting down the bamboo every single day, he focused on practicing the cultivation of two factions. But when he had a little success on Pure Essence, becoming able to draw spirit into the body; he then would practice Fawin Wisdom, needing to force himself to block out everything, enter into quietude. All the efforts he had putted in for the previous practice were all wasted.

One day, three months later, Tian Bolis suddenly felt curious and came to see how Shaw Danon is doing in cultivation. After a slight investigation he became

angry almost half to death. When normal people practice Pure Essence, as the first level is the easiest, they should have slight success after three months; ability to absorb spirit and cycle them three to five times. Surprisingly the poor quality of Shaw Danon is really rarely found. After three months practice he was still not even able to control pores of the entire body and hardly let any spirit in; of course, he can't cycle the spirit.

Tian Bolis, with eyes wide, stared at Shaw Danon angrily. All the disciples standing nearby feel sorry for him but do not dare to say anything. Xavion wanted to say a few words on Shaw Danon's behalf, but seeing the poor practice Shaw Danon had that had been taught by him, felt he did not have the right to say anything. As for Hidi, she was laughing and seeing it as a joke.

Shaw Danon felt shameful, kneeling in front of Tian Bolis. Thinking that no matter how his master scolded him, he deserved it. Unexpectedly, after a long time, surrounding shixiong and even Tian Bolis did not say a word. He felt strange, secretly looked up and was surprised to find that Tian Bolis' angry face turned into disappointment. Just like the saying: Most sadness comes from disappointment.

Tian Bolis waved his sleeve, then shook his head, began to move his fat body and walked toward the rear hall without saying anything. All the disciples looked at each other not understanding what happened.

Xavion had known Tian Bolis for a long time, he knew what Tian Bolis meant; he guessed that master had given up his hope on Xiao Shidi. For the past three months, beside doing homework and practicing cultivation, Shaw Danon helped others when he had the free time, he is a helpful and honest person. Everyone liked him. Because of the loneliness of living on the mountain, even the usually arrogant Hidi suddenly had a similar aged playmate; although on the surface she often scolded him, she was actually happy about it.

Xavion frowned and lifted up Shaw Danon, said: "Xiao Shidi, the master is angry for a moment, it doesn't matter. As long as you continue to put effort in, sooner or later he will approve of you."

Shaw Danon's heart felt shame, nodded, and put more and more effort in since.

He went with Hidi each morning to cut bamboo, normal disciples can chop down one Black Bamboo after practicing Pure Essence for three months, but Shaw Danon cut down his first Black Bamboo after half a year. However, because of doing homework daily, his body grew progressively stronger; at least he no longer grew tired when going up to the mountain.

From that point on, Tian Bolis did not ask anything more about Shaw Danon. At the beginning, Xavion still asked him about his progress in cultivation practice. But as time grew longer, Shaw Danon's progress was as slow as it can be; in the end, even Xavion gave up and did not ask him anymore.

Shaw Danon himself did not mind the issue, he was aware his quality was not good. Although he occasionally thought that it is all because he practiced both incantations simultaneously, every time he thought about it, it reminded him of Pozhi, which encouraged him to continue on. Although practice in this way would be extremely difficult, his stubborn temper supported him.

Practicing Pure Essence by day, Fawin Wisdom at night. Three years passed by fast.

During these years, Shaw Danon achieved the worst record within Jadeon ever: He used three years, which meant he had spent three times longer than

normal people, before finally completing Pure Essence's Yu Qing first level and was able to easily control all the pores, absorb spirit and meditate thirty-six times in a row. But what people were not aware of is that he also practiced Fawin Wisdom at the same time, laying a solid basis on controlling energy.

When Shaw Danon timidly announced that at dinner, all Jadeon Bamboo Peak disciples were stunned; as impossible as thousand years old iron tree has just blossomed, then everyone laughed. Xavion threw Shaw Danon into the air a few times.

Tian Bolis coldly looked at him, grunted, whispered: "Idiot!"

Over three years, Shaw Danon reached the age of fourteen; due to cutting bamboo daily, his body had become fairly sturdy. Although he was two years younger than Hidi, they were already the same height. Hidi had turned sixteen years old from thirteen and had become more beautiful.

Hidi often felt as though all of the six shixiong were much older than her, so she liked to stay with the foolish xiao shidi most of the time. For three years, they became much closer together. Hidi always had the upper hand. Shaw Danon knew shijie is much stronger than himself. Although she was shouting at him all the time, when teased by shixions, she was the first one to stand up for him.

Life in the mountain was boring and quiet, Shaw Danon inquired to Tian Bolis and Xavion about Grasstemple Village's massacre several times, but found no clues during the investigation still. As time passed, Shaw Danon's heart finally had calmed.

This morning, Shaw Danon took his machete as usual and walked toward the mountain alone. Hidi had completed the bamboo homework two years ago and had no need to come. So, for the past two years, Shaw Danon went to the mountain alone most of the time; however, sometimes when Hidi had nothing to do she would go to the mountain together with him.

Today Shaw Danon didn't see a sight of Hidi, nor did he care about the matter, and went alone to the mountain. After another month, his bamboo homework will be complete. He now can cut down two Black Bamboo everyday, but still was far inferior to Hidi. Hidi could chop down a dozen of Black Bamboo by the end of the day.

A month prior, he finally mastered Pure Essence's Yu Qing's first level, then Xavion taught him the second level incantation. He had studied it for a month, although it is a lot deeper than the first layer, he felt it to be easier than the first layer. For example, control of the body's pores from first level took him three years, while the second level needs one to "Turn spirit into vigor energy," absorbing the spirit within earth and sky into the body and turning them into vigor. According to Da shixiong, it is ten times harder than the first level, but Shaw Danon had surprisingly found it very easy. It seemed "Fawin Wisdom" had something to do with his progress. Three years of Fawin Wisdom non-stop practice, he had begun to master the basics of the vigor cycle. Spirit is part of vigor, with the three years of basic practice, Shaw Danon's progress was very fast.

But he himself didn't believe himself; when other people's practice of first level took one year, and he himself needed three years, so he felt this must be an illusion. So he didn't care much because no one asked him about his daily cultivation practice anyway.

Note 1: Phrase from <般若心经>: 诸法空相, 不生不灭, 不垢不净, 不增不减, 是故空中无色, 无受想行识, 无眼、耳、鼻、舌、身意, 无色、声、香、味、触法, 无眼界, 乃至无意识界, 无无明, 亦无无明尽, 乃至无老死, 亦无老死尽, 无苦集灭道, 无智亦无得。(Translation excerpted from The Heart Sutra—Rochester Zen Center translation, based on Philip Kapleau's reading)

Note 2: Phrase from <道德经>德经第五章>: 道生一, 一生二, 二生三, 三生万物。万物负阴而抱阳, 中气以为和。

Note 3: Phrase from <坛经-行由品第一>: 何期自性, 本自清静;何期自性, 本无生灭;何期自性, 本自具足;何期自性, 本无动摇;何期自性, 能生万法!

Chapter 10 Dark Bamboo Grove

Shaw Danon returned to the familiar bamboo forest. The whole mountain was covered with green. When the wind blew, the sea of bamboo waved up and down, just like the large wave of the ocean, very spectacular; his heart is relaxed.

He took a deep breath and stretched the body, then entered the bamboo forest with a machete. This place was different than where he was three years ago, it was in the deepest portion of the bamboo forest. The bamboos here were larger and also harder.

The light fog of the early morning floating in the forest like soft veil. There were beautiful crystal clear dewdrops on the bamboo leaves on both sides of the trail.

He strolled for a while in the green ocean. Most of the Black Bamboos were tall and lush, rising straight into the sky. Light shone down through the gap between the leaves, leaving pieces of shadowing on the ground. Shaw Danon looked around for a moment and picked out a large Black Bamboo; he measured it out slightly then lifted up the blade and prepared to cut.

“Puff” suddenly a muffled sound arose. Shaw Danon felt a pain on the head,

seemed like something had hit him on the forehead. He looked down on the ground and saw a rolling pine cone. There were only Black Bamboo near here. There were a lot of bamboo shoots, but there were definitely no pine cones.

He thought for a moment then smiled, looked around and shouted loudly: “Shijie is that you?”

His voice passed through the bamboo forest but still no one answered afterward. Shaw Danon knew shi jie loved to fool people. When he was about to shout again, his head suddenly got hit by another pine cone. At the same time, a “creak creak” scream came from above the head.

Shaw Danon reluctantly looked up and saw there was a grey monkey on the Black Bamboo with several pine cones in its hands and using its tail to hang upside down on the bamboo. The monkey was “creak creak” laughing, much like gloating at him.

Shaw Danon was stunned for a moment. For the last three years he had never seen monkeys in the bamboo forest before. Almost the entirety of Bamboo Peak was covered with bamboo forest, there was only a pinewood forest in the deep valley. It seems like this is where the monkey came from, but today the monkey had came up to the mountain for unknown reason.

Bamboo Peak was tall and steep, although it was not as high as Peak of Widow, which was higher than the sky, but also reached straight into the sea of cloud. There is no way to climb up from the foot of the mountain to the top. Most Jadeon disciples would use a skyblade to help them travel. Shaw Danon, still low in cultivation except the daily homework, usually also heard shixiong talk about the pinewood forest at Bamboo Peak’s back mountain’s valley, deep and unpredictable, no human inhabitants. Bamboo Peak’s founder also sent people to investigate the valley with skyblades in the past; however, it was only

an ancient forest, nothing special, only the presence of quite a number of beasts and poisonous insects but those never came out of the valley, so there was nothing that had happened for the past years.

While he was thinking he suddenly saw the monkey lift up its hand. He then quickly dodged. Another pine cone smashed down; if he had not dodged that then he would have suffered the same fate again.

The grey monkey saw he had dodged it. It screamed a few times with an angry face, seeming to blame Shaw Danon as though he shouldn't dodge it.

Shaw Danon made a face at the monkey, then ignored it and walked away. Thinking that the monkey thought hitting people is fun, that's rather rare, such an ignorant animal. He took two steps, then suddenly he heard the sound of wind behind his ears. This time he did not dodge fast enough, "pop," a pine cone hit on the back of his head hard, this time the strength was not soft. Shaw Dannon's sight blacked out, he could not help but shout loudly.

The monkey on the bamboo was clapping and laughing, swinging back and forth, seeming like it was really happy about its throw. Shaw Danon felt very angry and rushed toward the bamboo and swung his arms wildly. The huge Black Bamboo swinging back and forth, but the gray monkey kept its tail wrapped around the bamboo trunk, letting him swing as much as he wanted; completely fearless and "creak creak" laughing at him.

Shaw Danon saw that he could not do anything to the monkey and kept getting more angry, then pulled out the machete and ruthlessly chopped the bamboo. The monkey was still not afraid, only looked down at him with interest on the bamboo.

Shaw Danon was sweating all over his face. When he was about to finish, seeing success just around the corner, suddenly a scream came from the above. He looked up and saw the grey monkey's tail swing, the body flipped, and jumped to the next Black Bamboo, and then, "pop", threw a pine cone down at him again.

Shaw Danon was furious, forgot if the monkey going to understand or not, pointed to it and shouted loudly: "I dare you come down."

The monkey scratched its head, crooked its head thought for a long time, seemed like it did not understand what "dare" mean. It just laugh and make a face at Shaw Danon.

Shaw Danon was mad half to death, but couldn't do anything about it. He barely finished his homework for today, but his head got smashed seven or eight times by the monkey, very painful.

Shaw Danon was full of anger, bitterly went down the mountain and ignored the monkey. Unexpectedly, the monkey had grown addicted to it, for the next few days it was waiting in the bamboo forest for him in the morning. Once Shaw Danon came to chop bamboo, the monkey would throw pine cones at him as entertainment. When watching Shaw Danon's annoyed face, it would make the monkey very happy.

※ ※ ※

One evening before dinner, Hidi took Shaw Danon to side, secretly asked: "Xiao Fan, what happened to your head?"

Shaw Danon was bullied by the grey monkey for the past few days, got smashed on his head and found it very painful; however, he thought being fooled by a monkey is a shame, so he didn't tell anyone. Now, however, Shijie had asked him directly; he hesitated for a moment and finally told her.

Hidi's lip moved, could not help but laugh out. The dimples that appeared on her cheeks were really beautiful. Shaw Danon's face turned red and lowered his gaze, seemingly due to getting made fun of by her, but also seemed to be another reason.

Hidi slapped Shaw Danon on the shoulder, said: "Don't worry Xiao Shidi, these days my mother wanted me to practice more in Tai Chi Cave to be prepared for the 'Seven Peak Tournament' two years from now, can't believe you got bullied by a monkey. Don't worry, tomorrow I will accompany you up the mountain and teach a lesson to that bad monkey."

Her tone is sort of like coaxing a child, but Shaw Danon got used to it; smiled sadly and did not bother with it.

The next morning, Hidi got up early, and went back to the mountain with Shaw Danon.

The mountain breeze was blowing gently. Hidi dressed in red, just like the first day she went up to the mountain with Shaw Danon to chop bamboo, was bouncing around in front. Shaw Danon followed behind, watching the beautiful girl in front, just like a piece of red cloud, a faint fragrance came following the mountain wind waving gently within the mountains.

He strolled absentmindedly, suddenly an idea of "how good it would be if walking like this forever" came to his head.

As he was thinking, Hidi was already far ahead. She looked back and shouted: “Xiao Fan, why you are so slow!”

Shaw Danon woke up and his face turned red, not daydreaming anymore and quickly caught up.

Before they went into bamboo forest, Hidi told Shaw Danon: “Xiao Fan, you go in first, I will follow from behind.”

He was blank for a moment, felt a little confused, then shook his head; he set the silly idea aside and walked towards the depths of the bamboo forest. When arrived at the destination, the forest was silent. Shaw Danon looked around, but still couldn't find grey monkey. He muttered in his heart: Did the monkey passed spiritual, expected today he will find helper, so not dare to come.

He thought, then looked around; but still could not find trace of the monkey, so he came to one of the Black Bamboo and got ready to cut.

“Creak creak”, a sudden familiar scream came from above.

Shaw Danon dodged like conditioned reflex, but it is too late, pain arose from the head and got smashed by a pine cone, very painful. Shaw Danon looked up and saw the grey monkey, as usual, hanging upside down on the bamboo laughing.

He was very happy, jumped up and pointed to the monkey and laughed: “Ha ha, you finally come!”

His voice wasn't too loud, but the monkey was shocked. Thinking that person will always turn to rage, grow furious when he got smashed. But now, today, was very happy; could it be because he had been smashed for a few days and got addicted to it and will feel uncomfortable if not getting hit, but happy when getting smashed?

At that moment, suddenly, a red shadow flashed between the bamboo. Hidi was riding on the "Phoenix Soul" flying toward this direction, as fast as lightning, five fingers turned into a claw shape and grabbed at the monkey.

But the monkey was very smart. Its eyes caught that coming and immediately reacted; it released its tail that was wrapped around the bamboo and let its body fall. Hidi had prepared all available ways to attack if it is going to escape from any direction; however, she had not expected the monkey would fall down. She could not help but feel slightly startled and caught empty air.

Shaw Danon was ready to make a move, but the monkey opened its arms in mid-air and immediately grabbed the bamboo. Seeming like it knew the lady in red at the top was powerful the monkey did not hesitate and stay around, immediately it swung from bamboo to bamboo and sought to escape.

Hidi's ambition rose, shouted out from the air: "Hurry!" Left hand pointed out, Phoenix Soul pierced through the air. Shaw Danon began to run along on the ground and follow.

If in an open area, Hidi could catch the grey monkey in a second with Phoenix Soul. But now, in the thick bamboo forest, the stalks really obstructed their way. The gray monkey was very intelligent, never escaping in a straight

direction. It swung from left to right, kept on turning while escaping forward. Hidi, who needed to pay attention to the monkey and had to beware of the oncoming Black Bamboo at the same time, was having difficulty. As for Shaw Danon, he could only chase along on the ground, helpless.

So, the two people and the monkey kept on running. Within the sounds of grey monkey's "creak creak" screaming, the chase seemed to last forever. Shaw Danon's breathing was getting heavier and he already felt tired; the chase was over a far longer distance than he had expected.

But, green bamboo forest seemed endless, layer upon layer. Shaw Danon's mouth was growing dry, suddenly he saw a grey figure drop from above and fall straight down. He was pleased beyond expectation and used all of his strength to rush forward. Then, at this moment, Hidi suddenly shouted from above: "Be careful!"

In front of Shaw Danon, a cliff suddenly appeared. Shaw Danon stopped quickly and almost fell over the edge. He calmed his mind and was surprised to see a deep abyss on the bottom of the cliff. Far into the valley, there was a hazy fog, things could not be clearly seen. Near the edge of the cliff there were no longer Black Bamboo, but a variety of wild trees, mostly they were pine trees; it seemed like they had reached the abyss behind the mountain.

Shaw Danon saw the grey monkey falling down and, using the same trick in mid-air, clutching onto the branches and swinging; reducing the force of the fall and escaping.

As he was growing anxious, a piercing wind sound came. He raised his head and saw Hidi flying toward him, holding out her hand as she cried: "Get on."

Shaw Danon reached out and grabbed Hidi's hand without thinking much.

Hidi pulled hard and pulled him onto Phoenix Soul. “Phoenix Soul” suddenly sank a little, but rose right back to normal again.

Shaw Danon experienced it for the first time and didn’t know what to do. Hidi pulled him behind her back, quickly said: “Hold my waist, hurry.”

Shaw Danon held as she said. Hidi couldn’t wait to set out. Two people riding on “Phoenix Soul” straight into the valley like a piece of red figure, chasing after the gray monkey.

The wind was blowing hard next to Shaw Danon’s ears. He could hardly keep his eyes open, but the “Phoenix Soul” under his feet seemed soft but firm, making people feel as though they would fall off at any moment. With fear in his mind, he couldn’t help but hold Hidi tighter. The red clothes like a cloud floating in front of his eyes. The sight of shi jie’s back was like a fair from heaven, very elegant. There were faint fragrances floating into his nose. Happiness grew in his heart, he wished time would never pass onward.

There was no way for Hidi to know the weird thoughts of the little boy behind her. Her mind was focused on the monkey in front. She had always been favoured by her parents and shixions; arrogance developed in her personality. Now she couldn’t catch a monkey; this was definitely unacceptable.

So in the deep valley, grey figure in front while the red figure chasing closely behind among the shadows of the wood.

So, after they had chased for half an hour, the grey monkey seemed like it must be some type of rare species; it still had no sign of exhaustion, and was able to escape at high speed. However, Hidi had gradually grown more familiar with the way to travel through the woods after the long chase; they were now

growing ever closer.

The grey monkey fled all the way to the depths of the valley. Shaw Danon saw Hidi's back and saw the woods ahead were growing more clear. Light spilled though, it seemed like open ground was ahead and there was a faint sound of water. At this time the screaming of the grey monkey had become more rapid; seeming to be surprised that they didn't give up after chasing for a long time. But there was no way to turn back, the only way to escape was to keep on going.

A moment later, the surroundings became brighter, it was a piece of open ground. There was gravel all over the ground and a small pond in the middle. The water waves flowed toward the west. When the grey monkey fled there, it seemed to hesitate for a moment; however, the wind piercing sound from behind could arrive at any moment. The monkey was forced to fall on the ground and run forward. Strangely, the monkey ran at a very slow pace; there was no way to refer to it as fleeing, it was more like walking. But still, it was moving forward step-by-step.

Shaw Danon felt strange as he saw that; Hidi, however, was too busy dodging obstacles and keeping eyes on the monkey at the same time, her mind was heavily concentrated. There was no time for her to think too much. Seeing the gray monkey was getting closer, she was pleased beyond expectation, scolding loudly, she drove straight into the open area and rushed toward the grey monkey.

Seeing as they were about to catch the monkey, Shaw Danon's mind suddenly echoed with a "boom," his body could not help but shake a few times; a disgusting feeling that would cause a person to throw up came from the inner organs and surged straight into the brain. Just a moment later his whole body was shaking hard. Shaw Danon was surprised and overwhelmed; at that moment his chest suddenly felt hot, a sudden warmth appeared protecting his

heart and defending against the sense of disgust.

Shaw Danon subconsciously looked at his chest. The feeling of warmth was coming from the dark purple bead from Pozhi. At the same time, Hidi's body also shook a couple of times. Her body weakened and fell off.

.

The two were in mid air but now that Hidi had lost control, Phoenix Soul immediately stopped. The two began falling off from mid-air at once.

Shaw Danon rolled a few times on the ground in a lot of pain. He could not care much now, before he even stood up he quickly shouted; "Shijie, shijie, are you okay?"

But Hidi was lying on her side, motionless. Her face got pale, cold sweat all over her face, seemed she had fainted.

Shaw Danon was shocked and guessed it must be related to the strange feeling. While bearing the pain, he got up and ran next to Hidi's side and pushed her several times and called a few times. But Hidi still gave no response.

Shaw Danon looked around and saw within a thirty feet radius around the pond, there was not a single plant growing; however, outside of the thirty feet, woods were flourishing. He grit his teeth and forced back the disgusting feeling in his heart and carried Hidi; he picked up Phoenix Soul at the same time, and went toward the outer edge.

The distance of ten feet, usually it was simply not worth mentioning, but with that disgusting feeling that continuously attacked his heart again and again, it became extremely difficult. Once finally out of the thirty feet and coming to rest

under the large pine tree, the sense of disgust soon disappeared.

Shaw Danon put Hidi down and breathed heavily. He looked toward the pond and saw the gray monkey was still there; with an anguished look on its face, and looking in his direction, seemed like it was asking for help.

Shaw Danon frowned, but couldn't bare it, stood up and walked to the pond again. After only a few steps, the disgusting feeling reappeared. At the same time, the warmth from the chest reformed, helping him withstand the discomfort.

Shaw Danon walked toward the monkey slowly, and his head was already sweating profusely. The grey monkey didn't move when it saw him coming; it seemed to get overwhelmed by the disgusting feeling already. Shaw Danon took a deep breath, leaned over and picked up the monkey; then, he turned around and began to carry it toward the outer edge. The grey monkey was, surprisingly, very obedient this time quietly leaning in his arms.

Finally they came out again, walked along next to Hidi who was still unconscious. The disgusting feeling disappeared. Shaw Danon set down the grey monkey and sat on the ground, breathing heavily. The grey monkey was also relieved, laying on the floor. Its eyes were rolling, but not planning to escape, just kept looking at Shaw Danon.

Shaw Danon unbuttoned his lapel and took out the bead that had been tied with red string. The original dark purple had turned into light purple; the green energy seemed to be stimulated, the circling speed was ten times faster than normal continuously crashing against the surface of the bead. Like before, each time the green energy hit against the surface, the Buddhist mantra “卐” deflected it back. The warmth that saved Shaw Danon seemed to have also come from this Buddhist Mantra.

Shaw Danon can obviously see that the Buddhist incanation “卐”, whether in size or brightness, was far less than three years ago when Shaw Danon had first discovered it.

Chapter 11 Weird Change

Shaw Danon looked at the bead for a while, his breathing gradually grew calmer. Aside from the colour, the brightness of the bead looked somewhat different; he couldn't find any other differences so he put it back on his chest. He looked at Hidi and saw that she was still unconscious, but her face wasn't as pale as it was before. She seemed much better now.

He held out Phoenix Soul and carefully looked at it. This was his first time looking at an esper so closely. It felt soft and very comfortable; reminding him of the flying figure of Hidi, his heart filled with envy.

After a moment, his hand gestured like Hidi's and he called out "Up!"

Phoenix Soul was like a dead snake; no reaction and motionless.

"Jiji Jiji," the grey monkey held its belly, fell on the ground and laughed.

Shaw Danon stared at it; but after struggling through difficulty together with this monkey, he felt a little friendliness and the hostility from the past was gone. He spit out his tongue then made a face to the monkey and ignored it. He put the Phoenix Soul back next to Hidi; then his eyes looked at the pond in the

open ground.

It was a small pond, could not locate where the water came from; probably from underground springs. The pond water was jade green, impossible to judge its depth. There was a gap on the west side of the pond where the water flowed out and merged into a stream.

In the center of the pond, there was a stacked pile of rocks of varying sizes and shapes; a small part of it showed above the water. Among the rocks, there was a black rod. One foot of the rod was exposed above the surface, the rest of it was under water. It was black all over, could not tell what type of material it was composed of, but it was ugly for sure.

Shaw Danon didn't care about it, he only felt this place was very odd and that they should leave as fast as possible. Although Hidi was fine, she was still unconscious. No matter how hard he tried she didn't wake up. But the gray monkey on the other hand, was extremely energetic, scratching its head and catching lice restlessly; sometimes it pounced between the trees. It picked a few wild fruit and tossed two to Shaw Dannon; then, it sat down on the ground and began to eat.

Shaw Danon took a bite of the wild fruit. It was sweet and juicy; his appetite could not help but increase. Since he went up to the mountain early in the morning and chased the monkey, he had not had a drop of water for the whole day; and now, near noon, he was already hungry. He finished one after a few bites and was about to pick up the second one; he suddenly shook his head, gently set it beside Hidi.

After eating the wild fruit, the hunger in Shaw Danon's belly diminished and he felt refreshed. He stood up and stretched, looked at the surrounding area. The ancient forest, gurgling streams; such a beautiful scene, who would know

this place was strange.

At this moment, Shaw Danon suddenly felt heat against his chest. A moment later, several muffled “Kaka Ka” sounds arose, seemed like something had broken. He was shocked and quickly took the bead away from his chest. He was surprised to see green light glowing on the bead. The green energy inside was as aggressive as wolves and tigers and hit hard against the surface of the bead. The “卍” that was inhibiting the energy became weaker and dimmed; seemed like it was not able to withstand any more.

Shaw Danon didn't know this common looking bead was actually the well-known evil item – “Sinister Orb.” The bead's origin was unknown; however, it's special ability to absorb creatures' essence and blood was notorious. If any living thing came near it, “Sinister Orb” will suck out all the essence and blood to their death in just a moment; leaving only the skin and bones behind. It was the most horrible evil item. A little more than a thousand years ago, the bead was obtained by Elder Blackheart. He used it's power to siphon out blood to refine it to an esper; suddenly, he became the strongest individual and killed a vast number of people from the side of Good. His reputation increased dramatically. It later became one of the Four Evil Treasures. After the death of Elder Blackheart, the bead went missing.

Skysong Pozhi Divine Monk came across it by chance in the large swamp to the west thirty years ago in an accidental discovery of this fierce bead. Within a ten mile radius, numerous bones of the dead were strewn about, with no presence of a single living thing. The resentment of the dead was everywhere. Pozhi's merciful heart was moved and he utilized Fuwa incantation to purify the area; then he used the incantation of Mojon Tamer day and night to defend against the evil force, never stopping for thirty years straight and strung it with the Buddhist treasure “Jade Prayer Beads” using the purified energy to resist the sinister affection and finally covered the evil spirit. With the help of the beads the energy was unable to break through the layer upon layer of Fuwa

power.

Unexpectedly, in Grasstemple Village battle, Pozhi was heavily injured by the mysterious man and was nearly killed. Although the man in black was also wounded, Pozhi knew he had not injured him on the inside; the man would try to obtain “Sinister Orb” again once he had healed. Pozhi took “Three Days Death Pill” to extend his life for three days. He chose the risky path, gave Sinister Orb to Shaw Danon and told him not to show it in front of people and throw it off a cliff when he had time. Although innocent lives may still be hurt, it would be better than the orb falling into the hands of Evil.

However Pozhi could have never imagined Shaw Danon, wanting to remind himself of the monk’s kindness, kept that fierce item as a souvenir. “Sinister Orb,” no longer suppressed by the influence of Pozhi’s Fuwa incantation and the purified energy of Jade Prayer Beads, gradually eroded the incantation with evil energy. Skysong Mojon Tamer incantation, however, could not be taken lightly; although the incantation lost its master, it still worked in devotion to its duty and suppressed the evil energy for three years. Unaided over the course of time, it could not completely withstand the energy, gradually it grew weaker. Then today it could be seen that “Sinister Orb” will break through the incantation and harm people once again.

Shaw Danon did not know these many twists of fate, but his mind did not feel good. That year in the battle at Grasstemple the “卐” had appeared multiple times when Pozhi dueled with the man in black. Although he was young he could still remember it quite clearly. Now, seeing the situation of the mantra on the bead was growing critical, his mind grew anxious; clasp the bead tightly with his hand he transferred a little of his “Fawin Wisdom” into the bead.

Both incantations were similar. The “卐” mantra grew a lot brighter; however, not even waiting until Shaw Danon smiled, it turned dim a moment later. At the same time, an icy cold energy invaded his body; half of Shaw Danon’s body

turned numb.

The grey monkey suddenly saw suffering on Shaw Danon's face; green light glowing on his face, "creak creak" it called twice quite anxiously. Shaw Danon couldn't worry about too much, he felt all his blood went in reverse, all flowed toward his right hand where the odd bead was. The Fawin Wisdom in him collapsed immediately, no longer acting as the cold energy's opponent. Pain went through all his nerves.

He couldn't bear it any longer, staggered back a few steps and suddenly the entire body flicked. A familiar disgusting feeling came back, straight into the five internal organs. He had accidentally stepped into the open ground again; however, this time there was no more warmth coming to his chest.

The grey monkey was worried, let out "creak creak" many times, but still didn't dare to step into the open ground.

Shaw Danon didn't know what to do. His body felt both hot and cold, like being bitten by thousands of ants. He wanted to throw up, but there was nothing in his stomach for him to vomit. He felt like living death. His mind was gradually getting blurred, he stumbled and went forward, unaware that he had went in the wrong direction. His strength was gradually dissipating.

His body was shaking, hands and feet were drained of strength. He fell on the ground. At this moment he already reached the edge of the pond, he used the last of his effort to channel Tai Chi Xuan Qing Dao, barely absorbing the spirit into his body and turned them into Fawin Wisdom. It helped reduce the pain slightly but it was already gone shortly afterward. Shaw Danon couldn't care

about much right now; doing the best he could to reduce the pain as much as possible. The cold energy, however, was too powerful and there was also a strange disgusting feeling; almost all of his internal organs turned upside down and flooded their energy to his brain. Stars began flashing before his eyes; his breathing was uncontrollable. His throat suddenly felt a little sweet, then a large amount of blood spurted out of his mouth. He almost fainted.

At this time, a small muffled sound arose, the sky darkened instantly, Sinister Orb's green glow grew bright; the entire bead turned green, while dim golden light flashed, “卐” was completely shattered. Shaw Danon's body was immediately covered by green light, like a bloodthirsty demon was once again reborn.

The strange thing had not yet completely ended; almost at the same time when the green gas regained its freedom, a huge sound came from the center of the pond. Suddenly a storm and the cracking of rocks shooting in all directions made a huge noise. The green water turned into a great wave, circling the center of the pond as a huge vortex. In the middle of the vortex, between the water spray, an item slowly rose up with black gas all over it. It was the mysterious black rod, about two feet long, not metal nor iron, rushing Shaw Danon with vicious sense.

Shaw Danon screamed and fell backward. “Sinister Orb” seemed to be stuck to his hand, he could not shake it off. Light redness, the colour of blood, could be faintly seen slowly flowing from Shaw Danon's body into the bead.

Within the sound of crashing water waves, the mysterious black rod whistled through the air targeting the green flashing light of Sinister Orb. A moment later a loud crash roared, two of the most wicked things on earth crashed together. Shaw Danon was shocked, his whole body dropped one yard's height. The ground under his body formed a large hole with the great force.

Shaw Danon fell back on the ground, blood all over his face, his head was dizzy and sight was blurred; however, the pain inside of his body seemed to lighten slightly. His eyes were bleeding, sight turned red. He rubbed his eyes and saw the mysterious black rod had smashed on Sinister Orb. The black gas kept on advancing and attacking. The Sinister Orb seemed to know a great enemy was ahead and took back all the green energy to defend; the cold energy and the disgusting feeling in Shaw Danon's body disappeared.

Shaw Danon was surprised and panting, subconsciously shook his hand, but the two strange objects were just like part of his hand; he could not remove them no matter how hard he tried. Black gas and the green light were still battling.

Shaw Danon was frightened. He just wanted to get as far away from these two strange things as possible. He used all his strength to get up, but then his head felt dizzy immediately. His entire body staggered, then his legs were out of strength and fell back to the ground again. The two energies from the green orb and black rod seemed to be enjoying the fighting, but the black rod seemed to have gained the upper hand.

Just a moment later, the black energy invaded deep into the green energy; seemingly unable to resist. Just at this moment, Shaw Danon felt terrible pain at the center of his palm. He saw that at the area where his palm attached to Sinister Orb, the fresh blood came out continuously and merged into a large drop of blood.

Shaw Danon trembled and his face turned pale. As Sinister Orb bathed in a large drop of blood, the green light grew brighter and began to counter-attack. Not only regaining control of the situation, but also starting to overwhelm the black gas.

With more and more blood coming out from his hand, Shaw Danon started to lose his consciousness. The red blood flowed to the joint between the black rod and Sinister Orb, and after a moment, the blood began to sink in; slowly dying the tip of the rod blood red.

A faint smell of blood wafted in the air.

As time passed, it became darker and darker red. The black gas and green light that were fighting had dimmed down. The difference had changed into harmony.

After a long time, the strange change had finally came to an end. The black rod and green bead lost their brightness and combined together; they fell off from Shaw Danon's hand.

※ ※ ※

"Xiao Fan! Xiao Fan! Xiao Shidi!....." an anxious call sounded in Shaw Danon's ear.

His head was in a lot of pain. Even opening his eyes seemed like it needed to use all his energy. Hidi's anxious figure became more and more clear. He moved his lips, whispered: "Shijie."

Hidi, relieved, asked: "Xiao Fan, you awake?"

Shaw Danon forced a smile, said: "I'm fine, Shijie."

Hidi helped him to sit up. Shaw Danon glanced at his right hand, but no part of his hand was injured. Nothing was present aside from some paleness. He was surprised. He remembered a large surge of blood had come out from his palm; but now, how come there is no sign of it?

Was that a nightmare?

"Xiao Fan." Hidi saw him staring blankly, so she was worried and pushed him.

Shaw Danon woke up, he was about to tell her the strange thing that had just happened; however, he had no idea where to begin. Then he thought it was too awkward, froze for a moment, and finally said: "Not, nothing, shijie."

Hidi was relieved. Since the time she woke up, she was surprised to find the sky was already darkening. While she was laying under a large pine tree, her shidi unconsciously fell in the distance away. She was frightened and ran to Shaw Danon's side, but fortunately he woke up after a short while.

Hidi looked around and said to Shaw Danon: "Shidi, this place seems very strange, we should leave as soon as possible. I will tell mother to come back here and check again tomorrow."

Shaw Danon nodded. Just when he was about to get back up, he suddenly felt pain in his entire body. If it wasn't for Hidi being fast enough to support him, he would fall down again.

Hidi saw that his face was extremely pale. Her heart was worried and she

carefully helped him to stand up. Shaw Danon looked at his body, but couldn't find any wounds; then said: "Shijie, I am just a bit dizzy, nothing serious."

Hidi looked at him and nodded, said: "We shall return quickly. It's already dark, I'm afraid Mom and Dad and shixions are all worrying about us."

Shaw Danon said: "Yes."

Hidi took a deep breath and checked the surrounding area and saw nothing strange; thinking of how she had fainted for no reason. Her hand waved, "Phoenix Soul" flashed with red light and came out.

Just when Hidi and Shaw Danon were ready to leave, a sound suddenly came from their side. They looked forward in that direction and saw that the grey monkey was standing next to them, opening his mouth and smiling. Its hands dragging a two foot long mysterious black rod.

※ ※ ※

In Bamboo Peak, Hall of Quietude, Tian Bolis was walking back and forth. His brow was furrowed and his face was filled with anxiety. This morning, his daughter and the useless seventh disciple went to the back mountain and played; they haven't come back even though it's now dark. Surin already went out to look for them and now all of his disciples had also been sent; however, the whole Bamboo Peak was covered with thick woods, looking for the two people is just like searching for a needle in a haystack.

Suddenly, an air-piercing sound came. Tian Bolis looked up and it was Surin returned with the two little devils. Hidi and Shaw Danon seemed to have

nothing serious; but strangely, an unknown monkey was sitting on Shaw Danon's shoulder.

Tian Bolis was relieved, but the anger on his face was still present. Shaw Danon looked at his master. He was frightened and afraid to move. He lowered his head; however, that naughty grey monkey kept messing with Shaw Danon's hair and seemed like it was in search of lice.

Hidi put away Phoenix Soul and saw the angry look of her father. She rolled her eyes and made a large smile; trying to look like the most innocent and cute flower while she skipped to Tian Bolis' side. She took his hand and said: "Dad, we're back."

Tian Bolis grunted, said: "Where were you two?"

Hidi giggled: "Xiao Fan was bullied by a monkey while he was doing his bamboo homework. I tried to capture it to help Xiao Fan. Oh, that's the monkey." Then she pointed in Shaw Dannon's direction.

The grey monkey that was sitting on Shaw Dannon's shoulder was surprised. It screamed twice at her and made an angry face; then, it scratched its head and put all attention on Shaw Danon's hair again.

Hidi made a face. Then, she began to summarize what happened throughout the chase: "..... then we went to a valley, and I suddenly felt weird at my stomach, then passed out unknowingly. When I woke up I also saw Xiao Fan unconsciously laying on the ground. But fortunately we didn't get injured.

When we were about to come back, I saw that monkey really liked Xiao Fan, so we brought it back.”

Tian Bolis frowned and turned to his wife, asked: “How is it?”

Surin shook her head: “I already checked there when I was looking for the two of them in the mountain; nothing suspicious. I think it’s mostly because Ling Er’s cultivation is not strong enough and she was forced to ride on Phoenix Soul with Xiao Fan; so, she ran out of strength in the end.”

Hidi coquetry said: “Mother, what are you saying; when did I not cultivate enough? Xiao Fan, am I right?”

Shaw Danon quickly said: “yes, yes, yes!”

Tian Bolis rolled his eyes at Shaw Danon, said coldly: “As a Jadeon disciple, you got bullied by a monkey. If this got leaked out, I shall be shamed for your disgrace.”

Surin walked over, took Hidi’s hand, softly asked: “Haven’t eaten for a whole day, hungry right?”

Hidi spit out her tongue, laughing: “Really hungry, mother!”

Surin stared at her, and took her to the kitchen while murmuring: “Smart kid!”

Shaw Danon also felt the hunger in his belly. But standing in front of Tian

Bolis, how could he dare to take a step? While hearing Surin and Hidi getting further away, his master had not made a movement. Shaw Danon secretly raised his head and was surprised to find the hall was empty. Tian Bolis had left already without any notice. It seemed like in his heart, scolding this idiot disciple is a waste of energy.

Shaw Danon stood there for a long time. He turned around finally as he hear his stomach rumble; however, he wasn't willing to go to the kitchen but, instead, went back to his room.

Returning to his room and closing the door, the grey monkey looked around from his shoulder. Seeming like it knew it was at home, it jumped down from his shoulder, went to his bed. Jumping around while swinging his pillow wildly.

Shaw Danon looked at the grey monkey and smiled but he was soon overwhelmed by the hunger. He sat down at the chair and poured a cup of cold water from the overnight pot, and drank it.

A coolness struck into his heart.

He sat for a moment, took out an object from his clothing. It was an ugly black rod. The orb that Pozhi gave to him was tightly melded together with the rod; the orb changed into a mysterious green and black. At the location where they connected, it was dyed dark red with dried blood. Not only ugly, also a bit sick.

He looked at it for a while, then suddenly let out a bitter laugh. He threw the rod to the wall, created a loud crash, and fell down in the corner of the room.

The grey monkey was surprised and looked up at Shaw Danon, he could not

understand why he had gotten mad. Shaw Danon sighed, took off his shoes and went to bed. He covered his head with the blanket. The monkey scratched its head and was confused.

That night, Shaw Danon's sleep was restless. The hunger was intolerable. He slowly fell asleep around mid-night.

Chapter 12 Reunion

A half a month had passed since the journey to the ancient valley. Shaw Danon had entered Jadeon for three years; it was also the end of his daily bamboo. The result at the end of three years of training, however, made Shaw Danon feel embarrassed.

Since that mysterious journey to the valley, for the following month, Shaw Danon often felt dizzy, weak and grew easily tired. He was guessing that it is all because of the large loss of blood that day; however, he examined himself and couldn't locate any wounds. Although he was worried, he did not dare to ask his master, so he buried it inside of his heart.

He was not saying anything, however, his body spoke for him. In the past, he could chop down about two Black Bamboo; now, however, he was breathing heavily after only a few swings and he could not chop down one Black Bamboo for the entire day. That day in the valley, Sinister Orb sucked out half of his blood. If not because of his tough body, he would already be laying in his bed unable to get up. If Shaw Danon wanted to chop the bamboo like he used to, it was physically impossible.

This lasted until half a month later, when Shaw Danon began to feel better; however, by then the bamboo homework almost reached its end. On the last day, under the watch of Xavion and others, Shaw Danon used all his strength to

chop off one Black Bamboo in a half hour.

Xavion and others looked at each other, not a word had been spoken. Only Hidi came up and hit Shaw Danon's shoulder, smiling: "Xiao Fan, don't worry, it's good enough that you have one tenth of your shijie's strength."

Shaw Danon gave a bitter smile.

At dinner, everyone in Bamboo Peak gathered in the dining room. When Tian Bolis sat down, Xavion reported to him about Shaw Danon. Tian Bolis coldly laughed, not looking at Shaw Danon, but Surin smiling said: "Ah, Xiao Fan, you have already been in Bamboo Peak for three years."

Shaw Danon immediately answered: "Yes."

Surin sighed softly, said: "Ai, time passes so fast, so quickly it has been three years." Suddenly, she stopped and raised her voice, speaking to the other six disciples: "Do any of you have that feeling?"

Bamboo Peak disciples were shocked, straightened up their backs and answered: "Yes!"

Surin snorted, said: "Your xiao shidi has already grown up, but in three years none of you have any advancement; are you trying to kill me and your master?"

No one said a word, they all looked at Xavion. Under all the pressure of other shidi, Xavion said: "Shi niang, please don't worry; we will work hard this time."

The word “disbelief” was clearly showing in her face. Just when she was about to speak, Tian Bolis cut in: “Sixth.”

Amandla was surprised, raised his head and asked: “Master, are you calling me?”

Tian Bolis blandly said: “I saw you keep on waving your arms at the dishes in the kitchen these days, what’s going on?”

Amandla’s face turned red, his tongue tied, murmuring: “Master, you, you saw that?”

Surin said: “Eh, Bishu, what is it?”

Amandla hesitated for a moment, whispered: “Disciple wanted to see if I can guide the object to move.....”

Everyone was surprised, “Navigate Object” is the basic of Jadeon’s esper cultivation; an individual must at least reach Pure Essence fourth level in order to do it.

Tian Bolis nodded, asked: “And?”

Amandla whispered: “Seemed like, seemed like it moved a little.”

“Wow.” Everyone was surprised. Ludaxin, who was sitting next to him, slapped his hand on Amandla’s shoulder, smiling. Surin was also smiling, sitting across from him, and said: “Nice, it is difficult to imagine you would work so hard; when did you find that out?”

Amandla was finally relieved and said: “Not long ago, I was practicing in my room. Suddenly, the cup of water moved. I was wondering if I broke through level three.” Then he shyly smiled, continued: “but disciple wasn’t sure, so often I tried to test it again, but was discovered by master.”

Tian Bolis smiled, said: “That’s what it is when you reach between levels three and four. Although there is a great difference between the levels of power, there won’t be any clear sign at the beginning. You are clever; even though you started late, you finally caught up.”

Everyone was smiling and congratulated him. In the middle, Hidi cut in, asked: “Sixth shixiong, have you decided which type of esper you want to craft?”

Amandla thought for a moment, responded: “No, I just confirmed to master that I reached level four; I haven’t had time to think about it.”

Surin smiled, said: “No need to worry. Think about it for a few days. You know how your master is, he will never force you to craft a sword. When you think of anything you like, just find the material and craft it.”

Shaw Danon stood in admiration, seeing sixth shixiong smiling and his mouth open wide. Then he hear Tian Bolis say: “Sixth.”

Amandla quickly answered: “Master.”

Tian Bolis said: “Following our Jadeon’s tradition, disciples that reach Pure Essence level four need to travel around the world, and seek material for esper at the same time. It will depend on your luck to see if you can find the spiritual

material. You prepare and pack up stuff and leave in a few days.”

Amandla was startled for a moment. He was happy and also didn't want to leave, quietly responded: “Yes.” But then remembered something, said: “Master, all the meals in here were prepared by disciple; but when disciple leaves...”

Ludaxin laughed: “What do you need to fear? Wasn't I here before you arrived? Don't worry, they won't starve.”

Amandla and the others laughed. Hidi said: “Now you've said it fifth shixiong; because of the food you cooked, I was having nightmares when I was young!”

Ludaxin's face turned red. Everyone laughed. When the laughter began to quiet down, Tian Bolis said: “From now on, let seventh do the kitchen work.”

Everyone was startled. Ludaxin was surprised: “Master, shidi is still young...”

Tian Bolis looked at Shaw Danon. Shaw Danon immediately said: “Master, don't worry. I often help sixth shixiong in the kitchen; I know what to do.”

Tian Bolis nodded, not saying anything more, waved his hand and said: “Eat.”

※ ※ ※

Three days later, Amandla finished packing up. He told Shaw Danon everything he needed to know about the kitchen, then left the mountain. Amandla was the youngest of all shixiong. Shaw Danon was the closest to him.

Now that he had left, Shaw Danon began to feel lonely on Bamboo Peak.

Now, Shaw Danon started his second “homework”—cooking.

This was his first time actually cooking. He was busy in the kitchen for the entire morning. At noon, Tian Bolis and the others entered the dining hall. The table was filled with dishes as it used to be. Shaw Danon, sitting at the end of the table, clasped his hands together. Everyone could feel his nervousness.

Everybody sat down. Tian Bolis didn’t say a word. Surin smiled and said: “Xiao Fan, how does it feel to cook for the first time?”

Shaw Danon opened his mouth, but couldn’t think of anything to say. Tian Bolis snorted, said: “Eat.” The disciples answered and began to eat.

It was silent in dinning hall.

Shaw Danon became extremely nervous; his forehead was sweating, he murmured: “Master, shixionsg, I-I didn’t do very well; you-you guys...”

“Wow, that was delicious!” Hidi suddenly cheered, putting another piece of bamboo shoot into her mouth. Shaw Danon was startled. All of the shixionsgs smiled and nodded.

“Never knew xiao shidi could cook so well. Nice, nice!”

“Uh (speaking unclearly), better than old fifth, no, better than old fifth and sixth add together, ho ho!”

Even Tian Bolis nodded and smiled. Shaw Danon felt satisfaction as he saw it.

After that, Shaw Danon continued to work in the kitchen. Although he didn't show any talent in cultivation, he was gifted in cooking. He needed no teacher and still can cook a delicious meal; far better than anyone else. In his heart, a little recognition from Tian Bolis is already his greatest pleasure.

Time passed, half a year had gone by again. Jadeon's "Seven Peak Tournament" held every sixty years was drawing near. Not only Surin, but Tian Bolis as well, began to remind the disciples to practice. Everyone focused on practicing, no one bothered Shaw Dannon; no one put any hope in Shaw Danon anyway.

Shaw Dannon didn't care much, either. He seemed to find a few meanings of happiness from his dishes. When he had time, he practiced Taoist cultivation; then, he practiced "Fawin Wisdom" at mid-night. The days were peaceful.

The grey monkey from the ancient valley lived with Shaw Danon for half a year. Shaw Danon gave him a name— Ashh. Just like his master's name, normal and nothing special.

From the time Shaw Danon began to work in the kitchen, Ashh often followed Shaw Danon to the kitchen and stole food. After half a year, he was twice as fat as before. In Bamboo Peak, however, Ashh had an opponent, it's Tian Bolis' dog — Big Yella.

For some reason, Big Yella always disliked Ashh. At the beginning, Big Yella always barked at Ashh every time they saw each other. Ashh always got scared and hid in high places. As time passed by, Big Yella seemed to agree that Ashh is a member of Bamboo Peak; however, when they would meet, Big Yella will always bare his teeth and Ashh got scared and screamed. Then Big Yella barked back and walked away.

Winter came. The weather in Bamboo Peak was getting harsh. Beside Tian Bolis and Surin, who are highly cultivated, the other disciples were adding an extra layer of clothing.

That day, there was unusual sunshine. After Shaw Danon finished his kitchen business, he came out and stretched. He sat down next to a pine tree and enjoyed the sunshine.

After a moment, just when he was about to fall asleep, he heard some barking. He opened his eyes and found that Big Yella was also laying lazily, basking in the sun while Ashh walked slowly from behind and was getting closer to Big Yella.

Shaw Danon was surprised. Big Yella often came to the kitchen looking for food; he knew the relationship between the monkey and the dog rather well. Today, however, seemed like the sun had risen from the west, Ashh intentionally approached Big Yella! Shaw Danon immediately woke up and kept his eyes on them.

Ashh almost got close to Big Yella. Although Big Yella couldn't see anything behind him, his nose smelled something unusual. He turned back and bared his fangs, barked a few times.

Ashh's body curled slightly, still seemed to be scared; but, then, he rolled his eyes, waved his right hand in front of Big Yella.

Big Yella didn't care about it at first. But his nose sniffed the air a few times, seeming like he smelled something. His eyes stared at Ashh's hand. His eyes didn't blink. His body didn't move. He didn't bark anymore; he showed his long tongue, wagged his tail and acted friendly.

Shaw Danon was very surprised. After he took a look at what is in Ashh's hand, he couldn't help but laugh. Ashh was holding a bone. Shaw Danon used it to cook soup. Because he knew this was Big Yella's favourite food, he specially hid it in a high place; however, Ashh stole it and came here to bribe Big Yella.

Ashh threw the bone in front of Big Yella. Big Yella was already drooling, immediately opened his mouth and chewed on it.

As Ashh watched Big Yella eating it, he carefully approached Big Yella, hesitated a moment, then patted Big Yella.

Big Yella groaned, Ashh quickly took his hand back. After a moment, he patted Big Yella again. This time, Big Yella didn't react and was busily dealing with his bone. Ashh put his hand on Big Yella, gently patting Big Yella's soft, bright, yellow fur. Big Yella seemed to enjoy it. He curled back a little, groaned again, but this time there was no hostility.

Ashh's gut strengthened. He happily cried and began to look for fleas in Big Yella's fur. Sometimes Big Yella will turn his head and lick Ashh. The relationship between the dog and monkey changed faster than anything.

Shaw Danon was stunned. Thinking of the intelligence of the monkey; but, then, he must hide the bone more secretively.

Just as he was thinking, he suddenly heard the sound of piercing wind from the sky. Two white lights coming from the west. Big Yella was surprised and began to bark at the white light. Ashh patted his head to comfort him. Big Yella grew quiet.

Shaw Danon saw the two white lights land in front of the Hall of Quietude. After the bright light disappeared, two men appeared. One was tall and handsome with white clothes.

The other one was a juvenile, slightly shorter, about fifteen or sixteen.

Shaw Danon held his breath, the sadness that was once forgotten rose back into his heart, because of the lonely figure of the past!

“Jing Yu?” He stood up. His voice became hoarse.

The juvenile was shocked. He immediately turned around, his eyes opened wide. His mouth opened to speak, but in the end out of thousands of words, two finally came out.

“Xiao Fan!”

Chapter 13 Prodigy

“Disciple Kevern, Baye under the house of Master Vasp Caelo’s Dragon Head Peak, are to pay a visit to Tian Shishu and Su Shishu.”

In Hall of Quietude, Tian Bolis and Surin sat in the main seats. Other disciples stood at the side, while two men in white clothes stood in the middle greeting Tian Bolis. The two were Baye and Kevern. Shaw Danon was watching them from the end of the row.

Having not seen them for a few years, everyone had grown up.

At that moment, Baye turned and faced Shaw Danon. Their eyes met. Baye lightly smiled and Shaw Danon nodded.

Tian Bolis looked at Kevern, shifted his gaze to Baye, then his face darkened. He knew the quality of each of the two disciples here was far ahead of any disciple in his house. Kevern was well-known in Jadeon; however, the young Baye could already use a sword, this meant he had reached at least Pure Essence fourth level. He had been adopted only three years ago; this achievement was quite shocking.

When he thought of that, he looked at Shaw Danon. Comparing the two, Tian Bolis' mood grew worse; he coldly asked: "What did your master send you here for?"

Kevern bowed and said: "Reporting to Tian Shishu, Master Vasp Caelo was entrusted by Master Doyel Shen to take care of the 'Seven Peak Tournament' that takes place two years from now. Due to a change in the arrangement, master ordered Lin Shidi and I to come and inform you."

Tian Bolis snorted and carefully examined Baye, said: "He wants to provoke me, right?"

Kevern and Baye's faces changed. Baye wanted to go forward, but Kevern held out his arm to stop him. He smiled and said: "Tian Shishu really loves to tell jokes. We are both under Jadeon, and Tian Shishu is highly respected. Our master does not have any intention of disrespect."

The colour of Tian Bolis' face was still dark, there did not seem to be any improvement. Surin had a kind smile on her face, gently said: "Don't mind him, he was kidding around. Right, the change in arrangement that you were talking about, what is it?"

Kevern respectfully replied: "Report to Su Shishu, the change is like this. In the past 'Seven Peaks Tournament,' each house sent four people, main house Peak of Widow sent eight; the total was thirty-two people. Opponents decided by sortition, winners advance, lasting a total of five rounds. The final winner will be considered Jadeon's most talented pupil among the disciples and will be educated under the guidance of the elders."

Surin smiled, kindly said: “At the contest last time, I remember you were the star of the tournament. You were in the final. If not due to Peak of Widow having Enu there, you would surely have become the champion of Jadeon.”

Kevern’s face did not change, still smiling: “Su Shishu has flattered me. In the last tournament, Enu Xiao Shixiong was gifted and deeply cultivated. I am nowhere near his level. I had no words to say. But the ‘Seven Peaks Tournament’ that is going to take place two years from now, after master and the Head of the Faction had discussed, we will have a change in the rules. We came here to inform the two Shishu.”

Tian Bolis and Surin’s tones changed, asked: “What it is?”

Kevern answered: “Master Vasp Caelo thought that the meaning of ‘Seven Peaks Tournament’ was to find and give education to the talented disciples. Now Jadeon has almost a thousand disciples, especially a number of new generation members, and many talented disciples among them. It is the event that only takes place every sixty years, but each house only sends four people; it is really too few. So, master suggested that each house send nine people, main house has the most people so they will send one more, in total there will be sixty-four people. The other details are just as usual, sorting and six rounds; this way there will be no regret for undiscovered talent.”

Tian Bolis and Surin exchanged looks. The colour on their faces became worse. Bamboo Peak had less disciples and also lower quality. At first, it seemed that gave them the advantage; however, it actually is more beneficial to Peak of Widow and Dragon Head Peak since they have more talented students.

Surin looked at her husband and lightly shook her head. Tian Bolis knew what she meant. This had been already discussed between the Head and Vasp Caelo; everything had been set, there was no need to argue. He coldly responded:

“That’s fine, I have no comment.”

Kevern smiled: “That’s great. Also, master had instructed that Lin Shidi and Tian Shishu’s disciple Zhang Shidi are old friends, he wishes Tian Shishu may let them have a chat with each other.”

Tian Bolis was in a bad mood. He waved his hand and impatiently said: “Go, go.”

Baye had already waited for a long time. Because he was facing a senior, however, he did not dare to speak. Now since he approved, he immediately turned around and walked toward Shaw Danon.

Baye walked in front of him. He carefully looked at Shaw Danon. He softly said: “You have grown up, Xiao Fan.”

Shaw Danon nodded hard, said: “You too. Oh, did you get any news of anything about our village?”

Baye shook his head: “I asked my master many times, but still have made no progress. What about you?”

Shaw Danon bitterly smiled: “Same here.”

Baye pulled his hand, said: “Let’s go out there and talk.”

Shaw Danon hesitated for a moment. He turned and looked at Tian Bolis and Surin. Tian Bolis ignored him. Surin smiled and said: “Go.”

Shaw Danon nodded and hurriedly followed Baye outside. In the hall, the only guest was Kevern. He looked at each Bamboo Peak disciple. His sight finally landed on Xavion. Kevern bowed, smiled and said: "This must be Xavion Song Shixiong. We had met each other in the last tournament."

Xavion quickly bowed back: "Qi Shixiong has good memory. You still remember this defeated opponent."

All the disciples were surprised. Hidi asked her mother that was sitting next to her: "Mom, did da shixiong really lose tot his person?"

Surin nodded, lowered her voice: "Yes. That time, your da shixiong had finally won two rounds. Your father and I were very proud of him. Then in the third round the opponent was this individual; the fight was lost after just a few hits."

Hidi stuck out her tongue, said: "So does that mean that person is very powerful?"

Surin didn't answer her immediately. She turned her head and looked at her husband, seeing his face was steel green, sitting there motionless. She shook her head, said: "Kevern's skill is far greater than your da shixiong. That day he didn't even use any tricks. Especially the esper he crafted, 'Frozen Ice,' was made out of a thousand year old arctic crystal, extremely powerful. Your da shixiong is no match for him."

Tian Bolis seems felt something. He turned his head and looked at Surin. Their eyes meet and understand the word that hide inside of their heart: If only Bamboo Peak has such talented student.....

Tian Bolis seemed to feel something. He turned his head and looked at Surin. Their eyes met and understood the words that hid inside of each others heart: If only Bamboo Peak had such a talented student...

Kevern achieve success in cultivation, also gain deep trust of masters. He often travel around the world and know a lot things. Plus his clever and fluent tongue, Xavion, who got beaten by him, already had no hostility.

Kevern achieved success in cultivation, also gained deep trust of the masters. He often traveled around the world and he knew many things. In addition, his clever and fluent tongue, Xavion, who had been beaten by him, already had no hostility.

Kevern was telling some kind of joke and causing everybody to laugh. Then, Kevern's sight landed on Hidi and saw the "Phoenix Soul" around her waist. His eyes brightened, said: "Is that the famous Hidi Tian Shimei?"

Hidi lifted her eyebrows, asked: "How do you know it's me?"

Kevern smiled, stepped up a few steps, said: "Tian Shimei is only sixteen, but the accomplishment on Pure Essence is already superior to others. This is well known within our faction. I admired it for a long time. From what I can see today, you are well deserving of the reputation."

Hidi blushed, asked in an angry tone: "How do you know? You never saw me fight before."

Kevern was startled, quickly smiled and answered: "Tian Shimei is not only as

beautiful as a flower, but also quite intelligent, making me ashamed as a shixiong.”

Hidi looked at his handsome face and also heard his praise about her beauty. Her heart felt sweet but her face stayed the same: “Nonsense. Not acting like a shixiong, shame on you!”

Tian Bolis frowned. Surin said: “Ling Er, no nonsense.”

Kevern quickly said to Surin: “Su Shishu, please don’t be mad at Tian Shimei. It’s my fault to choose the wrong term to use.” Then, he took out a small box from his sleeve and passed it to Hidi: “Tian Shimei, the ‘Refresh Bead’ inside of this box was obtained by chance while I followed my master Vasp Caelo to wipe out a group of heretics. Although it is not some valuable treasure, wearing it can help you stay cool against the heat of summer. Additionally, I head it helps ladies to keep their skin smooth. Today I will give this to Tian Shimei as an apology for my mistake.”

Hidi blushed again. Surin said: “Qi Shizhi, ‘Refresh Bead’ is a treasure also. Ling Er can’t take it. You can put it back.”

Kevern smiled: “Su Shishu may not know, this ‘Refresh Bead’ is useless to me, just like a chicken rib. But Tian Shimei is young and beautiful, she will make it useful. This is my little gift, I hope Tian Shimei likes it.”

Hidi looked at Kevern. Her expression relaxed. She held out her hands and received the small box, whispered: “Thank you, Qi Shixiong.”

Kevern was very pleased, said: "You're very welcome. With Shimei's gifted intelligence, there is a great future ahead of you. Although there are many talented students in Jadeon, there are only very few people who have the same potential as you, even I need to step back."

For the first time, Tian Bolis finally smiled. Hidi said: "Shixiong flatters me."

Kevern shook his head: "No, I was also brought to Jadeon by master when I was young. During that time, however, my cultivation was far behind you. But..."

Hidi was very pleased to hear Kevern's praise, but when she heard the word "but," she could not help but ask: "But what?"

Even Tian Bolis and Surin turned to hear what the "but" meant. Kevern said: "But if comparing potential, there is a person that can compare to you."

Hidi startled, asked "Who?"

Kevern smiled and pointed to the outside of Hall of Quietude: "That would be my Lin Shidi. Three years ago he was adopted by Master Vasp Caelo. Just a few years later, his achievement was surprising. He is gifted in cultivation. There is no one in our house who can match him. He used only three years to pass Yu Qing Realm's level four. There is no one like this for a thousand of years. Master is very proud of him, said he is the genius of thousand years, can almost match our Master Jade Leaf."

Tian Bolis suddenly broke the arms of his sandalwood chair. His face was steel

green.

Kevern was surprised, whispered to Surin: “Su Shishu, did I say something wrong?”

Surin smiled bitterly. Just as she was about to speak, suddenly there is a cry outside of the hall: “Ouch!” Then a person fell in on the floor and rolled a few times. That person was Shaw Danon.

Everyone’s mood changed. Hidi rushed forward to help him to get up, asked: “Xiao Fan, what happened?”

The fall had not been light. Shaw Danon’s head was still a bit dizzy but his mouth still mumbled: “Not, nothing. I am fine.”

Baye ran back into the hall. His face was worried: “Xiao Fan, are you alright, I accidentally...”

Hidi immediately knew he was the one that bullied her Shidi. Additionally, Kevern was highly praising Baye; it made her feel like a loser. She stood up and angrily said: “Who gave you the permission to bully people?” Then her fingers pointed at him. Red light began to flash. Phoenix Soul released and whistled toward Baye.

Surin and Kevern shouted: “Stop!”

But Phoenix Soul was as fast as lightning; it got in front of Baye in just an instant. Although it surprised Baye, it didn’t make him nervous. He knew he was facing attack from an esper. He took three steps back, left hand pointed at the

sky while his right hand pointed at the ground with sword fingers (note 1). He shouted: “Out!”

Dragon roars suddenly filled inside of Hall of Quietude. Baye was surrounded by green light. A green sword was summoned. The sword’s edge was as clear as water. It not only blocked Phoenix Soul, it also shone and made everyone’s face in Hall of Quietude green.

Tian Bolis snorted, coldly spoke: “Vasp Caelo is really nice, he even gave the ‘Dragon Slayer’ to him.”

Kevern saw Baye did not get injured; he was relieved, standing at the side and smiled: “Master had said Shidi’s potential is far past others, he is destined to have a great future. As such, it is a must to give him additional help.”

Tian Bolis’ mood became worse.

Both Phoenix Soul and Dragon Slayer could not get any advantage over each other. Hidi opened her arms. Her body began to lift into mid-air. Both arms crossed in front of her chest, she shouted: “Extend!”

Phoenix Soul flew back and returned to Hidi. The red glow intensified. The red silk extended hundreds of times longer, immediately suppressed Dragon Slayer’s green glow. After a moment, the silk rushed to Baye and surrounded him tightly.

Surin stood up and shouted into the air: “Ling Er, do not be rude.”

The amber silk, however, already surrounded Baye so tight that nobody could

see him. Even Hidi was covered by layer upon layer of silk.

Shaw Danon was enchanted by what he saw. Suddenly someone said:
“Phoenix Soul truly is as powerful as the rumor.”

He turned and saw Kevern. His eyes were fixed looking at the fighting scene. His mouth was mumbling, but his face had no sign of worry.

Just when victory was determined to be Hidi’s, they suddenly heard the sound of cloth tearing. There was an opening within all those layers of silk. A little bit of green light leaked out.

The colour of Tian Bolis’ and Surin’s faces changed.

“Roar!” A loud bang like the cry of the angry dragon. The opening became larger. Green glow brightened up again. It was like a dragon surrounding him, Bay broke through the silk and charged at Hidi like a released arrow.

Hidi put both hands in front of her chest and formed a Tai Chi. All the silk returned and formed vast layers of barrier in front. Baye’s Dragon Slayer stabbed through the red silk layer after layer. Although he became slower, the momentum still hadn’t weakened. Victory or defeat will depend on the next moment.

“Clang”!

A chilled air passed. Dragon Slayer got hit back. Baye was shocked. He saw an ice wall was formed between him and Hidi. Even with Dragon Slayer’s power, he could not break through the ice wall. Kevern was already behind him and

pulled Baye back.

Hidi's face was white. Surin quickly turned her back to Tian Bolis.

Both espers lost their owners' control. The glow grew dim and returned back to the hand of their master.

Within Hall of Quietude it was nothing but silence.

Note 1: Sword finger. It normally use when holding sword. If the person is right handed, the right hand hold the sword while left hand form sword finger and put the finger on right wrist. When carrying, or not using the sword, left hand will hold the sword behind the left arm and hold the sword's handle with sword finger (pretty much like how Anan hold her sword except she used right hand instead of left). Sword finger is simply pointing out index and middle finger.

Chapter 14 Divine Power

Tian Bolis stood up and examined Baye. The colour of his face was extremely bad. He said coldly: "Good skill! Good momentum!"

Kevern whispered to Baye: "Shidi, apologize quickly."

Baye frowned and stepped in front. He spoke, but it was to Shaw Danon: "Xiao Fan, that was my bad. It was just testing to see each other's level of cultivation; however, I didn't hold back my strength. Sorry."

Shaw Danon was really worried about his friend, but he said: "No, it was nothing."

Tian Bolis became more angry. He suddenly took a step forward. Red glow passed by on his face.

Kevern began to worry. He was different from Baye. He was in Jadeon for a long time and knew Bamboo Peak is way weaker than the other six houses; however, their head master Tian Bolis and his wife Surin had unbelievable strength. No one ever dared to underestimate them. Even the proud Master Vasp Caelo reminded him before they departed: Although Tian Bolis has a bad

temper, his cultivation skill is extremely high, plus his wife is also well known in Jadeon for her wisdom. Even our Head of the Faction Master Doyel Shen needed to treat the couple with high respect. It was best not to make him mad if not necessary.

But Baye didn't know about it. Even if he did know, he wouldn't remember it anyway.

Tian Bolis became even more angry. Just when he was about to make a move, Surin pulled his hand, her lips lightly smiled: "You are already so old, why bother arguing with a junior?"

Tian Bolis was startled for a moment and stopped. Kevern quickly stood in front of Baye, also said: "Tian Shishu, please forgive us. For the sake of our master, please don't argue with the ignorant younger generation."

Shaw Danon knew Baye had made his master angry. In his eyes, Baye was the only orphan of Grass Temple Village; Baye was just like his own brother. He couldn't help but keep down in front of Tian Bolis, said: "Master, it's all disciple's fault. I saw Jing Yu, no, Lin Shixiong had brought his sword, so I was interested to see his level of cultivation. That's why we fought, it's all disciple..."

Tian Bolis was already holding his anger and had no place to express it. Kevern was enough already, but now Shaw Danon speaking there like an idiot. He couldn't hold his rage anymore: "Shut up, you useless fool!"

Then, he waved his sleeve. Shaw Danon felt strong wind blow at him. All the air surrounding him seemed to disappear. The mighty force pushed his body away and threw him into the wall of Hall of Quietude. "Bang!" His body landed on the hard, stable wall, then he fell on the ground. Shaw Danon felt dizzy, then

he spewed out large amounts of blood from his mouth.

Within Hall of Quietude, everyone was stunned.

“Dad!” Hidi was the first one to cry out. She rushed forward and helped Shaw Danon to stand up. Baye ran almost at the same time. He saw the blood on Shaw Danon’s chest. He wouldn’t be as angry if the one who had been injured was himself; however, Shaw Danon was trying to help him and that’s why he got injured. Baye couldn’t care anymore. He turned and shouted at Tian Bolis: “Short fatty, what were you trying to do?”

At that time, Dragon Slayer seemed to understand its master; the green glow brightened up again.

Tian Bolis’ eyes opened wide. He must have been mad because of the words “short fatty.” He swung his arm, then disappeared in front of everyone’s eyes.

Kevern quickly shouted: “Shidi, careful.”

Baye was already prepared. He saw Tian Bolis moving as swift as a ghost. Baye immediately held up Dragon Slayer, using the sword spirit to create a green aura to protect himself.

Tian Bolis saw the mighty green light as nothing. He suddenly appeared in front of Baye and forced all the green glow to back away three feet. Tian Bolis’ large, angry eyes were almost touching Baye’s face. Baye was nervous. He took a few steps back unsteadily. Even in this case, Dragon Slayer was still hanging in mid-air defending its master.

Tian Bolis laughed coldly. His right hand suddenly reached out and passed through the sword spirit. Red glow appeared on his palm. With the red glow he pushed back the green light, he quickly seized Dragon Slayer.

Kevern immediately dashed in front of Baye and shouted loudly: “Tian Shishu, please have mercy!”

Tian Bolis didn’t go after him. He let Baye be protected by Kevern. He just focused on an examination of Dragon Slayer.

At that time, almost all the green sword spirit was gone; however, Dragon Slayer still struggled in Tian Bolis’ hand, shone half of his body green.

Tian Bolis raised his eyes and said coldly: “Dragon Slayer is Nine Skies Esper, but it doesn’t guarantee invincibility!” Then, his fingers suddenly grabbed hard onto the handle. Dragon Slayer immediately stopped moving. At the next moment, green glare rose up again, much more brightly than Baye’s. Kevern cried out: “Tian Shishu.....” Tian Bolis’ face was as cold as ice. He said no more. His right hand held Dragon Slayer and gave a powerful slash toward Baye and Kevern’s direction. The green light mightily glared, creating a green pillar that is two persons in height.

Kevern grit his teeth. Both of his hands held out sword fingers and drew out a white sword. This was his famous “Frozen Ice” sword.

The green pillar Tian Bolis released almost reached them. Kevern protected Baye and walked back a few steps. His right hand made a different sword mark. “Frozen Ice” swiftly sent out white light, formed seven layers of ice wall.

The green sword chi broke through the ice walls easily unlike Baye's. It crushed the ice walls into millions of pieces. The green sword chi had no sign of weakening, it charged toward Kevern like an angry dragon.

Kevern's face was pale and had nowhere to go. He used all his strength and used Frozen Ice to form a shield with a white glow.

"Bang!" The green sword chi hit against the white light. Although it didn't immediately crush the shield, it pushed the white glow back rapidly. Kevern used all his strength and managed to hold the green sword chi one foot away. It was just like a human trying to hold off against an aggressive beast.

Kevern tried to keep the shield going, but his feet began to collapse and be pushed backward by the powerful strength.

From the beginning of this interaction until now, Tian Bolis stood still where he was and did not make a move; Dragon Slayer's green glow, however, was getting brighter and brighter. Kevern and Baye were pushed out of Hall of Quietude to the ground outside. At the place where the green light passed by, it seemed like it had been slashed by a large blade; a one foot deep rift was left in its way.

The green light pushed back Kevern another three yards. The white light shield was only six inches away from Kevern's body. His feet sank into the earth. A moment later, Kevern couldn't hold any longer. White light disappeared. Frozen Ice got hit with great force into the air and lost control.

Kevern and Baye's faces were as pale as a dead person. But then, the green light suddenly stopped in mid-air at the critical moment.

Kevern was sweating, he did not dare to move.

After a while, the green light was no longer controlled and slowly disappeared.

"Clang"!

Frozen Ice landed on the ground in front of them. Kevern put himself together a little. He quickly said respectfully: "Thank you for Tian Shishu's kindness."

Baye was still surprised to see the common looking Tian Bolis had such great power.

Suddenly an item was tossed out from Hall of Quietude. Kevern and Baye were surprised. It was Dragon Slayer. It landed right in front of them, next to Frozen Ice.

"You two leave!" Tian Bolis' voice returned to normal. Coldness was clearly visible.

Kevern quickly responded and pulled Baye along. They retrieved their their own swords and flew back.

The disciples saw Tian Bolis' anger. None dared to make a sound. Especially Shaw Danon, it was his first time seeing Tian Bolis use his mystic power. He

almost forgot his own wound on his chest. He accidentally tore his wound, he immediately cried “Ouch!”

Tian Bolis heard Shaw Danon’s cry. He looked toward Shaw Danon. Shaw Danon forced himself to bear the pain. Tian Bolis did not say anything. He looked at all the disciples. Everyone lowered their head and did not want to meet his eyes.

Tian Bolis sighed and shook his head. He put both hands on his back and walked toward the rear hall. Surin told everyone: “All of you leave for now.”

The disciples answered. Hidi carried Shaw Danon and left with the disciples. After everyone walked out of Hall of Quietude, Surin went into the rear hall and passed the back door. She saw Tian Bolis standing in the corridor and looking at the bamboo in the courtyard.

Surin walked next to her husband, softly asked: “Why so mad today?”

Tian Bolis slight shook his head, responded back: “When Ling Er fought with Baye earlier, Kevern formed ice wall to stop Dragon Slayer. You saw what happened, right?”

Surin sighed: “He didn’t take out Frozen Ice.”

Tian Bolis snorted: “Last Seven Peaks Tournament, Kevern needed to rely on the power of esper to form ice wall; I can’t imagine he already reached that level within just several decades.” Then he turned and looked at Surin: “What level of cultivation do you think he is at?”

Surin said: “When he cast, he seemed relaxed and not using all his power, that means he is at least Yu Qing level eight.”

Tian Bolis opened his mouth then stopped. Surin helped him to continue: “Within Bamboo Peak, none can be his opponent.”

Tian Bolis deeply looked at his wife, then slowly he turned his head, looked at the bamboo in the garden. As winter grew closer, the green leaves had become yellow.

After a moment, he suddenly asked: “How is seventh?”

Surin looked at him, her lips smiled: “How good can he be, he coughed out loads of blood due to you great master.”

Tian Bolis’ fat body shook, but he didn’t turn his head: “Tonight, bring him a Yellow Pill. Don’t let him pretend to be dead tomorrow and make all of us starve.”

Surin kept on smiling.

Night came, the sky darkened.

Shaw Danon slowly walked back to his dormitory. After he pushed the door open, Ashh was the first one who rushed into the room; then Big Yella followed. The monkey and the dog played around in his room.

Shaw Danon smiled a little. He sat down next to the table. His chest still hurt,

but his brain was filled with the scene of battle between Tian Bolis and the others. He could not help but sigh.

“What is the use of sighing?” A gentle sound came from outside.

Shaw Danon was surprised. He turned and saw Surin was standing at the door. The night wind blew her clothes about, like a fairy from heaven. He quickly stood up, said: “Shi niang.”

Surin walked to him, put her hand on his shoulder, smiled: “It’s alright, sit.”

Shaw Danon followed the order and sat down. Surin carefully examined his face and put her hand on his chest, then nodded: “Good, nothing too serious.” She took out a white bottle and poured out a yellow pill that’s about the size of a finger tip. She passed it to Shaw Danon: “Take it.”

Shaw Danon hesitated for a moment, then he took the pill and swallowed it. A warm feeling came from his stomach, then to his limbs. The pain in his chest disappeared.

Shaw Danon rose up and exercised his body. Everything was normal. He hurriedly said to Surin: “Thank you, Shi niang.”

Surin nodded. She took back the bottle and sat on the other chair. She said: “No need to thank me. It was your master who was the one who told me to bring you Yellow Pill.”

Shaw Danon was startled, asked: “Master is not mad at me anymore?”

Surin looked at him, smiled: “He told me to come see you, surely he is not mad at you. I don’t know if you are mad at him?”

Shaw Danon was surprised, immediately said: “No, Shi niang, I would never dare...”

Surin raised her hand and stopped Shaw Danon, said gently: “Xiao Fan, listen to me, okay?”

Shaw Danon quietly said: “Yes, Shi niang.”

Surin said: “Today your master hit you, it was his fault. I saw it. However, he regretted after he hit you. His temper is just...” Her gentle face had signs of sadness, she continued: “He is a competitive person, always cares about his reputation. Even if he regrets, he won’t say it out loud, so don’t hate him.”

Shaw Danon shook his head: “Shi niang, I am not mad at master. It’s just me being too stupid, made master mad.”

Surin looked at him, lightly sighed: “It has nothing to do with you, actually. Cultivation is based on one’s quality and potential. Although hard work will pay off, but still the result will be less than others. Your master understands that. What he was worrying about is not that.”

Shaw Danon was curious, asked: “What is it that master worried about?”

Surin smiled helplessly: “The people like Kevern are almost impossible to get.

Now in Jadeon, Bamboo Peak is getting weaker and weaker. Although your master's cultivation is high, disciples often got teased by all Shi bo and Shishu. His heart has a lot of difficulty bearing it. He also worries one day he will leave (Note 1), Bamboo Peak will never be able to come back. He won't be able to face all the ancestors of Bamboo Peak. All the burdens are on him. Actually, it is very miserable."

Shaw Danon was silent. Surin then realized, smiled bitterly: "Really. What is the use to tell this to a fourteen year old kid?" She stood up and slapped his shoulder: "Rest early."

Shaw Danon answered: "Yes, Shi niang, walk slowly."

Surin nodded, then left. Shaw Danon followed her to the door. After he saw Surin's shadow was gone, he returned back into the room.

But just when he came back, he saw, next to his desk, in the light a candle, a lady in red standing there.

He was startled, then quietly cried: "Shijie!"

Note 1: It mean when Tian Bolis die.

Chapter 15 Secretly Teach

The lady was Hidi no doubt. She was worried about Shaw Danon's injury, so she came to see him, but she could never have imagined her mother would be there, too. So Hidi hid outside of the door and waited for Surin to be gone.

She noticed Shaw Danon was rooted on the floor, she said angrily: "What are you standing there for?"

Shaw Danon woke up. He tried to find an excuse, but then he saw Hidi lowered her head. It's because Big Yella came and pushed against Hidi's leg.

Hidi bent over and patted Big Yella's head. Big Yella licked her hand.

"Creak creak" Ashh went behind Big Yella and pulled on its tail; seemed like it wanted to pull Big Yella away from Hidi. Ashh felt Hidi's eyes, he looked up and showed his teeth.

Hidi didn't get angry. She made a face toward the monkey in reply. Since Ashh came here, it went along well with everyone except Hidi. Hidi was surprised to find Big Yella didn't go aggressive at Ashh.

“What happened?” Hidi asked Shaw Danon while pointing at Ashh and Big Yella.

Shaw Danon told her about the meat bone. Hidi laughed: “Can’t believe that stupid monkey did that trick.” Then she changed topic, she examined Shaw Danon, asked: “Today, my dad hit you, anywhere not feeling well?”

Shaw Danon shook his head: “Nothing, Shijie.”

Hidi said: “What’s the matter with dad? He is not happy and vented his anger onto you!”

Shaw Danon quickly said: “No, it’s my stupidity that made master mad...”

Hidi stared at him. Shaw Danon held back what he was going to say. Hidi snorted: “It has nothing to do with you, actually. It’s just because he saw the two people had good potential, so his mind...” Then she stopped and looked at Shaw Danon. She realized that meant she was saying he is stupid, then she changed topic again: “What was my mom coming here for?”

Shaw Danon replied honestly: “Shi niang came to visit me and gave me two ‘Yellow Pills.’ Very effective, I was fully recovered after taking one.”

“Yellow Pill?” Hidi was surprised.

“Yes,” Shaw Danon looked at her, asked: “What it is?”

Hidi said: “That is my dad’s treasure. I heard Mom say it was made from

twenty-three different types of spiritual herbs. Marvelous medicinal effect. Even I didn't have the luck to take it."

Shaw Danon's mouth opened wide. Hidi's eyes rolled, continued: "Perhaps my dad was impressed by you, but doesn't seem like it."

Shaw Danon said: "It must be master's kindness. He saw me injured, so he gave me a magical pill. He, senior, is very broad minded!"

Hidi laughed: "My dad, broad minded...heh heh. Anyway, I'm not going to argue this with you. Huh, why is there the sound of rain?"

Shaw Danon listened carefully. Outside really was raining. Hidi walked to the window. She pushed the window open. Cool wind came in from the window. Cold, tiny rain drops hit on the face.

The sky rained in the silent dark of night. Everywhere was dark except for the blurry shadow of the bamboo in the courtyard. The rain fell from the sky. In Shaw Danon's eyes, it was gentle. He even felt that the night was beautiful, the rain was melodious; when the rain drops hit against the bamboo leaves he was pleased to listen to its sounds. The sound that resonated within his soul.

Standing next to him was a beautiful lady. Happiness and sadness within this beauty. She was watching:

At this rain!

Big Yella and Ashh also quieted down. Big Yella lay on the bed. His eyes were half opened. Ashh sat next to Big Yella and searched through Big Yella's thick

fur.

Candle's fire suddenly flickered in the mountain wind, making a soft popping sound.

"It's raining." Hidi softly said.

Shaw Danon answered: "Yeah."

Hidi stared into the night for a few moments, then turned back to the table; quietly said: "Xiao Fan, close the window will you? It is getting cold."

Shaw Danon nodded and closed the window. Hidi sat next to the table absently. She took out a small box, then opened it under the light.

The candle reflected in her eyes, like a pair of gentle flames.

"Say, do you think this 'Refresh Bead' is pretty?" Hidi's eyes were fixed upon the bright, small bead. Her voice wasn't stable. Shaw Danon's heart suddenly felt empty, slowly sank.

He went to her with all his courage. He used all his strength to make himself look normal. Hidi raised her head and looked at him. She suddenly found her Shidi's eyes were so bright, but at the same time, so sorrowful and wild.

She lightly closed the box, asked gently: "Xiao Fan, what is it?"

Shaw Danon lowered his head, fell silent for a moment, then said: "I am alright, Shijie."

Hidi felt weird, but didn't bother much about it. She stood up and said: "Okay, it's late now. I should head back."

Shaw Danon woodenly stood up. Hidi took a few steps, then suddenly stopped and turned around smiling. The beauty of that moment hit deeply in Shaw Danon's heart. "How could I forget this; I even forgot the point for me coming tonight."

Shaw Danon took it and read a few lines, then he cried: "Pure Essence incantation! Shijie, this..."

Hidi rolled her eyes, said angrily: "Why did you cry out so loud?"

Shaw Danon immediately lowered his voice: "Shijie, this is the level three incantation. You..."

"Me?" Hidi snorted: "Of course I am giving it to you."

Shaw Danon was surprised: "What?"

Hidi said: "I know dad always looked down on you. Today he hit you, it was even more idiotic. Huh, he doesn't even bother to teach his own disciple and scolds you. I don't want to see it anymore. You use this incantation and practice it secretly. Achieve whatever someday and show my dad. Don't be so embarrassed like today."

Shaw Danon frowned: "But Shijie, if master and shi niang know it, they will scold you."

Hidi said impatiently: "You already said they will scold me. Just a few words and lock me up for a few days. So what? I can't let you get fooled by other people!"

Shaw Danon was shocked. His heart was like a burning flame. He looked at Hidi's figure. At that moment he thought, even if he died for her, he will never regret.

Hidi said: "You also need to remember to put in more effort. One day, find a chance to have a draw with that stinky Baye. However, you will never catch up to Kevern Shixiong, don't even think about it." Then, she waved her hand: "Keep everything as secret." She left and disappeared into the darkness swiftly.

"You will never catch up to Kevern Shixiong!"

These words, each hit heavily in Shaw Danon's heart. His face was pale. His hand held the paper tight.

Within the mountain and rain, sky and earth who can see that youngster, walking in the rain and looking at the sky.

At dawn, after the rain, Shaw Danon came back to his familiar kitchen and began to boil water.

The bright fire in the stove was like an evil spirit dancing on the flame; shone red against his face. Shaw Danon used a thin piece of firewood as a fire stick and moved the fire wood around.

“You will never catch up to Kevern Shixiong!”

These words, he had repeated in his heart thousands of times. Each time it just hurt his heart even more. He knew he was being stupid. Shijie didn’t mean it. She only said the truth that everyone would agree with.

However, he couldn’t help it. There was a wild fire like this in his heart. It kept burning his heart, until the actual fire burned his hand.

“Ouch!” Shaw Dannon shouted. He jumped back. The thin fire wood caught on fire when he was not paying attention and burned his hand.

He blew on his hand. Shaw Danon went to the jar and put his hand into the cool water. Shaw Danon smiled bitterly; of all the things he needed most now is a fire stick.

“Um, um, um” A few calls came in from the outside. Shaw Danon recognized this was Big Yella’s voice. He was wondering why Big Yella’s usual “bark, bark” had turned into “um, um.” Shaw Danon walked to the door and found Big Yella and Ashh were fighting over a black, short rod. Big Yella’s mouth was biting one end of the rod while Ashh used its hands to tug at the other end. Because Big

Yella was biting the short rod, its voice turned into the weird “um, um.”

Shaw Danon took the short stick away from them and drove Big Yella and Ashh away. He knew they would not go away easily, so he threatened them: “Go, go. Don’t mess around in here, or else I will not make lunch for you two.”

Big Yella and Ashh exchanged looks. One roared at Shaw Danon while one made a face. Then, Ashh jumped on Big Yella’s back and they walked away.

He cursed at the two animals. After Shaw Danon returned to the kitchen, he realized the short rod was the strange, short, black stick found in ancient valley half a year ago. Ashh recovered this somewhere in the room and used it to play with Big Yella.

Shaw Danon sighed, then an idea came to him. He walked quickly to the stove and pushed the firewood around with the black stick. That stick was made out of some unknown material, it won’t catch on fire, and also didn’t transfer heat. After the entire morning, the stick was still cool. Shaw Danon thought this stick was perfect for him.

Pity for the dead Black Heart Elder. If he knew the “Sinister Orb,” the most powerful esper of the evil factions, was being used as a fire stick; even if he were resurrected, he would die again of anger.

That day at noon, everyone of Bamboo Peak’s disciples were sitting in the dinning room. Tian Bolis was the last one who entered. His eyes landed on Shaw Danon for a moment. Shaw Danon lowered his head, then, Tian Bolis moved his sight away.

“So, all of you saw what happened yesterday, right?” Tian Bolis asked.

Everyone was quiet, only Xavion said: “Yes, master had shown his might and punished the...”

“Nonsense!” Tian Bolis suddenly shouted. The disciples were terrified. Tian Bolis said angrily: “Yesterday, all of you should know other house’s disciples were highly cultivated. Not to mention Kevern, even though he had been adopted for only three years, had come and began messing around. Don’t you know that?”

Everyone was silent, only Shaw Danon suddenly raised his head.

Tian Bolis coldly said: “Seven Peaks Tournament is almost here. All of you useless people, from today on, everyone lock themselves in their room. If you can’t have any decent improvement, let us see if I will peel your skin off!”

Everyone had the word “unwilling” shown on their face, but none said a word. Hidi carefully asked: “Dad, then I shall...”

“You too!” Tian Bolis said without hesitation.

Just when Hidi was about to speak, her sleeve got pulled on by her mother. Hidi turned and looked at Surin, she then took back the words that she was about to speak.

Tian Bolis’ voice was resounding through Hall of Quietude: “Except for seventh, who is responsible for meals, all of you cannot leave here for these one and a half years. Lock up and practice, understand?”

.....

So, in the peaceful Bamboo Peak, it was covered by nervousness that had never appeared before. All the disciples were focused on cultivation except a free dog, a naughty monkey and a boring cook.

Chapter 16 Navigate Object

“Bark! Bark!”

“Creak! Creak!”

.....

The bark of a dog and the scream of a monkey mixed together across Mount Jadeon’s Bamboo Peak, breaking the peaceful quiet. Shaw Danon ran out from the kitchen with the black fire stick in his hand, he shouted angrily: “Stupid dog! Stupid monkey! I dare you not to run!”

Ashh jumped on Big Yella’s back. Big Yella was already prepared and ran away. Shaw Danon couldn’t catch up, and all he could do is watch as Ashh made a face and put a delicious bone into Big Yella’s mouth. Big Yella was so happy that if it had not been because its teeth needed to hold the bone, it’s jaw already fell open from laughing so hard.

Shaw Danon went back to the kitchen with an angry face. He took care of the kitchen since he was fourteen. His cooking skill was unexpected to everyone. Even the “cultivated dog,” Big Yella, couldn’t help but also hunger for Shaw

Danon's meal, especially the bone he used for making soup.

But the soup was made for humans, although Big Yella was the oldest, should be receiving the highest respect, all he could do is simply watch and not get to eat. After he became friends with Ashh, the scene that just happened appeared very commonly in Bamboo Peak. For the past two years, no matter how hard Shaw Danon tried to hide the bone, with Big Yella's nose and Ashh's agility, this bone battle always resulted in defeat for Shaw Danon.

Two years passed by fast, actually one and a half years. Shaw Danon had grown into a sixteen year old young man. His body was taller than his Shijie Hidi now. For this period of time, under Tian Bolis' order, every Bamboo Peak disciple needed to practice their cultivation except Amandla, who was traveling; only Shaw Danon as a cook was the most relaxed.

For two years, under nobody's watch, Shaw Danon practiced alone. But the thing he couldn't believe is: following the instruction of Xavion's incantation, with barely one year of practice, he seemed to master the second level of Yu Qing - refining vigor.

He questioned himself, but he didn't ask Tian Bolis. Xavion and Hidi were focusing on cultivation. They had no time to spare for him. Amandla was also not here. As a result, Shaw Danon could only bury the question in his heart. But there was a more important thing facing him. Hidi gave him the incantation for third level secretly. He understood that was a serious act against the faction's rules. But then, every night when he was standing alone in the courtyard and looking at the sky, he always remembered one phrase:

You will never catch up to Kevern Shixiong!

Ten nights later, he began to practice level three's incantation!

In Pure Essence, Yu Qing's first three levels are the foundation of all magic. The difficulty progressively increases. Third level was different than the first two. The first two were "Introducing Spirit" and "Refining Vigor." The third level's main idea was "Energy," focus began to be aimed toward cultivating Tai Chi Energy. The Incantation stated: "Tai Chi energy, three combine to one. Chi, neutral; Yuan, beginning, follow the twelve periods...Yin and Yang combine, energy starts at Zi, becomes all things." (From 《汉书-律历志》)

When Jadeon disciples practiced this far, the difference between potentials will be made clear. Intelligent disciples would pass this level quickly and move straight into "Navigate Object," built upon a stable foundation. The disciples with slightly worse potential would stay there forever and might waste their entire life in it.

Shaw Danon had entered Jadeon five years ago. He heard a lot from his Shixions. Clearly all the Shixions grouped him on the "worse" side.

Shaw Danon returned to the kitchen and began to boil water. The fire brightened again. He used the poor fire stick" to move the firewood around a few times. After the fire became stable, his eyes looked at the fire stick.

He hadn't discovered anything. He was just doing a very natural thing-day dreaming.

The entire fire stick was mysteriously black except for the round bead. It was only a foot long. The strange thing was that you could faintly see the red vein-like lines under the black colour of the surface.

Shaw Danon's entire body had shaken. The idea of forging with blood made him sick. These years, he slowly forgot the journey to the ancient valley. Once in a while he woke up in the middle of the night from dreaming of the ancient valley again.

At that time he felt he was lonely. One person facing the unknown beast. One person facing the mysterious death. Each time, he had uncontrollable excitement and rage. He was thirsty for blood. He even thought of the Monk Pozhi in Grass Temple village a few years ago.

Shaw Danon did not know why he would have such a feeling. Fortunately he had a way to calm his mind: Fawin Wisdom!

This Fuwa incantation could clear out evil thinking from one's mind. He practiced it for five years, and the most common use for it was to suppress the strange thought that appeared in his mind for the past two years.

Suddenly something hit Shaw Danon's head. It was a pine cone. Anger rose inside his heart. Shaw Danon turned and shouted: "Stupid monkey, don't let me catch you ore else...oh, you are...ah! Sixth Shixiong!"

Shaw Danon saw a person was standing at the door, with a bag on his shoulder and a smile on his face. It was Amandla.

Amandla carefully looked at Shaw Danon, said: "Wow, after just a few years, you brat you have grown as tall as me."

Shaw Danon swiftly walked toward him and grabbed his shoulders, smiled: "Sixth Shixiong, why gone for so long, we all missed you."

Amandla smiled: "I am back now, aren't I?"

Then Shaw Danon asked: "Does master and Shi niang know you are back?"

Amandla said: "No. I just came back and saw there was smoke coming out from the kitchen, so I guess you must be working there, kid. Didn't see me for a few years, did you miss me?"

Shaw Danon nodded. Amandla patted his head, suddenly whispered: "Come, go see master with me."

Shaw Danon was startled, asked: "Why do you need me to go with you?"

Amandla said: "Master let me travel for one year, but then I played...no, I mean, I used an extra half a year to find good material for an esper. I am afraid master will be mad at me. Come with me."

Shaw Danon stared at him: "So that's why you came to see me first. Oh yeah, sixth Shixiong, what esper did you craft?"

Amandla hollowly laughed: "Ho ho, I just feel like seeing you first. Xiao Shidi, come, come." Then he pulled Shaw Danon away.

After a while, both Big Yella, who was chewing the bone in the corner, and Ashh, who was catching a flea on Big Yella's back, heard a furious roar coming out of Hall of Quietude: "Disgraceful person, you tried to anger me to death!"

At dinner time, for the first time in two years, everyone was here, sitting in the dining hall. After everyone had their seat, Tian Bolis' face was still angry. When people greeted Amandla, they couldn't help but ask: "Sixth, why was master so angry after he met with you?"

Amandla was embarrassed. He kept switching topic. Shaw Danon, on the other hand, was holding his laughter, making his face look weird.

Then, Hidi finally couldn't help it. She asked: "Dad, sixth finally came back, why are you so mad at him?"

Amandla slightly raised his head and looked at Tian Bolis. Tian Bolis stared back at him and Amandla was forced to lower his head again. Tian Bolis snorted: "Sixth, why don't you show them your esper?"

Amandla's mouth opened wide, could not say a word. Then he looked toward Surin, but Surin smiled: "Bishu, let them see it; let them know what made your master so mad."

Amandla knew he couldn't avoid it. He slowly took his bag and took out a few items and let them lay on the table.

Everyone did not even blink, afraid to miss some important details. It was extremely quiet in the dinning hall. On the table, there were three wood-made cubes with a half-a-fist size. It's white all over with dots carved on it. They were three dice.

Everyone was stunned. Then, everyone laughed.

Amandla blushed. Tian Bolis angrily said: “Rotten wood can not be craved (Note 1)”

Surin, however, shook her head and smiled: “It doesn’t matter, it’s not really important. Let it be. The esper is for him to use anyway.”

Tian Bolis stared at Amandla, then said to Surin: “How do you know he is not using it to scam people?”

Amandla was surprised, quickly said: “Master, Shi niang, disciple would never do such a dirty, shameful thing. It’s just because I found a thousand year-old Three-Bead Tree at Chi Shui Lake south of here. The tree is very spiritual, so I used it to craft three dice. I didn’t realize...”

Tian Bolis was still angry, said: “Now you are happy, right? Hmph, now great, you’ve crafted a gambling tool. At the Seven Peaks Tournament, which is just a month away, when you show up on the stage with this thing. Will I be able to save face?”

Amandla did not dare to speak. Surin shook her head, said quietly: “Buyi it is the thing he likes. Don’t force him. You still remember Vanti Shixiong...”

Tian Bolis suddenly was shocked and turned to Surin. Surin sighed, told Amandla: “Bishu, you know your master and I never forced you to craft a sword like the Shixionsgs of the other houses. Esper, however, is always of a major concern. You need to act accordingly.”

Amandla looked at Tian Bolis again and saw his master was still unhappy. He did not dare to speak much, so he nodded: “Yes, yes.”

Surin looked at her husband again, then said to everyone: “Time passed so quickly. Next month is already Seven Peaks Tournament. At that time, we will all go to the main house Peak of Widow. Make sure to be prepared.” Then, her beautiful, gentle face became serious, rapidly she said: “this time, do not let me and your master be disappointed, get it?”

Everyone immediately answered: “Yes!”

“Shi, Shi niang.” A weak voice appeared within the response of the disciples. It was Shaw Danon. Surin frowned, asked: “What is it, Xiao Fan?”

Shaw Danon cautiously said: “You mean I will be going, too?”

Surin was startled, then looked at Tian Bolis. She smiled: “Yes, aren’t you a member of Bamboo Peak?”

Shaw Danon cheered with Amandla. He was so happy that he ignored what Tian Bolis said: “There are nine spots, anyway. Even if we give one to an idiot, still one is wasted.”

※ ※ ※

At nightfall, Shaw Danon went back to his room. Big Yella and Ashh were already resting on Shaw Danon’s bed. One and half years ago, because Big Yella became friends with Ashh, it also moved to Shaw Danon’s bedroom. At first, Tian Bolis was very worried because he couldn’t find his dog. Then, after he

found out what happened, he snorted and left. Shaw Danon saw Tian Bolis didn't say anything, so he didn't drive Big Yella away. (Actually, it was a case of being unable to drive Big Yella away. Big Yella took half of the bed, Ashh took half of the other half; it is obvious how the owner felt.)

As time passed, however, Shaw Danon got used to it and did not complain about sleeping with Big Yella and Ashh anymore. That night, Shaw Danon's mood was great. He sat next to the table and saw Big Yella lazily laying on the bed. Ashh took the black fire stick from the kitchen again and used it to rub Big Yella's body.

He felt Ashh was really interested in this fire stick. But now he didn't want to bother thinking about it. His heart was filled with happiness that his master allowed him to go to Seven Peaks Tournament.

Shaw Danon looked toward the monkey and dog, but it seemed like he was talking to thin air: "Look, I get a chance to join Seven Peaks Tournament. That is just great. Master is really broad-minded. Even though I am so stupid he is allowing me to come and learn. Um, maybe I can meet Jing Yu there."

Then, he paused and quietly spoke to himself: "But going on the platform and dueling will just bring shame to master. Anyway, if it's meant to be then let it be. Big Yella, Ashh, am I right?"

"Creak Creak!"

Shaw Danon raised his head. Ashh put all his thought into Big Yella's fur and catching fleas. Only screamed a few times in response to answer him. Big Yella is even more direct. Its dog ears folded and ignored him.

“Stupid dog!” Shaw Danon angrily called out. Ashh threw the fire stick at him. He dodged it and the fire stick bounced on the table and landed on the ground.

“Creak Creak!” “Bark Bark!” The dog and monkey’s sound became symphony. Shaw Danon made a face toward the two animals. He sat down, then his mind came up with the image of Kevern in Bamboo Peak two years ago.

“Form wall of ice!” Shaw Danon quietly said. When he didn’t practice, it was fine; however, after he did, it became worse. He began to realize the far distance between himself and Kevern.

Then, he thought of that night. Hidi was sitting in this room next to the light. Those soft, glowing eyes!

His heart felt like being stabbed by needle.

The fire stick quietly lay quietly on the ground. Shaw Danon suddenly felt himself to be much like the fire stick; so lonely, laying on the ground alone.

“Alas” he sighed, imagining if he could reach that level of cultivation. Then, a totally relaxed, uncaring movement. He did his first “navigate object” movement: he waved his hand toward the fire stick.

That moment felt like an eternity.

Shaw Danon was very normal, with no disappointment and acceptance of his failure. Then, he saw the fire stick moved a little.

Just that little bit, slight movement, seemed like awakening from a long sleep, it moved!

Note 1: Rotten wood can not be craved mean, no matter what you do to a rotten wood, they can not become better.

Chapter 17 Attend

That morning, everyone was excited for the Seven Peaks Tournament. The disciples were especially excited, every one of them had a smile on their face. Although there would be some nervousness, they all got covered by excitement.

Within them, only Da Shixiong Xavion, second Wu Dayi, third Zheng Dali and fourth He Dazhi had participated in the previous tournament. Fifth Ludaxin and Sixth Amandla were new students and, of course, Shaw Danon and Hidi, too, had never been there; it only took place every sixty years.

As Tian Bolis and Surin were making the final preparations, Hidi pestered Xavion, who is the most experienced: “Da Shixiong, is it really that many faction members attending Seven Peaks Tournament?”

Xavion said: “Correct. Seven Peaks Tournament is the most important event in our faction. Anyone who can represent their house in the tournament is a talented student. Not to mention the exciting battle scene.”

Fourth He Dazhi heard them talking and came over. He winked at Hidi, smiled: “Xiao Shimei, you may not know, actually Da Shixiong still has something he did not tell you.”

Hidi asked: “Ah? What is it, fourth Shixiong?”

He Dazhi smiled: “Being the winner and standing in the middle of the platform while listening to the applause of hundreds of people. This pride cannot be escaped. But, if a young beautiful Shimei from the other houses admired and cheered for Da Shixiong, isn’t it a more joyful occurrence in one’s life?” Then, he turned and asked Xavion: “Da Shixiong, am I right?”

Xavion blushed.

Hidi was curious, asked: “Da Shixiong, why is your face red?”

Xavion shook his head hard, kept on murmuring: “No, no, my face didn’t turn red...”

He Dazhi coughed and saw everyone had gathered around him. Shaw Danon and Amandla were puzzled, but Wu Dayi and Zheng Dali were both smiling. So He Dazhi said: “Oh, second Shixiong and third Shixiong are both here. I have a bad memory these days. I think it was at the previous tournament, when Da Shixiong won twice in a row and entered the third round, there was a young, pretty Shimei. Um, I forgot her name...”

Wu Dayi quickly said: “Ah, I can’t remember it clearly. I think she is a Shimei from Bamboo Heights. Her face is extremely pretty. But the name...”

Zheng Dali said: “We all forgot her name. But we can still remember she clapped her hands the loudest, and flirted with Da Shixiong.”

Everyone laughed. Hidi began interrogating: “Da Shixiong, who is the Shijie who was being so nice to you?”

Xavion was embarrassed. He stared at He Dazhi and hollowly smiled: “No, no such thing. Don’t listen to your fourth Shixiong. Bamboo Height’s Baako Shimei was just cheering for me because of Shi niang.”

“Huh?” He Dazhi immediately said: “Da Shixiong, that’s odd. Me, second and third Shixions all forgot her name. How come you recalled her name so fast? But the kindness of Baako Shijie to Da Shixiong is...”

Everyone laughed. Xavion realized he said it wrong. He knew He Dazhi was an expert in battles of wits. The more he said the more mistakes there will be. He snorted and ignored them: “Stupid people. Heh heh, I am going to check if master and shi niang is ready yet.”

Hidi still wanted to ask, but Xavion ran away fast like the wind. So, she could only ask He Dazhi. Her eyes were filled with excitement: “Fourth Shixiong, tell me, what does Baako Shijie look like?”

He Dazhi said: “Xiao Shimei, aren’t you always going to Bamboo Height to visit Master Shui Yue with Shi niang? How come you never saw Baako Shijie? She is Master Shui Yue’s favourite student.”

Hidi shook her head: “Mom and I went directly to Master Shui Yue when we went to Bamboo Height. We rarely met any Shijie there. Come on, tell me.”

He Dazhi smiled: “No need to hurry. Today, when we go to main house’s Peak of Widows, you will see her, most likely.”

Hidi rolled her eyes, seemed like she realized something: “Oh, no wonder why Da Shixiong was so excited today, he had some evil thought in his head!”

Everyone was confused, then when they realized, they all laughed. Hidi herself also laughed. The little nervousness was gone. She looked around and saw everyone had a smile on their face. But when she looked at Shaw Danon, she was surprised. Even though Shaw Danon had a smile on his face, Hidi could sense that Shaw Danon was lost in thought.

Hidi pulled Shaw Danon aside, quietly asked: “Xiao Fan, you have any trouble?”

Shaw Danon was startled. His right hand touched his chest, then finally responded: “I am fine, Shijie.”

Hidi directly asked: “What is it? Let me see.”

Shaw Danon hesitated for a moment, then took out an item and let Hidi see it. Hidi was surprised, asked: “Why would you bring this black fire stick with you?”

Shaw Danon looked at Hidi’s surprised face. He mumbled: “Master’s kindness allowed me to participate in the Seven Peaks Tournament...”

Hidi understood what Shaw Dannon was saying. She couldn’t hold in her laughter. “Ah, ha ha, that’s why. You bring this, this fire stick to participate in Seven Peaks Tournament? Jadeon’s two thousand year history, sixth Shixiong’s gambling dice is already weird enough. Can’t imagine, can’t imagine you really,

really bring this fire stick to...ha ha ha ha, it's killing me."

Disciples heard Hidi's laughter and came to see what happened. They laughed after they heard the reason. Shaw Danon saw Shixions and Shijie next to him were smiling and happy, but anger arose in his heart.

The anger in his heart was just an instant; however, it was so intense that it almost made Shaw Danon stop breathing.

He lowered his head and held the ugly fire stick tight. The familiar chill spread to his palm.

"Xiao Fan." Hidi suddenly took back her smile: "I am sorry."

Shaw Danon was shaken, he raised his head.

Hidi said: "I was planning to give you an esper so you won't become a joke within our faction. But Mom forced me to practice too much, I forgot about it."

Shaw Danon shook his head, said: "Shijie, cultivating is more important. You don't need to worry about me."

Hidi patted his shoulder, smiled: "Doesn't matter anyway, everyone knows your limits. This time is just a chance for you to learn." She lowered her voice: "If anyone is giving you a hard time, you have to tell me, hmph, and I shall help you get back at them."

Shaw Dannon looked at Hidi's gentle eyes. He wouldn't doubt her promise.

He could also feel the kindness from other people around him; however, his emotion was still unstable. What is it, that burning inside of his heart like raging fire, making it difficult for him to breathe.

Hidi was still grinning. She patted her favourite Xiao Shidi's shoulder. She whispered: "Let me tell you. There are a lot of fun places in Peak of Widows. This time, we sneak out and go there, sound good?"

Shaw Danon suddenly didn't want to look at her beautiful face. He lowered his head. His mind was sweet and frustrated. He said: "Yes, Shijie."

He Dazhi suddenly said from behind them: "Master and Shi niang are here."

They turned and saw Tian Bolis and Surin were coming out from Hall of Quietude. Tian Bolis wore a sky blue robe. His face looked serious. If not for his fat belly and short body, he would look more like an admirable master. Surin wore a light green dress and a jade flower in her hair.

Xavion followed behind them. His face looked as serious as it could be. But as other disciples saw him coming, their face was working hard not to smile. Following behind Xavion were Big Yella and Ashh. Ashh was already used to sitting on Big Yella's back. When Ashh saw Shaw Danon, it screamed: "Creak creak" and jumped on Shaw Danon's shoulder.

Tian Bolis looked at each disciple and nodded: "Let's go." He waved his right arm. Red light flashed in the middle of his palm. His famous esper "Flame Spirit" appeared. Just when Tian Bolis was about to step forward, his pants got pulled on by someone. It was Big Yella. It kept swinging its head and tail, and its mouth moaned. Its dog eyes stared at Tian Bolis.

Tian Bolis hesitated and murmured, but still waved his sleeve and rolled up Big Yella and brought Big Yella to Flame Spirit. Tian Bolis stood on Flame Spirit and was the first to fly away.

Surin shook her head, smiled: “Come.” Then she paused, spoke to Xavion: “Daren, Xiao Fan’s skill isn’t strong enough. You carry him.”

Xavion nodded: “Yes.”

Surin nodded. Green light flashed and brought her to the sky and followed Tian Bolis’ red light.

Among the Bamboo Peak’s disciples, Wu Dayi, Zheng Dali, Ludaxin’s cultivation had not yet reached level four and could not use an esper. Shaw Danon rode with Xavion while the other three rode with He Dazhi, Amandla and Hidi. Hidi’s esper was Phoenix Soul. He Dazhi’s esper was “Landscape Brush,” really fitting his book-worm personality. However, the most comical was Amandla’s gambling dice esper. Once it was activated, white light flashed and the dice enlarged ten times of its size, circled around in min-air. If comparing the gambling tools of this earth, the winner would be here.

Fifth Ludaxin worriedly looked at Amandla’s dice, asked: “Sixth, that thing won’t fall out of the sky, right?”

Amandla grinned: “Fifth Shixiong, let’s have a bet. If it falls from the sky, you win, then I...”

Ludaxin said: “Will I dare to win this bet, then?”

Amandla was startled: “Oh, that’s right!”

Xavion walked in front of Shaw Danon, smiled: “Xiao Fan, are you ready?”

Just when Shaw Danon was about to nod, Ashh screamed from his shoulder. They were surprised. Ashh pointed to the sky, then pointed to itself. Shaw Danon was startled: “You want to come too?”

Ashh grinned. Shaw Danon hesitated for a moment, then looked at Xavion. Xavion thought for a while, then smiled: “Master brought Big Yella anyway, let’s bring Ashh there too.”

Shaw Dannon was glad. He nodded. Ashh was even more excited.

Xavion turned to the others, said: “Let us get going too, or else master will be mad if we are late.” They answered and left with their esper. Hidi told Shaw Danon before she departed: “Be careful, hold Shixiong tight.”

Shaw Danon nodded, said: “I know, Shijie.”

Hidi smiled. Her hand pointed. Phoenix Soul rose and carried her to the sky. Xavion drew out his esper “Ten Tiger.” He was Bamboo Peak’s oldest disciple. Although his Shidis crafted different espers, he still crafted a sword. “Ten Tiger” was yellow all over, four feet long and two inches wide. It was slightly larger than the average sword. Sadly an esper’s strength could not be determined by size.

Shaw Danon had experience with riding Hidi's Phoenix Soul. So, when Xavion pulled Shaw Danon to "Ten Tigers," he wasn't surprised. But Ashh, on the other hand, had held Shaw Danon's head tightly.

Xavion lightly smiled: "Xiao Shidi, here we go." Then, his right hand pointed at the sky. "Ten Tigers" roared. The sword ascended three feet. Shaw Danon grabbed Xavion's back.

The sword tip slowly raised at about a seventy degree angle. Shaw Danon needed to rely on Xavion in order to not fall. Then, "Ten Tigers" charged into the sky.

Shaw Danon held Xavion tightly. Although he was nervous, he didn't want to close his eyes. He saw Bamboo Peak was getting further and further away from him. Suddenly, everything in front of him turned to white. He was inside of thick clouds and unable to see anything.

Clouds were surrounding him. The wind blew against his face feeling like it cut. Shaw Danon's body was shaking. It's nervousness. It's excitement. Flying within sky and clouds, a dream had become true!

Within the sea of clouds, flying for some time now, just as Shaw Danon's emotions became settled, there was another surprise waiting for him. "Ten Tigers" had brought them out of the sea of clouds.

The blue sky, as blue as a deep ocean, so pure and boundless. When they came out from the clouds, the cloud beneath their feet seemed like a water spray, following them, creating long, thin cloud trails. Like the waves in the sea, the thin cloud trail slowly descended back to the sea of clouds.

Xavion finally lay the sword flat after they were three hundred yards above the clouds. They headed straight to Peak of Widows.

The mountain peak stood tall and magnificent. There was the ringing of bells echoing from the peak. Peak of Widows looked like a stairway to heaven.

Shaw Danon held his breath, as he saw countless amounts of colorful lights near the mountain peak. The closer to Peak of Widows, the more concentrated the lights were.

Shaw Danon knew those were the light of disciples' espers. Due to the five elements, they came with different colours, very pretty. The lights like stone rain rushed toward the mountain peak. Shaw Danon and Xavion with "Ten Tigers," soon joined into the colourful river of light.

※ ※ ※

Xavion and Shaw Danon landed on a huge square. Once they landed, Ashh looked around and jumped off of Shaw Danon's shoulder. It jumped around in the square. Shaw Danon did not care about it. He saw the white jade fence.

This place was familiar to Shaw Danon. He remembered this place was "Jadeon's six scene"'s "Cloud Sea." He hadn't seen it for five years; however, it was exactly the same without any changes. It was still beautiful. Today was just slightly more crowded than usual.

The square was very crowded. The disciples attending Seven Peaks Tournament seemed to be temporarily staying here. There was approximately a

few hundred people. Most people wore Jadeon clothing. Many were the younger generation. Jadeon had been cultivating many young disciples.

Although there were a few hundred people in the square, the square still seemed spacious. Xavion searched through the crowd, suddenly a bright sound called “Da Shixiong, we are over here.”

Shaw Danon and Xavion looked toward the direction where the call came from. It was from the Bamboo Peak’s disciples. They were standing next to one of the forges in the middle. Hidi was waving to them.

Xavion answered and walked toward them with Shaw Danon. Shaw Danon looked around and saw the disciples from other houses were standing in groups. They were happily chatting. They all seemed to be looking forward to the tournament.

He Dazhi was the first one to ask: “Da Shixiong, was the trip all right?”

Xavion smiled: “It’s not the first time coming here, what could happen?”

Hidi looked at Shaw Danon, smiled: “Xiao Fan, the scene along the way is fine?”

Shaw Danon recalled the magnificent scene of the mountain peak in the sky, said: “Very beautiful.”

Hidi giggled, patted his shoulder, said: “Try harder in cultivation. When you craft your esper and learn how to fly, you can go into the sky and see as much as you wish.”

Shaw Danon didn't answer, instead he smiled and nodded.

Xavion looked around and asked He Dazhi: "Fourth Shidi, where are Master and Shi niang?"

He Dazhi said: "We followed Master and Shi niang to here, then the head house's brother lead master and Shi niang to Crystal Hall. They said it's seven house's master's meeting. Discussing some of the tournament's details. Master ordered us to stay here and wait for him."

Xavion nodded, then he waved his hand to gather his shidi around him. He looked around and whispered: "I have seen many new faces from other houses. You guys were here earlier, get any information?"

He Dazhi shook his head: "I also have the same feeling. It seems like the other houses have recruited many new people."

Second Wu Dayi looked around: "There are many new people. But, I guess, when we go on the stage tomorrow, most likely we will be facing the previous cultivated Shixions. They are the ones who have the experience."

Xavion suddenly sighed: "Second Shidi, it may not be so. Do you still remember the young disciple Baye from Dragon Head Peak two years ago?"

Wu Dayi was startled, then everyone was silent. They looked at each other in the eyes, nobody said a word. Shaw Danon had a complicated feeling pass by. It was gladness, admiration and also jealousy.

“What can trash do?” Someone suddenly said.

Everyone was surprised. That was Hidi. Her cheeks began to turn pink, her eyes opened wide, angrily said: “If he doesn’t come to the tournament, it will be fine. However, if he does, the best will be meeting me on the stage, at that time we will see who will be the victor.”

Bamboo Peak’s disciples looked at each other. Amandla was smart, reacted to it quickly. He smiled: “Xiao Shimei is right. If it really happens, heh heh, shixions, let’s have a bet on who is going to win.”

“Get lost!” Fifth Ludaxin kicked him away.

Xavion smiled, just when he was about to say something, someone lightly coughed from behind him. A lady softly said: “Song Shixiong, long time no see.”

Xavion seemed to receive a heavy blow.

Note from mooy: From this chapter, it begin to forshadow the effect of sinister orb had on Shaw Danon, and the relationship between Hidi and Shaw Dannon begin to get further apart. The unstable and complicate emotion sinister orb had on Shaw Danon is going to affect him greatly in future. When Hidi tell Shaw Danon to work harder and fly into the sky by himself, it has shown Hidi begin to has no interest in hanging out with Shaw Danon.

Chapter 18 Come Across

Xavion was startled. The call was like the celestial melody within his ears. When he woke up, he turned around like lightning and saw five to six female disciples were standing there. From their clothing, it appeared that they were from Bamboo Height, the house that only accept females.

A beautiful lady was in the front facing them. A smile was on her face. Shaw Danon wanted to ask which house the Shijies were from, but when he turned around and saw Wu Dayi, Zheng Dali and He Dazhi, each had an evil smile on their faces. Then he turned to Xavion and saw his face had a silly smile and stunned look. It appeared that he could not find the right word to say. Shaw Danon thought for a moment, and knew who that lady was.

He Dazhi and others were standing there waiting for a show; however, Xavion was just standing there with a dumb look on his face. Not only the Bamboo Peak disciples couldn't take it, even the Bamboo Height disciples were giggling. The lady blushed slightly, said softly: "Song Shixiong."

Xavion still hadn't reacted. He Dazhi was impatient, said: "Ha ha, Baako Shiji. We haven't seen each other for many years. How are you?"

Baako turned her eyes at him for a moment, smiled: "You are He Dazhi, He

Shixiong?”

He Dazhi nodded: “It’s me. Wen Shijie has a good memory. We only met once sixty years ago and still you remember me.”

Baako smiled: “He Shixiong was fighting against a powerful opponent in the last duel and showed us your surprising skill. Of course I will remember.”

He Dazhi blushed. At the previous Seven Peaks Tournament, he had faced a powerful opponent from Peak of Widows during the first round. Even though he tried his best, he still lost. But he just smiled: “Let’s not mention about my past history. My cultivation level will never be able to match Wen Shijie and our Da Shixiong. By the way, after the tournament, our Da Shixiong was often thinking about you.”

Baako’s face flushed slightly, but did not reply. She peeped at Xavion. The Shimeis behind her were already laughing. Xavion used to be a brave fellow, now, he looked like a shy young man. He quickly answered: “No, no, when did I often...”

“What?” A young lady behind Baako cut in before Xavion finished: “Does that mean you did not miss our Baako Shijie?”

Xavion peeped at Baako. Baako was also looking at him. Her eyes did not blink. He blurted out: “No, no. I did miss her...”

“Ha!”

Every one of Bamboo Peak and Bamboo Height disciples laughed. Especially

the girls behind Baako who laughed the loudest, causing disciples from other houses to look toward them.

He Dazhi waited for the laughter to be gone, then he told the Bamboo Height's ladies: "Shijies, actually our Da Shixiong didn't mean that he does not miss Baako Shijie, it's not just thinking about her often..."

"Then what is it?" Someone from Bamboo Height asked.

He Dazhi looked at her and smiled: "He was just thinking about her every quarter of an hour, saying her name every quarter of an hour. So, that's why he said he did not think about her often." (Often also means every hour in Chinese)

Everyone laughed. Xavion glared at He Dazhi. He looked at Baako and found that she wasn't mad. He was relieved and murmured: "Wen Shimei, they were just joking, don't, don't listen to them."

Baako smiled, then turned around and held her Shimei who laughed so hard that she almost fell. After that, she turned back and asked: "How does your heart feel?"

Xavion kept saying: "I, I, I..." but couldn't finish his thoughts. Looking at his face, the other girls laughed again. Baako shook her head and glared at him and ignored him. She walked to Hidi, held her hand, looked at her face, asked: "You are Ling Er Shimei?"

Hidi was surprised: "Yes. Wen Shijie, how do you know me?"

Baako smiled: "You often came to our Bamboo Height visiting Master with Su

Shishu. We already know you. Have not seen you for a number of years, you have grown more beautiful.”

Hidi held Baako’s hand, smiled: “How can I ever be able to compare to Baako Shijie’s beauty?” Then she whispered: “My Da Shixiong was enchanted by you.”

Baako peeped at Xavion. Xavion immediately had a silly smile on his face. She shook her head, quietly said: “Your Da Shixiong really is a wood brain.”

Hidi chuckled. Baako took Hidi to the Bamboo Height disciples. Laughter often came from the girls. They all ignored Xavion and the others now.

Xavion wanted to speak with Baako, but did not know what to say, so all he did is stand in the same spot. Even Shaw Danon shook his head.

Amandla suddenly said: “Huh? A lot of people have arrived.”

Shaw Danon was curious. He turned and was shocked to see about thirty people were coming toward them. Everyone was in white clothes. Everyone looked proud and handsome. The first person was Kevern.

Kevern!

Shaw Danon stared at them. He repeated his name again and again. Fourth Shixiong He Dazhi suddenly laughed: “Dragon Head Peak was expected to have such a significant number.”

Kevern also saw the Bamboo Peak disciples. He quickly walked toward them.

The others followed. He held his hands in front of himself, saluted: “Song Shixiong, we meet again.”

Xavion did not want to be impolite. He returned the salute: “Qi Shixiong, you have come as well. I wonder, are you going to join the tournament?”

Kevern smiled: “I do not want to come. But master said I still need practice for my cultivation, and he ordered me to join, so I took a spot.”

Xavion nodded: “That’s great. With the talent of Qi Shixiong, victory must be yours.”

Kevern shook his head, modestly said: “Song Shixiong has flattered me.”

When those two were talking, Shaw Danon’s eyes searched through the disciples behind Kevern. After a moment, Baye’s eyes, which were also searching for him, met with Shaw Danon’s. They came out from the crowd and held each-other’s hand. There were thousands of words to say, but they couldn’t say anything all of a sudden.

A while later, Baye asked: “Xiao Fan, you joined this tournament?”

Shaw Danon nodded, smiled: “Yes, Master was being very kind to me. He let me come with. What about you?”

Baye said: “I joined this tournament too. Hmph, what’s so great about your shorty master? Two years ago I came to your place and your master treated you in such a way...”

Shaw Danon quickly said: “No, he is not like that normally. That day he was just in a bad mood.”

Baye realized that it's a rare chance to meet with his best friend and did not want to ruin it with this silly topic. He quickly switched the topic, smiled: “You brat, I haven't seen you for two years, you have grown so tall.”

Shaw Danon punched him, grinned: “What, only you are allowed to grow and I'm not?”

Baye laughed. They could talk about anything they wanted since there were no elders nearby and the other people did not bother them. Shaw Danon unintentionally turned around and saw Kevern was greeting the ladies. A strange pain struck at Shaw Danon's heart, caused his face to change.

Baye was surprised: “What is it, Xiao Fan?”

Shaw Danon shook his head, forced himself to smile: “Nothing.” His eyes were still fixed on Kevern.

Kevern was in front of Hidi and Baako ahead. He greeted Hidi first: “Tian Shimei, still remember me?”

Hidi was chatting with Baako and the other Bamboo Height's female disciples. All of a sudden, she saw Kevern appeared in front of her. She blushed, her voice turned very low: “Yes, hello Qi Shixiong.”

Hidi's pink face and watery eyes; this beautiful face reflected in Shaw Danon's eyes, felt like a knife had sliced through his heart.

"Xiao Fan, what's wrong? Why does your face look so pale?" Baye was puzzled. He was concerned: "Are you ill?"

"Not, nothing. I am fine." Shaw Danon said quietly.

Baako's mind was shaped. She looked at the reaction of Hidi and understood what happened. She asked Kevern directly: "Qi Shixiong, why do you only recognize Tian Shimei. So we, the Bamboo Height's Shimei are not worthy enough for you to remember?"

After that all the girls behind her began to ask. Kevern immediately responded: "What do you mean Wen Shijie, how could I dare to be impolite to Bamboo Height's Shijie?"

Baako chuckled: "Qi Shixiong joined Seven Peaks Tournament again, surely you are determined to win?"

Kevern's eyes brightened, said: "At the previous tournament, Wen Shijie had passed three rounds, but unfortunately lost to Enu, Xiao Shixiong. After sixty years of practice, plus Master Shui Yue's careful teaching. With the title of Bamboo Height's best student, you also seem to want to shoot for the champion spot of the tournament."

Baako smiled: "No way, no way, how could I dare to compete against Qi Shixiong. As for the title of Bamboo Height's best student, I am not really fit for it."

Kevern frowned: “Wen Shijie, you are too modest...”

Baako smiled: “Nope. Master Shui Yue’s knowledge is incomparable. My potential is too dull, can’t get a secret teaching from her senior. My house has another talented Shimei, Qi Shixiong, you need to be careful.”

Kevern was excited, but his face was still smiling: “That’s even better. With the ability to defeat Wen Shijie, that person must be a brilliant prodigy. I will be looking forward to meeting her.”

Baako chuckled and nodded. Then she pulled Hidi to the side.

At that time, a whistle came from the sky. The sound was louder than thunder. A few hundred Jadeon disciples looked above them. A red light arrived, now they could see a Daoist from Peak of Widows was standing on top of a red sword. He announced: “All Shixions, the Heads of the Houses and Faction have delivered orders; all Shixions who are participating in Seven Peaks Tournament, please come to Crystal Hall.”

A disturbance within the few hundred Jadeon disciples lasted a while. Then, some people came out and walked to the other side of the square.

Shaw Danon thought the highly cultivated disciples would fly there directly. But, it seems no one had the intention to do it; everyone just walked. He walked with Baye. Looking around he saw Hidi was walking with Baako and the other Bamboo Height disciples. Xavion and other Bamboo Peak disciples

followed behind them.

As for the Dragon Head Peak, about seven or eight people came out from the crowd, but they walked in the other direction. They greeted the other disciples from other houses. Kevern especially, he was very familiar with the disciple's names. Everyone smiled at him.

“Qi Shixiong is very good at making friends.” Noticing Shaw Dannon kept looking at Kevern, Baye said: “He is highly cultivated, deeply trusted by Master Vasp Caelo. Everyone respects him.”

Shaw Danon nodded slowly, expressionless.

At the end of the square, it was one of the Jadeon six scenes “Rainbow Bridge.” Five years ago, Shaw Danon and Baye had walked past here after they were saved. Now they revisited this place again, their minds were mixing with different types of feeling.

Stepping on such superb craftsmanship, seeing the clear water running down at the sides of the bridge and still reflecting the seven colours of the rainbow, the ignorant children from five years ago had now become Jadeon's disciple. They walked at the rear of the crowd. Baye suddenly sighed: “Five years!”

Shaw Danon remained silent and just kept walking. The sight before him was the same as that day. As they got higher up on Rainbow Bridge, the clouds sank below them. The clear blue sky lay above their heads.

“Why don't you fly up there?” Shaw Danon asked suddenly.

Baye was a little surprised: “You don’t know that disciples are forbidden to fly near Crystal Hall. Kevern told me it is to respect the Head, so we need to walk in a holy place like Crystal Hall; also, when Master Jadeon founded Jadeon Clan, for protection purposes, he set up an extremely powerful array at Peak of Widows called ‘Regenesis Sword Array.’ Any who dare to fly above Peak of Widows will get slain by ‘Regenesis Sword Array.’”

Shaw Danon was surprised: “So that’s why even the skilled disciples don’t fly in here. Is that ‘Regenesis Sword Array’ really that powerful?”

Baye looked at the mountain peak before him, said: “I haven’t seen it either; however, it must be powerful. From what I heard, ‘Regenesis Sword Array’ was passed down by Master Jadeon and a thousand years ago Master Jade Leaf improved the power of it. With that, no one ever dared to come to Mount Jadeon and harass us.”

Shaw Danon also looked at the magnificent mountain peak, said: “Amazing!”

As they talked, they walked across Rainbow Bridge with other people. Shaw Danon looked at those people. There were about sixty people. Majority of them were male, about thirteen or so were female. Most of the females were wearing Bamboo Height dresses. But regardless of male or female, they were all filled with spirit. Male were dignified and handsome; female were beautiful and polite. No matter who see them, they would say Jadeon had worthy successors and bright future.

After Rainbow Bridge, it was the Jadeon’s spiritual beast protector “Water Kirin’s” pond. Unlike five years ago, the ancient beast “Master Spirit” didn’t hide in the pond this time, but already lay next to the pond. The lazy appearance of it, however, had no difference compared to five years ago.

When the Jadeon disciples got off of Rainbow Bridge, they bowed to the enormous beast, then went to the steps of Crystal Hall. Shaw Danon and Baye followed behind them. Baye whispered to Shaw Danon: “Do you still remember our first time here?”

Shaw Danon nodded: “Remember. Got myself soaked. But that doesn’t really matter. Seeing that large monster scared me to death.”

Baye smiled: “Yup, when did we ever see such a thing while we were still in Grasstemple Village. I thought the world’s largest animal was the bear from Mount Jadeon.”

Shaw Danon burst into laughter. Everyone turned and looked at Shaw Danon. Shaw Danon immediately settled down. Baye was also surprised. He coughed twice. His face was slightly red.

The other people looked at each other, then continued walking. Shaw Danon was relieved. He turned to Baye. They looked at each other in the eyes and smiled.

Shaw Danon and Baye walked down from Rainbow Bridge, arrived at the green pond. They bowed to the Water Kirin. The Water Kirin, however, was sleeping since the beginning; it didn’t react to anyone. The snoring was loud as thunder. Surely it didn’t know the two young Jadeons had bowed to it.

Shaw Danon and Baye didn’t expect Water Kirin to react anyway. They walked toward the steps. Shaw Danon said: “Jing Yu, last time you came to Bamboo Peak in such a hurry. I didn’t have time to congratulate you on your level of cultivation.”

Baye smiled: "It's thanks to Master Vasp Caelo and all Shixiongs' teaching." Then he paused, voice grew deeper: "Actually the first few year when I practiced, I always thought of the bloody bodies in Grasstemple Village, so I pushed myself to work harder, hoping one day I can attain vengeance for our parents and friends."

Shaw Danon's heart grew sour. He held out his hand and patted his shoulder. Baye settled his emotions, then grinned: "Okay, let's not talk about the past. What about your cultivation?"

Shaw Danon shook his head: "You know I was not as smart as you when we were still young. These years in Bamboo Peak, Master and Shixiongs had treated me well. But I'm too stupid, very slow in progress. I really let them down."

Baye snorted: "You are not stupid. I think it's most likely because your shorty master purposely made things difficult for you, not teaching you the true Jadeon incantations."

Shaw Danon didn't know the conflict two years ago still caused Baye to hate Tian Bolis. He smiled: "Can't be. My master is not that kind of person. Anyway, let's not talk about me. Is your esper still 'Dragon Slayer?'"

Baye nodded, smiled: "That divine sword is Dragon Head Peak's most valuable treasure. Master handed me this sword. Besides its might strength, it is always very spiritual. Helped me a lot in cultivation."

Shaw Danon was envious, even his face had shown it: "That's great."

Baye asked him back: “What about you, Xiao Fan, you have any esper?”

Shaw Danon was startled. He put his hand on his chest and touched the black “fire stick.” A chill slightly rose in his palm.

“No.” He quietly said: “My cultivation is not high enough to use an esper yet.”

Baye didn’t have any reactio to it, clearly he had already expected this answer. He comforted Shaw Danon: “It doesn’t matter, Xiao Fan. As long as you work hard, you will be successful at last. We are still young yet, just pretend this is a chance to learn.”

Shaw Danon’s lips moved. Looked at his old friend’s kind face, listened to his friendly words, but in Shaw Danon’s heart, he didn’t feel any pleasure.

To learn?

Everyone thought he came here to learn. A sudden anger rose in his heart, like a fire wad burning, but extinguished a moment later. He lowered his head, didn’t say anything, not even an idea to blame his friend, for he found he himself also agreed with what his friend just said.

Like an answer in his heart, the “fire stick” in his clothes reacted. A coldness suddenly rose from his palm to his shoulder.

Shaw Danon was surprised. Then he found that his feeling did no damage to his body. The coolness was quite comfortable. He looked at Baye and found he

didn't notice the change.

Just when Shaw Danon felt relieved, suddenly, a deafening roar burst behind them. Shaw Danon, and even the cultivated Baye, also felt the shock in their ears. Their ears kept ringing. The Jadeon disciples also turned around and checked what was going on.

Everyone was bewildered to find such a weird roar in the holy place of Jadeon. They turned, and after a look, everyone was frightened by what they saw.

Chapter 19 Draw Part

Near the green pond, the sleeping Water Kirin was suddenly awoken. Aggressively it turned its head. Its eyes burned with immeasurable hatred. The hair on its back stood on end. Opening its huge jaw and bearing the two long fangs, it was preparing to attack. Its target was the Jadeon disciples.

Water Kirin was an ancient spiritual beast. The blue sky had darkened. As it took its first step, the quiet mountain wind turned into fierce howling gusts, passing through Peak of Widows. The water in the pond also changed. Previously the water had been as flat as a mirror; now the water was whirling at high speed forming a deep vortex. From the vortex, a pillar of water rose into the sky. The pillar was about three yards thick, circling in mid air. Then, seeming as though it had received some sort of command, the water pillar thundered down in front of Water Kirin.

At that time, every Jadeon, including the highly cultivated Kevern, could not keep calm. Some had even grown pale and begun shaking.

The reason why Water Kirin was able to be a great helper to Master Jade Leaf and had become the protector of Jadeon had shown. Within the five elements: metal, wood, water, fire and earth; Water Kirin was the legend of all spiritual water beasts. Without any assistance it could control the water and form a water pillar of such size. It didn't even appear to be hard work. The spirit strength was far stronger than that of a normal cultivator. Within Jadeon, only a few could do that with the help of an esper.

Jadeon disciples bore witness to the rage of Water Kirin that had not shown for thousands of years. Everyone was stunned. Water Kirin kept on roaring. Its eyes filled with anger as though it felt something it really hated and was prepared to fight to the death. The water pillar became faster and faster. Then, the water pillar struck at the Jadeon disciples.

Just at that critical moment, a call came from the sky: “Master Spirit, please calm down!”

A dark green figure arrived and stood between the disciples and Water Kirin. It was the Head of Jadeon, Master Doyal Shen. He had not changed in the past five years. He frowned, also unclear about what happened to Water Kirin. The situation, however, is dire; the students behind him were the finest disciples. Within the water pillar, there were shadows of many kinds of beast that had once been slain by Water Kirin. The souls were absorbed by Water Kirin into its body and did not allow the souls to reincarnate. Now, Water Kirin put these souls into the water pillar to increase its strength. Even with the divine strength of Master Doyal Shen this water pillar may be difficult to deal with.

Seeing the water pillar in front of him, Doyal Shen had nowhere to go. He took a deep breath, said: “God of compassion!” He held up both hands. Quickly, but softly, he formed sword fingers and drew a Tai Chi in front of his chest. The Tai Chi circle glowed with white light. Then Doyal Shen turned around and allowed the Tai Chi to attach to the back of his dark green robe. Then the robe fell off into mid air and stretched ten times wider, protecting the disciples.

The water pillar hit against the enlarged, dark green robe. The beasts inside the water pillar roared furiously. Under the heavy blow, the green robe was being pushed back a few yards immediately.

On the stairs, the young Jadeon disciples felt strong wind blowing against them. Except for the few more highly cultivated disciples, none could stand firmly. They couldn't imagine what might happen to them if Master Doyal Shen did not help them block that strike.

Shaw Danon also fell. Baye wanted to help him, but he himself could not stand either; he fell to the other side.

Shaw Danon let go of the black fire stick and held out his hand seeking for support. He didn't notice the chill had left the moment he let go of the fire stick.

In mid-air, Master Doyal Shen's face was solemn, prepared. Behind him, many people arrived. They were Master Vasp Caelo, Tian Bolis, Surin as well as other elders and heads.

All of Jadeon's masters were here. Facing this situation, anyone would be fearful. The Water Kirin, however, had no sign of fear under the eyes of Jadeon's elders; the anger in his eyes had extinguished and been replaced by a look of confusion. The water pillar also shrank and fell on the floor creating a large pool of water on the ground.

Water Kirin grew quiet, but its enormous body still appeared fearsome. It ignored all the elders, who were standing in the sky. Its eyes searched through the Jadeon disciples. Its nose sniffed and could not find any smell. It repeated this weird movement for a few times, then gave up. Water Kirin shook its head, turned back and lay back down. Its eyes closed. After a moment, the sound of snores rang out.

Everyone was speechless.

Master Vasp Caelo was the first to put himself back together; quietly he went and joined Master Doyal Shen, whispered: “Head Shixiong, it is not good for the disciples to remain here for long.”

Doyal Shen realized, then nodded: “You bring our disciples up there first. I will check Master Spirit.” Then, he dashed to Water Kirin.

Vasp Caelo turned around and announced: “That was just a joke from Master Spirit. No need to worry everyone. Now, whoever is participating in Seven Peaks Tournament, go to Crystal Hall in order.”

The disciples responded; they fell to rank. Their hearts knew that had definitely not been a joke.

※ ※ ※

Following the group, Shaw Danon and Baye entered the magnificent Crystal Hall. Standing in the hall, the memories from five years ago suddenly refreshed in Shaw Danon’s mind.

“Jing Yu.” Shaw Dannon said suddenly.

“What?” Baye looked at Shaw Danon.

Shaw Danon asked: “I suddenly remembered one thing. For these years, did you see Uncle Bozo?”

Baye’s face darkened, shook his head: “No. Today is also my first time

returning to Peak of Widows. I asked Kevern Shixions about Uncle Bozo three years ago. I heard he was still crazy, running around Peak of Widows all day. With the care of the Shixions in Peak of Widows, however, he should be fine.”

Shaw Danon was silent for a moment, said: “When the contest is over, I want to see him. You want to come, too?”

Baye nodded: “Yes, I also want to see him.”

All of a sudden, a green figure passed through the hall. Master Doyal Shen had returned. All Jadeon elder’s eyes landed on him. Master Vasp Caelo walked forth and asked: “Head Shixiong, Master Spirit...”

Doyal Shen held up his hand and gave him a look. Master Vasp Caelo immediately stopped. Then Master Doyal Shen turned around as though nothing happened, kindly said to the Jadeon disciples: “Everyone is here. Good, good.”

Everyone bowed, said: “Greeting, Head of Faction.”

Master Doyal Shen smiled and returned to his seat. He looked toward Master Vasp Caelo. Master Vasp Caelo stepped forward, announced: “Everyone, you are all Jadeon’s best disciples. From the establishment of Jadeon clan until now, it has already been two thousand years. Jadeon is the orthodox Daoists and the leader of the side of Good. However, there is a saying: Achievement comes from hard work, the fallen is a result of laziness. Also: Go against the water current, flow backward if not advancing forward. Our faction’s ancestors wanted to remain for the next generation and passed down the Seven Peaks Tournament events. This is already our twentieth session.”

“Ah.” the Jadeon disciples were amazed. Twentieth, once ever sixty years; that meant it had already lasted one thousand two hundred years in length.

Master Vasp Caelo was satisfied to see the reaction of the disciples, then said: “Today, under the leadership of Head Shixiong, Doyal shen, Jadeon became prosperous. Numerous of the young, talented disciples are in Jadeon, so we specially increased the number to sixty-four people to prevent any regret of undiscovered talent.”

Shaw Danon could not help but look at Tian Bolis. Tian Bolis sat next to Master Doyal Shen. His face was emotionless, but his eyes showed impatience. This change was said to be discussed between the heads of the houses, but in reality, it was just an agreement between Doyal Shen and Vasp Caelo.

Master Vasp Caelo continued: “Because of the increased number, there are a few changes in sortation. Everyone look this way.” He pointed to the right side of the hall. There was a large, red, wooden box. On top of the box, there was a hole large enough for an arm to enter.

“In this red box, there are a total of sixty-three wax beads. Each has a piece of paper inside with a number written on it, one through sixty-three.” The conversation within the disciples roused to out of control. Master Vasp Caelo ignored them, continued: “After the sortation is completed, the contest will carry out based on the numbers; number one versus number sixty-four, number two versus number sixty-three and so on. In the second round, the victor between number one and sixty-four will face the victor between number two and sixty-three and continue onward; this will take place until the final. Understand?”

Jadeon disciples were silent for a moment, then somebody shouted out: “Excuse me Vasp Caelo Shishu, there are sixty-four people but why are there only sixty-three wax beads?”

Master Vasp Caelo appeared to be prepared for this question. He coughed: “The rule for this session is each house sends nine representatives. Peak of Widows sends one extra. But, ahem, because only one house can send only eight representatives, meaning one person is missing, results in sixty-three people.”

Everyone’s eyes landed on Head of Bamboo Peak, Tian Bolis. Though Tian Bolis’ face was mad, he sat still in his seat. The Jadeon’s disciples discussed with each other.

When the talking quieted down, Master Vasp Caelo solemnly said: “But this is not difficult to work around. Within these sixty-three wax beads, whoever draws number one will be extremely lucky, because there is no number sixty-four as an opponent, so the first round there is no need to fight.”

Jadeon disciples began another uproar. Jadeon was a famous clan, the rules were very strict. This method of selection was ridiculous, but no one opposed it.

Master Doyal Shen stood up. Everyone immediately quieted down. Master Doyal Shen nodded: “Then, let’s begin.”

Everyone’s eyes landed on the large, red, wooden box. First, ten disciples from Peak of Widows went to the box, each put their hands into the box and took out a wax bead one-by-one. Dragon Head Peak’s disciples followed.

Baye said something to Shaw Danon then followed the others to the red box. Shaw Danon watched Baye's back for a moment, then moved his sight to the seven masters and all the elders. Among these people, Master Doyal Shen, Master Vasp Caelo, Master Tian Yun, Master Shang Zheng Liang and Master Ceng Shu Chang who Shaw Danon met five years ago. Only the Taoist nun seated at the farthest right was unfamiliar to him. She was most likely the well-known Bamboo Height's master, Master Shui Yu.

Shaw Danon heard his Shixionsg talk about this master often. He heard that Bamboo Height was the only house that exclusively adopted female disciples. Master Shui Yu's cultivation skill was very deep and well-known within Jadeon. The Bamboo Height disciples often performed well in Seven Peaks Tournament.

Shaw Danon looked at Master Shui Yu. Her age seemed to be around thirty like Surin. Her robe was moon white. Behind her, there were no elders, but a young female disciple. Her clothes were as white as snow, her face was very beautiful. A long sword was on her back. It was sky blue from the handle to the edge. Waves could be faintly seen flowing around the sword.

The young lady felt his eyes. She turned suddenly and stared at him. Shaw Danon felt as though he had been shocked by lightning. He was surprised and his face turned slightly red. The girl had no expression on her face, but her eyes were filled with scorn. She quickly lowered her head. Just at this embarrassing moment, someone pulled on his hand; it was Hidi: "Xiao Fan, what are you doing, it is our turn to draw the wax bead."

Shaw Danon hurried: "Yes, yes." Then he didn't look at Master Shui Yu any longer and followed Hidi to the red, wooden box. Only Bamboo Peak and Bamboo Height had not gone yet. Xavion and other Bamboo Peak disciples each picked up one wax bead from the box, then went back to the center of the hall.

Everyone was busy checking their number from the bead. Baako and the other seven disciples from Bamboo Height came out. The girl in white whispered something to Master Shui Yu, then Master Shui Yu nodded: "Go."

The girl in white responded and walked with the Bamboo Height disciples and smiled to Baako. They took out the remaining nine wax beads from the box.

The disciples were checking their numbers. The masters of the houses also became nervous, hoping their disciple had drawn a lucky one. The paper with the number one written on it.

Seemingly in response to the masters' feelings, words issued out from the Jadeon disciples:

"Aw, I get twenty-six."

"Mine is thirty-three, eh, what number is yours?"

"Oh, mine is forty-seven, I wonder what number is my opponent, let me see....."

.....

After long while, no one said they got they precious number one paper.

Vasp Caelo frowned, coughed then asked: "Who got the number one paper?"

His voice covered all the disciples' sounds. The hall was silent. Then, after a long time, within the crowd a small sound, with surprise and caution, seeming like he was not believing his luck, answered: "Reply, reply to Vasp Caelo Shibo. It is here."

Everybody looked at him. Shaw Danon was standing there, with a piece of paper in his hand, looking at Tian Bolis, speaking timidly.

Chapter 20 Trace of Evil

Instantly, everyone's eyes landed on this unremarkable Bamboo Peak disciple. Tian Bolis and Surin looked at each other. Surin smiled, nodded.

The Bamboo Peak disciples surrounded him. Ludaxin hit heavily on Shaw Danon's shoulder, said: "You stinking brat, never knew you had such luck."

Shaw Danon scratched his head and stuck out his tongue. Amandla regretfully slapped his head: "I should have put a bet on who may get the number one wax bead. Heh, heh, must be unexpected!"

"Get out." Hidi pushed him away, then told Shaw Danon: "Xiao Fan, you are going to be useless in round two anyway, give this to me!"

Shaw Danon never expected his Shijie would say that. He was startled, then said: "Oh." He proceeded to hand the paper to her.

Xavion said quietly: "Xiao Shimei, don't mess around."

Hidi chuckled. She held out her finger and flicked against Shaw Danon's

forehead, said: “Silly, I was just joking.”

Shaw Danon blinked, and laughed.

Vasp Caelo frowned, announced: “Good, the sortation has completed. In a moment, come see me and report what number you received. Later they will be posted on a list on a red board, so you can check who your opponent is. Now, Head Shixiong has prepared a speech.”

The disciples immediately grew quiet. Master Doyal Shen left his seat and walked slowly to the front. His eyes swept across the disciples, then said: “Everyone, all of you are Jadeon’s hope for our next generation. Everyone here possess great potential. In the future, the position of master, elder, or even the head may be succeeded by one of you.”

Many Jadeon disciples were excited.

Master Doyal Shen showed a gentle smile: “Of course, to get this far and attain the seat of elder and master, you all need to work hard.”

Everyone said at same time: “Yes.”

Master Doyal Shen held his long, then nodded: “We Jadeon clan, since Master Jadeon to now have always been a well known faction of Good. Today, we are the leaders of the Good cultivators in this world. The Good rise up while the Evil hid themselves. People live peacefully. The remaining Evil, however, are treacherous and vicious. Their hearts never die. In the recent years, there are signs of Evil preparing to rise up again. In the times like this, they need the Good to get rid of them. So everyone must focus on cultivation, strengthen your

mind. If we are strong, the Evil can find no opening for them!”

All the disciples shouted: “Understand Headmaster’s teaching!”

Master Doyal Shen smiled: “Good, good. Another thing I want to announce: To encourage Jadeon disciples, I have discussed with masters and elders and it has been decided from now on, the winner of Seven Peaks Tournament will receive a small prize.”

“Ah!!”

Master Doyal Shen looked at those young disciples, said: “The reward for this session is: Union Mirror.”

“What is that?” Shaw Danon had never heard of it before. He turned to Hidi and Amandla, but they were also confused. Other young disciples appeared to be lost, too. But, for the older disciples, such as Kevern, Xavion and Baako, their faces shone with the rare excitement and yearning.

Hidi noticed Da Shixiong knew something. She got closer and asked: “Da Shixiong, what is Union Mirror?”

Xavion whispered: “Union Mirror was the esper of Master Wu Fang Zi, the tenth head master of Jadeon. I had never seen it before, only heard master told me it is one of our faction’s treasures. Extremely powerful. The one unique feature of it: if the spirit power of the caster is strong enough, Union Mirror can reflect all attacks. The caster will be undefeatable.”

Everyone’s mouth opened wide, Amandla stammered said: “That, that means

invincible?”

Xavion shrugged: “I am not sure how it looks exactly anyway. But master shouldn’t be wrong about it this time,” he peaked at Master Doyal Shen, then whispered: “it seems the masters had to pay a great price into holding this tournament.”

Everyone’s faces were strange. Most people swallowed. With the treasure in front of them, even as cultivators, their stable minds were shaken.

Master Doyal Shen stopped for a moment, smiled as he watched the disciples were discussing about the tournament. After a while he said: “Good, so basically that is it. All of you return and take a rest, for tomorrow morning the contest will begin.”

Together the Jadeon disciples saluted, said: “Yes, Headmaster.”

Master Doyal Shen nodded: “Go.”

The disciples left the hall, leaving the elders and the heads remaining. Master Doyal Shen turned and smiled to the elders: “Shixionsgs, you shall rest, too. Beginning from tomorrow, there will be many competitions that need all of you to take care of.”

Some elders had wrinkles all over their faces, while others appeared very young. They said nothing and left the hall. Finally, only the heads of the seven houses were in Crystal Hall.

Master Doyal Shen slowly took back his kind smile. His eyes swept through

the six other people, said: “Okay, only seven of us are here now.”

On the right, Head of “Sun Rise Peak” Shang Zheng Liang frowned, asked: “Head Shixiong, what do you want to tell us?”

Master Doyal Shen nodded. Slowly said: “I checked Master Spirit.”

Everyone was shocked.

※ ※ ※

After the incident at the stairs, the disciples were still frightened as they were passing the pond. This time Water Kirin was peacefully sleeping.

Passing the Rainbow Bridge back to Cloud Sea’s square. Baye said a few things to Shaw Danon then left with disciples from Dragon Head Peak. Shaw Danon went back to Bamboo Peak’s people, listened to Xavion talk about things that need to be regarded and about lodging. As Shaw Danon was listening to him, he suddenly recalled, cried: “Damn!”

Everyone was surprised. Hidi asked: “Xiao Fan, what it is?”

Shaw Danon looked around, said urgently: “I was talking to Baye and forgot about Ashh. Now, I have no idea where he went.”

Everyone realized they hadn’t seen the figure of the grey monkey. They immediately searched the square. The disciples from other houses were already gone, but there was no sign of Ashh.

Shaw Danon was anxious. Since two years ago he brought Ashh from the ancient valley, for two years, he and the monkey (plus Big Yella later on) had lived together. Peak of Widows was inconceivably large. How could he ever be able to find him again if Ashh went into the forest and looked for wild fruits.

Shaw Danon suddenly heard Hidi “Huh?” He turned and saw Hidi grinned and pointed: “Look.”

Everyone could not help but laugh. Ashh was sitting on Big Yella’s back. It screamed and waved at Shaw Danon. Big Yella’s jaw was closed tightly. Its mouth was holding a bone.

Big Yella carried Ashh and arrived in front of them Ashh jumped on Shaw Dannon’s shoulder. Shaw Danon patted its head and made a mad face: “Where did you go?”

Ashh wasn’t scared. It grinned, pointed to Big Yella, then gestured with its hands. Shaw Danon watched it for a moment, then suddenly asked: “Where did you find this bone?”

Ashh gestured again and pointed to one end of the square. Shaw Danon looked at Xavion. Xavion quickly looked around and saw no one nearby. He whispered, embarrassed: “That place is Peak of Widow’s dinning hall.”

Everyone was startled, laughed, then shook their heads. Xavion lead them to one end of the square, said: “We shall go to the dormitory now. Xiao Shimei,

you are a girl, we have arranged for you to join the Bamboo Height's Shimeis. No problem, right?"

Hidi shook her head, smiled: "I wanted to talk more with Baako Shijie anyway. Plus, I can help Da Shixiong to say some nice words to her."

They laughed. Xavion blushed and pretended not to hear anything and walked away. Shaw Danon glared at his monkey: "Stupid monkey, next time if you go and be a thief, watch how I am going to punish you."

Ashh "creek creek" screamed and grinned. It was either that he didn't understand or didn't care about Shaw Danon.

Shaw Danon scolded again. Then he turned back and shouted: "Hurry, you stupid dog, all you know how to do is eat."

Big Yella raised its eyes and saw everyone was walking far away. It stood and caught up with them lazily with the bone in its mouth.

※ ※ ※

In Crystal Hall, the seven houses' heads were there. All their attention was on Master Doyal Shen.

"Sun Set Peak's" head master Tian Yun was the first to get up; said: "Head Shixiong, did you find out what happened to Master Spirit?"

Master Doyal Shen sighed, slowly said: "I had carefully checked. Master Spirit

had nothing unusual.”

“What?” Every master was surprised.

Master Doyal Shen looked at his Shixiongdi, said: “Indeed. I had repeatedly checked many times. Everything was normal for Master Spirit. I really can’t understand why it suddenly became so aggressive, then left so quickly.”

Tian Bolis pondered for a moment, said: “I think the target of Master Spirit was the disciples. Can it be one of the disciples had provoked it?”

Head of “Bamboo Height” Master Shui Yu said: “Impossible. If a disciple really made it mad, then why would Master Spirit give up after the first strike?”

The tone of Shui Yu’s voice was extremely cold. The voice made people feel chilled. Tian Bolis stopped speaking.

The oldest looking Ceng Shu Chang, the head of “Peak of Wind,” said: “Head Shixiong has a conclusion already?”

Master Doyal Shen sighed: “Not to conceal it from you, I am also confused by it. Master Spirit is our mountain guardian. It cannot be underestimated. I wanted to use the secret ‘Psychic Art’ to investigate, but then...”

Master Doyal Shen unexpectedly stopped. Tian Bolis asked: “Head Shixiong, what was it?”

Master Doyal Shen was embarassd: “Psychic Art is a simple trick. It can help

us to communicate with Master Spirit. But when I tried to use it, Master Spirit was sleeping already, I could not do anything about it.”

They were stunned.

Master Doyal Shen coughed, said: “No need to worry about it at the moment. We can plan later when Master Spirit wakes up. There is one more issue laying in front of us. I want to discuss with all of you.”

Seeing Master Doyal Shen’s serious look, seemed it was not a minor issue, they removed their smile from their faces and sat silently.

Master Doyal Shen also returned to his seat. Pondered for a moment, then said: “You know the ‘Kongsang Mountain’ (Note 1) three thousand miles east from here?”

They were startled. Master Vasp Caelo said: “Head Shixiong, are you referring to the Kongsang Mountain that contains ‘Cave of Fangs’?”

Master Doyal Shen Nodded: “Exactly.”

Ceng Shu Chang frowned: “I heard ‘Cave of Fangs’ is a natural cave, immeasurably deep. The climate there is ice-cold and wet. Only countless numbers of bats live there. It is said to be home to more than millions of them inside the cave. This kind of barren place, why does Shixiong mention it?”

Master Doyal Shen said slowly: “All of you may not know, even though no life goes near that place now, eight hundred years ago it was a major hideout of the Evil. The climate there is just right for the Evil to practice their curses. Later, the

Daoist from the side of Good went there and wiped them out. The Evil fled away and left this place deserted.”

Master Shui Yu spoke coldly: “So, what are you trying to say, Head Shixiong?”

The manner of Shui Yu was impolite to Doyal Shen. Everyone knew, however, Master Shui Yu always spoke like this. Master Doyal Shen also didn’t care. He sighed and said: “Shui Yu Shimei, I had received a letter from Incense Valley half a year ago. It said that near the Cave of Fangs, there is signs of Evil remaining active. So, they want to ask my opinion. After some consideration, I sent my disciple Yi Cai to quickly investigate Kongsang Mountain.”

Sun Rise Peak’s Shang Zheng Liang smiled: “Isn’t that great? Enu Shizhi’s potential and cultivation had earned him the champion position of last session’s Seven Peaks Tournament. With him there, what can not be accomplished?”

Master Doyal Shen smiled back: “Shang Shixiong praised too highly of him. After Yi Cai had gone for a few months, he sent a letter back to me. The Evil people truly had been active around Cave of Fangs. But their purpose, it is more surprising.”

Everyone was surprised. Ceng Shu Chang asked: “What is it?”

Master Doyal Shen was still remaining calm. He said: “According to Yi Cai’s letter, he had captured an Evil follower. After interrogating him, Yi Cai found out Cave of Fangs was the head quarters of ‘Blood Forger’ faction, eight hundred years ago. During that time, Blood Forger was one of the five largest Evil factions. After they were defeated by our Good ancestors, they had fallen. The Cave of Fangs was also deserted. In recent years, Blood Forger has shown signs of rising. Although all important Blood Forgers were slain by the Good in

the Cave of Fangs' battle, there was a secret cave that has not yet been found. There are many unique treasures and evil incantation scrolls that had not been discovered."

Everyone understood. Master Cang Song laughed coldly: "Evil minded people, wishful thinking!"

Master Doyal Shen shook his head: "No matter if this rumor is true or not, according to what I know, after the battle eight hundred years ago, the side of Good didn't find any treasure storeroom located in Cave of Fangs. If there really is an undiscovered secret cave, I am afraid there will be an extremely evil object that we must be wary of."

Master Tian Yu asked: "Shixiong, what is the extremely evil object, is it really that important?"

Master Doyal Shen said quietly: "Sinister Orb!"

Master Vasp Caelo was surprised, said: "Didn't that disappear along with Elder Blackheart's death, already?"

Master Doyal Shen shook his head: "Though Elder Black Heart is dead, that doesn't mean Sinister Orb will have vanished from this world. The evil object like this cannot be controlled by normal people. The evil disciples may hide it since they can't use it. Elder Black Heart was from Blood Forger. Sinister Orb may very possibly be inside of the secret cave."

They were silent for a while, then Master Shui Yu coldly asked: "What is the will of Head Shixiong?"

Master Doyal Shen said: “After I received Yi Cai’s letter, I immediately informed Incense Valley and Skysong Temple. They replied and said they will send their best disciples to Kongsang Mountain to stop the Evil followers.”

Tian Bolis frowned: “Then you are saying”

Master Doyal Shen smiled: “This time is a rare chance for our disciples to earn some experience. There are many prodigies in Jadeon, but most never go out there and practice. Also, these years the world is so peaceful, there have not been battles with the Evil for a long time. From this chance in Seven Peaks Tournament, I decide to send our top four disciples to Kongsang Mountain. It can stop the Evil Follower’s plot and also allow our disciples to gain experience. And...” he exchanged his smile for a solemn look: “I heard both Skysong Temple and Incense Valley have some very talented disciples. If we do not do anything about it, we can’t hold our position as leader of Good any longer. Then, I will have no face to see my master and ancestors!”

They nodded. Master Vasp Caelo said: “Head Shixiong is very correct.”

Master Doyal Shen looked at the other masters, said: “So, that means everyone is fine with it?”

They nodded.

Master Doyal Shen said: “Good, then that is set. I had already prepared rooms for Shixions in Crystal Hall. Please, you may all go rest now.” Then he clapped his hands three times. Several children came in. “Lead the heads to their room.”

The children answered. The heads got up and saluted to Master Dayol Shen, then left.

Note 1: Kongsang is name after the mulberry forest near the town. Kongsang town is the birth place of Confucius.

Chapter 21 Dark Night

Seven Peaks Tournament was the most important event of Jadeon. Peak of Widows needed to find a place for several hundred additional disciples. If the Bamboo Peak disciples wanted to continue their relaxing day, it would be a silly dream. Except Hidi, the other seven disciples were squeezed inside one room.

In Peak of Widows, it was normally four disciples per room. Three people were sleeping on the floor, it should be enough space for them; however, it would be slightly crowded. Suddenly, someone complained: “Really, you guys kept saying how good the main house is. Now they asked seven of us to squeeze in one room, so stingy!”

“Sixth, stop complaining. If other Shixiong hear this, that will not be good.”

“Second Shixiong, you’re sleeping on a bed, of course it is comfortable. But I am sleeping on a freezing floor, why don’t we switch positions?”

“Zzzzzz....”

“What, you fall asleep all of a sudden, and snore?”

“Zzzzz....”

“Hmph hmph, ah, fourth Shixiong, you are always so handsome, humor, intelligent.”

“Zzzzz....”

“What is that, is it really popular to fall asleep instantly nowadays? Eh, Da Shixiong, you are always so kind, how could you let your Shidi-”

“Zzzzz.....”

“You—ah, third Shixiong”

“Roar roar”

They were surprised. Suddenly, the wall shook, someone shouted angrily from the next room: “Hey, does everyone in Bamboo Peak snore that loud?”

The room immediately fell silent. After a while, someone giggled. Then, the previous voice began to speak again: “Ah, fifth Shixiong, you...”

“What you, you, you? I am sleeping right next to you. You want to switch places? I don’t care. We are both sleeping on the floor, anyway!”

“Ahem, nothing. Alas, the floor is cold which is already bad enough, the worst part is that there is too little space. It’s impossible to be comfortable when

sleeping. Xiao Shidi is fine, his body is exactly right for the size.”

“Sixth Shixiong, why do you talk with your eyes closed? Don’t you see a dog and a monkey are fighting for my spot, now? I am the most crowded, yet you still say I am the most comfortable?”

“But I am still-”

“Shut up, sixth!” They shouted all at once.

After dark, many disciples went for a walk, amazed by the beautiful Peak of Widows. But, as it was getting late, many people went back to their room.

As darkness arrived at this sky reaching peak, in the clear sky, the moon shone on the mountain.

Just when Shaw Danon was sleeping deeply, he felt something move next to him. He opened his dreamy eyes and found Ashh and Big Yella were missing. He sat up and saw Big Yella’s figure run past the door. Ashh was sitting on his back.

Shaw Danon was curious. He wondered where the dog and monkey were going at such a late hour in the night. He quietly got up and randomly grabbed some clothes. As he went to the door, under the moon light, he saw Big Yella carrying Ashh towards Cloud Sea.

Shaw Danon remembered Xavion had told him that direction was to Peak of Widows’ kitchen. Big Yella lived for hundreds of years, already a cultivated dog,

but still so greedy. He turned and wanted to go back to sleep; but then, he thought it would be embarrassing if someone saw Bamboo Peak's Big Yella and Ashh went to steal food. So, he decided to chase them back.

Once he had made the decision, he saw Big Yella and Ashh had already become a blurry figure. He quickly chased after them.

He went swiftly and cautiously to avoid disturbing other people. When he got to Cloud Sea, Big Yella and Ashh were already gone. Under the shine of the cold moon, the clouds softly floating, like veins and smoke.

Just when he was heading toward the kitchen, suddenly, there was something that caused his heart to beat heavily.

At the opposite side of the kitchen, between the clouds, there was a slim figure walking to the Rainbow Bridge.

Shaw Danon stared at that figure. Even from far away, that figure had deeply engraved on his heart. He could easily recognize it was Hidi Shijie.

Night, so dark!

Why had she walked out here alone and where is she going?

Shaw Danon stood still. He was not sure what to do. Thousands of thoughts rushed into his brain. He could already guess what it is, but he just didn't want to admit it.

He turned toward the kitchen where Big Yella and Ashh had went. He walked as he kept telling himself: “Shaw Danon, don’t step into other people’s business!”

Those seven steps, the moon shone down on this lonely youngster; then, he stopped, raised his head and looked at the cold moon. His lips moved. After a moment, he turned back and ran to where the figure had disappeared.

Hidi’s figure already vanished within the Cloud Sea. But Shaw Danon ran toward Rainbow Bridge without looking in the other direction. Very soon, he was at Rainbow Bridge. The water rippled on both sides of the bridge and reflected the moon in the sky. All Shaw Danon cared about now is running.

Run, run, run!

As he was running across the Rainbow Bridge, he didn’t see anyone’s figure. When he reached the end of the bridge, he saw a beautiful figure was staring at the water of the pond. The moon had shone on the pond as bright as day.

A sudden indescribable fear rose in Shaw Danon’s mind. He only knew he could not be seen by his Shijie. He found a small grove at the right side of the pond near the bridge. He quietly hid there and watched Hidi from the shadows.

This was almost as it was eternity!

Under the moonlight, near the green pond, that young lady had a bit of sorrow, a bit of loneliness. Her eyelashes were dropped. She appeared to be waiting. The wind passed by next to her, blocked the breath, stopped the sound, waved her lapel and hair.

In the depths of Shaw Danon's heart, there was a gentle feeling rising. It seemed like the lady there was the person whom he should protect with his life. He would do anything for her without hesitation and regret.

That moment, he wished it could be eternity.

"Ling'Er Shimei!" Suddenly, a call came from Rainbow Bridge. Hidi turned, her eyes were filled with happiness. Her lips smiled.

"Qi Shixiong, you are here."

Shaw Danon's heart felt like it had broken, but he didn't feel any pain. The entirety of his heart was empty but repeated the words "Qi Shixiong, Qi Shixiong, Qi Shixiong."

He turned his head toward the Rainbow Bridge. A person came down. It was Kevern.

Kevern walked quickly to Hidi, gently said: "Sorry. My Shidis love to fool around, so they went to sleep really late; made you wait a long time."

Hidi held a bit of anger in her heart. But, as she saw Kevern, the anger was gone. She shook her head and smiled: "Doesn't matter, I didn't wait for long." She stopped, looked at the pond, said: "But why do we need to meet here? Today, Master Spirit suddenly got mad. I am still a little afraid of him."

Kevern laughed: "That was nothing. I heard my master say Master Spirit was

just playing, everything was alright. Compared to this morning, isn't it much more quiet at night?"

Hidi blushed, lowered her head: "We secretly meet like this. I don't know if this is alright?"

Kevern looked at her beautiful face, softly said: "Ling'Er Shimei, from two years ago when we first met, I kept thinking about you. It made it difficult to go to sleep. My mind was filled with your figure."

Hidi bit her lip. Her face was getting more red. She didn't seem angry, but sweet.

Kevern said again: "Ling'Er Shimei, I..."

Hidi suddenly raised her head, said: "Qi Shixiong, you can call me Ling'Er." Then, she lowered her head, whispered: "My, my dad and mom call me that."

Kevern seemed like he didn't believe his ears, then he asked: "Really, Ling, Ling'Er?"

Hidi took out a small box. She stared at the ground. It seemed like it took all her courage to quietly say: "I had carried this 'Refresh Bead' with me for the past two years."

She didn't dare to look at Kevern. But after a long time, Kevern didn't say anything. Hidi was curious and peeked at Kevern. He was smiling, with an indescribable happiness.

They looked at each other for a long time; then, they opened their arms and embraced.

The moon shone upon them, shone upon the bushes, but couldn't shine upon the dark corner.

The couple were whispering some sweet words until Kevern said the moon had passed the east sky, then he said: "Ling'Er, it's late now. We better return. If people found out we were here, it won't be good."

Hidi nodded. They looked at each other and smiled. Kevern took Hidi's hand and slowly walked toward Rainbow Bridge. The moon shone on the couple. After a while, they disappeared on the Rainbow Bridge.

The night; it became more sorrowful.

Within the bushes, within the shadow, Shaw Danon slowly came out, stared at the pond. Watching the moon in the water, swaying with the waves of water.

He wanted to cry.

But, in the end, he didn't. The pain in his heart like a mad beast ramming wildly, creating wounds everywhere.

However, he grit his teeth, didn't say anything.

It was like back to five years ago. That time, he lost everything, except Baye by

his side. The world had completely changed.

Tonight, at this moment, only he alone was facing it all by himself.

“Roar.” A low roar, like the snore of a beast, came from behind. Shaw Danon was awoken from his mixed feelings. He turned and was frightened by what he saw.

The Jadeon’s celestial beast, “Master Spirit,” the giant Water Kirin silently appeared very close behind him. It lowered its head. Its eyes almost touched his body. Perhaps Shaw Danon was so dead that he didn’t notice it.

Shaw Danon saw Water Kirin’s mountain sized body was in front of him. Its fangs shone under the moonlight. He stepped back and tripped over a rock.

His clothes were already messy. Something fell out from his clothes when he tripped.

Both Shaw Danon and Water Kirin looked down. In between them, a black “fire stick” was laying on the ground peacefully.

The eyes of Water Kirin reflected Shaw Danon and the ugly fire stick. Shaw Danon’s mind kept shouting: “Run, run, hurry!”

But in front of the Water Kirin, no matter how hard he wanted to run away, his pair of legs were like they did not belong to him. It sat there and did not

move. Water Kirin looked at Shaw Danon for a moment, then it turned its attention to the fire stick. The giant beast fixed its eyes on the dark fire stick. Its eyes examined the stick from top to bottom. Its large head turned in circles but still couldn't figure anything out. Then, it carefully touched the fire stick with its front claw.

Shaw Danon was stunned by what he saw. Although he was still scared by the giant beast, he was curious, did "Master Spirit" go crazy due to its thousands of years of age, or is it just like Big Yella, still an old child, and was interested in a fire stick?

Water Kirin's claw touched the fire stick, then immediately took its claw back. It seemed like Water Kirin was really afraid of the stick. The fire stick rolled a little, then stopped. It lay there peacefully.

Water Kirin was puzzled, but still not giving up. Its head suddenly turned to Shaw Danon. A low roar came from its mouth. Shaw Danon was surprised and his muscles were tightened. He immediately held his breath.

But that was only for a second, its head turned back to the fire stick again. This time, it even lowered its head and sniffed the fire stick. Shaw Danon's heart was beating hard; however, watching this beast's weird behavior, he realized it looked precisely like Big Yella. If he was not extremely nervous, he would have laughed already.

After a while, clearly Water Kirin didn't discover anything. It raised its head. Its large head looked around and was still puzzled. After a moment, it gave up. Water Kirin snorted and glared at Shaw Danon. Again, Shaw Danon was frightened. It walked to the pond and dived in.

Shaw Danon put himself together and slowly got up. He felt the back of his clothes were all wet. The sweat on his forehead was like rain drops. He picked up the fire stick and saw nothing weird. He complained loudly: “God!”

Suddenly, the water sprayed out from the pond. The giant tail of Water Kirin appeared on the surface of the pond.

Shaw Danon quickly put the fire stick back into his clothes. He ran away as fast as he could. He could hear the sound of water behind him, but he didn’t have the guts to look back. All he wanted was to get away from the beast as far as possible. He got on Rainbow Bridge and kept running until he could hear the sound no longer. When he finally reached the end of the bridge, he stopped and panted.

Shaw Danon’s breathing was back to normal. He was tired. He lowered his head and saw, under the moon, a lonely shadow was following him.

He raised his head, looked at the sky, the cold moon hanging in the sky. He watched it, blankly.

※ ※ ※

Dawn, everyone woke up.

Amandla kept rubbing his back, complained loudly: “Really, my back is almost broken for the whole night; how am I going to participate in the contest?”

Fifth Ludaxin frowned: “Sixth, don’t yell. I don’t feel anything on my back.”

Xavion said: "Right, sixth, you complained for the whole night, still not enough? Didn't you hear fifth and Xiao Shidi say nothing?"

Amandla rolled his eyes, said: "Fifth Shixiong has hard muscles and skin. Ask Xiao Shidi, look at him. Hey, Xiao Shidi, why are your eyes all bloodshot? Last night you really didn't sleep well?"

Shaw Danon finished packing up the sheets and sat in the chair next to the window, staring at the sky. Big Yella lay next to his feet. Ashh was searching for fleas in Big Yella's fur.

Amandla walked to him and slapped Shaw Danon's shoulder heavily. Shaw Danon was surprised. Ashh and Big Yella were surprised by him. Shaw Danon said: "What, what is it?"

Amandla frowned: "Xiao Fan, why are you absent minded? You really didn't sleep well last night?"

Shaw Danon was startled: "No, nothing."

Amandla said: "Then why are your eyes bloodshot?"

Just as Shaw Danon was about to reply, He Dazhi cut in: "Sixth, don't step into other people's business. It does not matter if Xiao Shidi didn't sleep well. Today, he doesn't need to duel. However, you, on the other hand, if you don't hurry and get ready, don't blame anyone else if you are late."

Amandla could no longer worry about Shaw Danon. He dashed to the other side of the room and took Ludaxin's basin, washed his face roughly, murmuring: "Hmph, Xiao Shidi has such a good life, look at his half-dead sleepy face. Really, fifth Shixiong, give me back the basin, it's late for me!"

"Bah, I haven't washed my face, yet!"

Shaw Danon was tired of his Shixionsg fighting over the basin, so he walked outside. Xavion asked him from behind: "Xiao Shidi, have you washed your face, yet?"

Shaw Danon turned and answered: "I did, Da Shixiong."

Xavion nodded: "That's good. It is fine for you to go for a walk, but remember to go to the dinning hall to eat breakfast, got it?"

Shaw Danon replied: "Yes." Ashh jumped on Shaw Danon's shoulder. Big Yella saw Ashh was leaving, it got up and followed lazily behind them. Shaw Danon saw the busy figures of Jadeon's disciples in the corridor. After a while, Shaw Danon unwittingly arrived at Cloud Sea.

The day was still early. Only a few disciples were walking around Cloud Sea. The cool wind came by, passed Shaw Danon's cheek. It was cold.

It just like last night!

His heart hurt. He was already sixteen years old. For five years at Bamboo Peak, the love for his Shijie was already deeply rooted in his heart. Last night, he saw Hidi secretly met Kevern with his own eyes. His mind was in a state of

chaos.

His mind was flashing the images of last night that pained his heart to death. His entire body was wandering aimlessly.

“Eh?” suddenly an exclamation came from behind. It surprised Shaw Dannon. He saw a young Jadeon disciple was standing next to him. In his hand, there was a golden fan with mountains and rivers drawn on it. His bright eyes didn’t look at Shaw Danon, but stared at Ashh who was sitting on Shaw Danon’s shoulder.

Chapter 22 Contest

Ashh saw that person staring at itself with a weird look. Ashh got angry and scratched the person with its claw. The person wasn't prepared. His face almost got scratched; fortunately, he reacted fast, his neck bent back and dodged it.

Shaw Danon was surprised and told Ashh to stop. The person was also surprised. With his hand covering his cheek, he mumbled: "That was close."

Shaw Danon was a bit embarrassed, said: "Shixiong, sorry!"

Unexpectedly, he didn't care. He waved his arm and smiled: "That's alright. It was my carelessness. I forgot that 'Monkey Phantasm' have very bad tempers; very easily harm people."

Shaw Danon was startled: "Monkey Phantasm?"

The person was surprised: "What? You don't know that monkey is a Monkey Phantasm?"

Shaw Danon was puzzled: "What is Monkey Phantasm?"

That person opened his eyes wide, examined Shaw Danon, asked: “You don’t even know it’s Monkey Phantasm, why would you have it?”

Shaw Danon said: “When I was cutting down bamboo, it smacked me with pine cones, then, it followed me back home.”

The Jadeon disciple’s jaw seemed to almost fall off, murmured: “Got smacked by pine cones and it followed you back home, got smacked by pine cones and it followed you back home...”

Shaw Danon shook his head and walked away. After he took a few steps, the person followed him. The person smiled and whispered: “Shidi, oh, no, Shixiong, you.”

It was the first time Shaw Danon had been called Shixiong. The person’s age was at least twenty. Shaw Danon quickly said: “Oh, I don’t deserve that; just tell me what you want to say.”

The person grinned: “Ho ho, Shidi is so easy to approach. Let me introduce myself first. My surname is Ceng, name Shushu. Peak of Wind’s disciple. Shidi, your name is...”

Shaw Danon said: “I am Bamboo Peak’s disciple, Shaw Danon; Issa Shixiong, you are, um, ‘uncle?’”

The person was startled, then smiled in embarrassment: “Ah, I was not intentionally trying to gain advantage over you. My Shushu is books. Not uncle. It’s all because of my dad. My mom named me Yingxiong. How dignified Ceng

Yingxiong sounds like. However, my father saw that I love to read books, so he named me Shushu. This became a joke, really.”

Shaw Danon couldn't help but laugh. This person's name was as funny as sixth Shixiong's. The frustration in his mind was eased by this person. He said: “Ah, so, Ceng Shixiong, you really love to read, then?”

Issa smiled: “In regards to that, I don't need to be modest, no one in Peak of Wind reads as many books as I do. But, most of the time, I like to read about anecdotes and strange magical creatures; often that made my dad mad at me. Ah, anyway, you really don't know this monkey is Monkey Phantasm?”

Shaw Danon shook his head, said: “No, I thought it was just a normal monkey.”

Seeming like it understood what they were talking about, Ashh suddenly screamed and pulled Shaw Danon's hair. Shaw Danon cried: “Ouch, stupid monkey!”

Issa looked at it with admiration, said: “So smart.”

Shaw Danon said, while bearing the pain: “All that stupid monkey knows is how to hit people, you still call that smart?”

Issa said: “This monkey may seem common, but with this strong spiritual mind, it is a rare celestial creature. Do you see the small line between its eyes?”

Shaw Danon turned and looked closely, and discovered a thin vertical line was under the grey fur. There was no way to discover it without close examination.

He said to Issa in admiration: “You can even notice such small details. Amazing!”

Issa spoke solemnly: “Don’t underestimate it. From what I had read in <<Shenmo Ziyi-Spiritual Creatures>>, Monkey Phantasm is a divine creature. It looks no different from a normal monkey when young, but it’s third eye will open once it grows up. It is not only able to use magic of the five elements, it is also able to see things from thousands of miles away. The legendary faculty of ‘clairvoyance’ came from Monkey Phantasm.”

Shaw Danon took Ashh into his arms. He couldn’t believe that the monkey had such a great background. No matter how hard he tried to picture it, Ashh looked like nothing other than a normal fat monkey. Ashh seemed to have gained a few pounds over one night at Peak of Widows.

Ashh was bewildered why so many people were looking at itself. It screamed madly. Shaw Danon made a face and tossed Ashh at Big Yella. Big Yella was surprised and jumped away. It was relieved to see it was Ashh. Ashh gestured, like demonstration, and turned its attention to Big Yella’s fleas.

Issa looked at Ashh admiringly, then turned back and asked Shaw Dannon: “Zhang Shidi also came to participate in Seven Peaks Tournament?”

Shaw Danon nodded: “What about you Ceng Shixiong?”

Issa smiled: “Me too. Yesterday, I got number thirty-three. What is your number? You had better not happen to be my opponent today.”

Shaw Dannon smiled as well: “I got number one.”

Issa was surprised: “You were the Bamboo Peak disciple yesterday?”

Shaw Danon’s face flushed, nodded.

Issa smiled: “You are so fortunate.” Then, he paused and calculated in his mind, said: “It seems like we will not meet each other until the final. This is going to be difficult.”

Shaw Danon laughed: “With my level of cultivation, I will be out after the second round.”

Issa stuck out his tongue: “I am afraid I can’t even pass round one.”

They both laughed. They chatted for a while, then Xavion called: “Xiao Fan, time to eat.”

Shaw Danon answered, then said farewell to Issa. Big Yella and Ashh followed Shaw Danon to Xavion. Xavion asked: “Who is the person you were talking to?”

Shaw Danon said: “A Shxiong from Peak of Wind. His name is Issa.”

Xavion was surprised: “Issa?”

Shaw Danon was bewildered: “What it is, Da Shixiong?”

Xavion turned and said: “That person is Head of Peak of Wind: Ceng Shu

Chang, Ceng Shibo's only son. He is very talented, has strong memory, high knowledge; his cultivation is also very deep. He is one of the hot topics for this tournament."

Shaw Danon was startled; he couldn't find a word to say.

※ ※ ※

After breakfast, Jadeon disciples gathered at Cloud Sea. Hundreds of people were there.

On the large square, eight platform stages were set up while everyone was eating breakfast. Each platform was about twenty meters away from each other. They were placed in the shape of Bagua. Next to the largest platform, Qian, a tall red list displayed the disciples' names, numbered in gold characters. Shaw Danon's name was at the farthest right, without an opponent.

Shaw Danon looked at his Shixions. They were all smiling except for Amandla who was complaining: "Not fair, not fair, not-"

"Shut up!" A shout came from their side. They were surprised and found it was Tian Bolis, Surin and Hidi. Bamboo Peak disciples immediately saluted: "Master Shi Niang!"

Tian Bolis nodded and did not say anything. Surin said: "The contest will be beginning soon. You must make us proud, understand?"

“Yes.” They said all at once.

All Shaw Danon noticed was Hidi who is standing next to Shi Niang. Today, she seemed to be more beautiful. She seemed to be in a very good mood.

Shaw Danon’s heart was felt like it had been stabbed by a needle. He lowered his head.

“Xiao Fan.” Surin noticed her disciple was unusual today. She walked toward him.

Shaw Danon quickly raised his head and responded: “Yes, Shi Niang.”

Surin asked: “Are you all right?”

Shaw Danon shook his head: “Nothing, Shi Niang.”

Surin took a look at Shaw Danon: “Xiao Fan, your luck allowed you to skip the first round, but you still need to pay attention to Shixiong Shijie’s duel. It is good for you, understand?”

Shaw Danon nodded: “Yes, Shi Niang.”

Surin turned to Tian Bolis. He nodded and walked toward the platform. Bamboo Peak’s disciples followed.

“Dang!” A clear bell ringing sounded in Cloud Sea. The noisy square suddenly became all silent.

On the center of the large platform, Master Doyal Shen and Master Vasp Caelo appeared. Master Doyal Shen took a step in front and announced to the disciples: “The tournament begins.”

Then he waved his sleeve, the bell rang again. “Dang dang” filled the sky. Shaw Danon peeked at Hidi, seeing her excited smile.

He couldn’t move his eyes to anywhere else and couldn’t hear what Master Doyal Shen and Master Vasp Caelo said. Then another bell ringing came again and pulled Shaw Danon back to reality. He realized the contest had already begun.

Sixty-three people, eight platforms, so there will be four groups. Within the first group, Hidi was the only one from Bamboo Peak. Her platform was at Li of the west. All Bamboo Peak disciples rushed there.

Hidi’s first opponent was a disciple of Sun Rise Peak. His name was Mansa. He jumped onto the stage. The disciples cheered for him. Surrounding the “Li” platform, most of the disciples were from Sun Rise Peak. Even their head, Shang Zheng Liang, was there. It appeared that they valued Mansa greatly.

Tian Bolis and others were covered by the Sun Rise Peak disciples. Almost everyone at the platform wore Sun Rise Peak’s robes. Tian Bolis did not care. His eyes met with Shang Zheng Liang’s. All they did was give a faint smile.

There were disciples already bringing the seats for the masters and Surin. Tian

Bolis and Surin sat down. Hidi came and said: “Dad, Mom, I am going up there.”

Tian Bolis looked at his daughter, said: “Go.”

Surin said kindly: “Careful.”

Hidi looked at the stage, smiled without a bit of nervousness, said: “Wait for my good news.”

Then she turned, with the smile still on her face. Her left hand formed an incantation, shouted: “Up!”

Red light flashed. The Phoenix Soul around her waist had moved under her feet, carrying her to the platform.

This performance was far better than Mansa’s jumping up to the stage like a monkey. Since most of the disciples were males, they were attracted by Hidi’s beauty. The applause was so loud that even disciples at the other platforms turned and wondered what happened.

Shaw Danon and others were standing behind Tian Bolis and Surin. Surin smiled and told Tian Bolis: “Seems like Ling’Er’s cultivation has improved.”

Tian Bolis smiled. Although he said nothing, he appeared to be in a very good mood.

Hidi already arrived at the stage. She was only one yard away from Mansa. Her hands folded, said: “Shen Shixiong, it is an honor to face you.”

Mansa noticed the red glow coming from Hidi’s esper. It must be the “Phoenix Soul” that his master had warned him about. He replied: “Tian Shimei, please go easy on me.”

He took a step back. His right hand summoned a sword with faint brown glow in front of him.

Surin frowned, whispered to Tian Bolis: “This sword is same as Ling’Er’s Phoenix Soul, both are earth element. This battle will be dependent on the level of cultivation of the caster.”

Tian Bolis smiled: “Of all the earth espers in Jadeon, who can match your Phoenix Soul? I say that sword is eighteen thousand times worse than yours.”

Surin said: “Nonsense.”

Main Line Chatper 22 Contest C

The bell rang, announcing the contest had begun.

Right after the bell, Hidi immediately pointed. The Phoenix Soul with red glow charged at Mansa as fast as lightning.

Mansa didn’t expect Hidi would attack immediately. He fell back two steps and sent his sword to face Phoenix Soul.

Red light and brown light crashed together. Hidi and Mansa's bodies shook, then returned to normal. The two espers battled in mid-air.

Tian Bolis frowned. Surin was also surprised: "That Mansa's cultivation isn't low." At the same time, the Sun Rise Peak disciples cheered: "Yeah!"

The cry from nearly a hundred people immediately covered Bamboo Peak's disciples' voices. Sixth Amandla snorted: "Why so loud? It isn't a screaming contest."

On the stage, the two espers were in a draw and returned to their respective masters. Mansa took seven steps, murmured some kind of incantation, then shouted: "Dash!"

His brown sword went high into the sky, then, in the speed of lightning it struck at Hidi from above her head. The force could be felt before the sword even landed.

Hidi had no sign of withdrawing. Her left hand grabbed Phoenix Soul and pulled it above her head. Phoenix Soul widened several times, formed a wall of red light above her head. At the next moment, Mansa's sword crashed on the red wall. The red light severely shook but there was no danger.

Surin was relieved, whispered to Tian Bolis: "Ling'Er is so silly and arrogant."

Tian Bolis snorted, shook his head.

Mansa's sword's attack was blocked and the sword returned to its master. Hidi didn't rest. Phoenix Soul extended and rolled up like a long staff. Hidi

caught the staff in hand.

The audience was amazed.

Mansa frowned. The sword had returned back to him. He grit his teeth. His right hand held the sword while his left hand twisted. As the large staff was about to strike at Mansa's head, the audience was silent. Then, suddenly, the wooden floor of the platform cracked. Five or six huge stones rose out and blocked in front of him.

Tian Bolis and Surin's faces darkened while Shang Zheng Liang nodded.

The staff struck heavily on the stone. The dust covered the entire stage. Hidi's body shook heavily, but the stone was indestructible. Phoenix Soul bounced back.

The dust hadn't settled. Mansa's face was slightly pale, but still didn't rest. He roared. His body floated above one of the stones. He held the sword with both hands. The sword brightened and stabbed against extremely hard stone.

Another creaking sound. Hidi felt the ground under her feet shake. Then, after several sounds, the wooden floor where Hidi was standing splintered into thousands of pieces. Countless numbers of rock spikes were shooting out from the ground.

"Ah!" Shaw Danon let out a scream. He then immediately fell quiet. Surin began to worry. Sun Rise Peak cheered loudly.

"Nice one, Shen Shixiong."

“Great!”

“Victory!”

The stage was still covered with dust. Hardly anything could be seen. Mansa, who was still standing on top of the stone, didn't relax. His eyes widened, search. Expectantly, after a while, within the thick dust, red light flashed and brightened instantly. Hidi was like a flaming phoenix, flew out from the dust with the red glow of Phoenix Soul circling her waist.

Hidi formed an incantation with both hands. Then, she swung her hands down. Phoenix Soul stopped circling and entered into the earth like a viper.

Without thinking, Mansa immediately flew backward. Just as he thought, at the location where he was standing, viper-like Phoenix Soul came out from the earth, appearing like a red dragon. A large hole was created.

Hidi was standing in mid-air, her hands formed an orchid shape, crossed in front of her chest, shouted: “Extend!”

Phoenix Soul paused, then the red light brightened and extended hundreds of times. It went in a circle, went into the ground and came out from the other side. It surrounded Mansa. Countless layers of silks tightly covered him.

Bamboo Peak disciples looked at each other. This was the magic Hidi used two years ago against Baye. Today, it became even more powerful. With the sky and earth covered by silks, how will Mansa differ from Baye?

As Hidi kept channeling the incantation, the giant ball of silk slowly contracted. Between the gasp of the lines of silk, the brown glow was faintly visible; Mansa was clearly continuing to resist, still. Even the silks slowed down due to the resistance; however, it still continued to contract.

The Sun Rise Peak disciples were quiet, nervously watching the giant red ball. Everyone knew what may happen if they got squeezed like that by an esper.

The red silk was six feet wide. The red light had completely forced down the brown light. No one could see Mansa. Hidi was still in mid-air. Her face began to flush. Her hands began to shake.

After a while, Phoenix Soul contracted one more foot. Everyone held their breath. At that moment, Mansa broke through the silk and came out; however, his face was completely pale.

The Sun Rise Peak disciples cheered loudly; however, Shang Zheng Liang closed his eyes and sighed. Tian Bolis and Surin smiled to each other.

Mansa was dying trying. Hidi pointed her hand. Phoenix Soul quickly followed and hit Mansa's back. Mansa couldn't dodge; even turning his body seemed to be a great difficulty for him. Phoenix Soul hit him, and Mansa fell off of the stage.

Sun Rise Peak disciples stopped their cheering, as though muted. Shang Zheng Liang stood up, shook his head, yelled at the disciple next to him: "Hurry and help Shen Shixiong."

The Sun Rise Peak disciples realized and went to Mansa, helped him to get up.

Hidi took back her esper and landed on the ground. She smiled to Mansa: “thank you, Shen Shixiong, for going easy on me.”

Mansa looked at her, smiled bitterly: “Tian Shimei is very gifted. I hold admiration.” Then, he let the disciples carry him away.

Shang Zheng Liang came, said to Tian Bolis and Surin: “Tian Shixiong, although niece is still young, she already has developed great talent. It really fills me with admiration.”

Tian Bolis smiled proudly: “I am flattered.”

Surin also smiled, said: “Shang Shixiong’s house has many talented disciples. I believe there are stronger opponents in your house.”

Shang Zheng Liang smiled and walked away. Tian Bolis did not press further questioning. He turned and walked. Hidi returned to them, immediately she was surrounded by Bamboo Peak’s disciples. They were all smiling, saying many praising words to drown Hidi with. Shaw Danon was happier than anyone else. Tian Bolis came over. Hidi swiftly went to Surin’s side, pulled her arms and smiled: “How was it Mom? Aren’t I tough?”

Surin rolled her eyes, but then laughed: “Yes, yes.”

Tian Bolis was also smiling. His daughter had given them a good start. He was finally able to let out his pressure. He patted Hidi’s head. Then, he turned back to the disciples: “Now is your turn. Ling’Er has set an example for you all. You must try hard. It is possible for you to match disciples from other houses.”

They said together: “Yes!”

Shaw Danon shouted along with them. They left and prepared for their own battle. Next round, three disciples from Bamboo Peak were up; Tian Bolis and Surin seperated to observer different matches. Surin noticed Shaw Danon was still standing in the same spot, she reminded him to closely observe the contest, then left. Shaw Danon thought for a moment, planning to find Hidi and go with her to cheer for their Shixiong. His eyes searched through the crowd and found Hidi was walking quickly toward Kevern.

Shaw Danon’s heart sank.

Hidi spoke with Kevern. Kevern and talked to Hidi. Hidi laughed. Together they picked on of the platforms to watch the contest.

Shaw Danon stood still. A sorrowed disappointment rose in his heart. His blood turned cold and froze his heart.

Note:

Shenmo Ziyi Spiritual Creatures Monkey Phantasm-Came from Mount Sumeru. Extreemly smart and naughty. The third eyes open when it become thousands years old. It can see things thouands miles away. Able to control nature. Protector of Buddha.

Shenmo Ziyi-An ancient book with collection of strange creatures, gods and devils, theasures. Wrote by Xiao Ding

Xiao Ding-His name didn’t recorded in any history. Bla bla bla....(let’s not

translate this part. It is just how Xiao Ding keep saying how smart he is in this part of the note)....Very intelligent since young age. Very strong memory. Had traveled around the world. He wrote the best book of the world: “Shenmo Ziyi”

P.S If you don't know, Xiao Ding is actually the author of this book, Zhu Xian. Er...you know what I trying to say about the notes above...

Chapter 23 Divine Sword

“Ha ha, Zhang Shidi!”

Suddenly, Shaw Danon’s shoulder was heavily patted upon by someone.

Shaw Danon was too focus on Hidi, he didn’t notice anyone around him. He was surprised, then he discovered that it was Issa who he met earlier.

Issa smiled at Shaw Danon, then turned his attention to Ashh.

Ashh saw that annoying guy was here again. It made a face and jumped on Big Yella’s back. It patted Big Yella’s head. Big Yella turned its head, glared and barked at Shaw Danon and Issa, then ran away.

Shaw Danon frowned, called: “Ashh, come back, don’t wander around.”

Issa laughed: “Don’t worry. Monkey Phantasms are extremely smart. It won’t get lost.”

Shaw Danon shrugged. He turned and was about to speak ti Issa, he realized

something and turned back. He saw the direction where Big Yella and Ashh were going was to the kitchen. He said: "Ah, stupid monkey, there you go again."

Issa was curious: "What is it?"

Shaw Danon coughed, smiled: "Not-nothing. Oh, right, don't you need to attend the contest, too? How come you still have time to see me?"

Issa laughed: "Oh, I am already done. Got nothing to do, so I came to say hi to you."

Shaw Danon was surprised: "What? You are already done? How is the result?"

Issa folded his fan and scratched his head: "Um, accidentally won a round. Heh heh."

Shaw Danon looked at Issa's casual tone, it didn't seem Issa got into a huge fight. He carefully asked: "Ceng Shixiong, is your cultivation that high?"

Issa immediately waved his hand: "Alas, Zhang Shidi, what are you saying? With such little cultivation as I have, how am I suitable to walk on the stage? If not because my father forced me to practice, I will be too lazy to care about it. I'd rather garden, feed birds, read books. How relaxing is that! But, anyway..." he put his arm on Shaw Danon's shoulder, walked with him, whispered: "But, I can never expect in Seven Peaks Tournament that there is someone that is worse than me."

Shaw Danon laughed bitterly: "There are many that are worse than you."

Issa shrugged his shoulders, said casually: “That doesn’t matter. No matter how greedy I am, I cannot expect to be the winner; however, I am rather interested by your Monkey Phantasm. Heh heh, Zhang Shidi, I will be better if you...”

Shaw Danon saw his evil look, immediately said: “Ceng Shixiong, don’t think about taking my Ashh!”

Issa stopped, then rolled his eyes, said: “Then let me trade with you. You know, I have a lot of rare, fun, valuable creatures in Peak of Wind. For example, the three-legs rabbit, black-white peacock, shellless turtle, and snake with wings!”

Shaw Danon couldn’t help but ask: “You really have so many strange creatures?”

Issa was complacent, said: “Of course. I have spent much effort on collecting those and received punishment from my dad all the time. However, I still like your Monkey Phantasm. How is it, which one do you want to trade for?”

Shaw Danon shook his head: “No. I kept Ashh because I think we have a strong bond between us. Also, the black-white rabbit, shellless peacock you said...”

Issa immediately corrected him: “It is three-legs rabbit, black-white peacock and the one without a shell is the turtle!”

Shaw Danon stuck out his tongue, said: “Oh, yes, yes; however, I am not interested in those. I am not going to trade.”

Issa rolled his eyes again. He took Shaw Danon away from the crowd of people. He looked around with a strange look on his face. Then, he whispered: “Zhang Shidi, I’ll show you something good. See if you like it or not.” He took out a thick, blue-covered book; handed it to Shaw Danon.

Shaw Danon took a look at the cover. It did not have a title. The cover seemed old. Issa pretended to look normal, but his eyes were peeking around, very cautiously.

Shaw Danon shook his head, said: “Ceng Shixiong, I cannot take such a valuable book. My potential is not good enough. It is useless for me to read it. I also don’t want to trade Ashh. Please, take it back.”

Issa glared at him, said quietly: “That is because you haven’t read it yet. Read it first, hurry.”

Shaw Danon looked at his strange behavior. He couldn’t help but be curious. He opened it and was stunned. His face immediately flushed. In the book, besides large amount of words, there was also a lot of drawings. They were all naked men and women. It was a pornography book. It was the first time in Shaw Danon’s life to see such a thing. He cried out: “Ceng Shixiong, why do you have such a thing?”

“Shush!” Issa was surprised, and quickly took back the book; hiding it in his clothes. Then he carefully looked at the disciples around them and glared at Shaw Danon: “Don’t be so loud.”

Shaw Danon understood. However, he was still surprised, he whispered: "Ceng Shixiong, why you have, um, read such a book?"

Issa's lips curved, said: "So what? Let me tell you, there is only one copy of this book in the world! I had put extreme amounts of effort to get it. I promise, after you read it, you will be able to get every ladies' heart in the world. How is it, us it to trade for Ashh?"

Shaw Danon shook his head: "No."

Issa said angrily: "This is a no, that is a no. Tell me: what do you want?"

Shaw Danon replied honestly: "I don't want anything."

Issa could not do anything about it, said: "Why are you so much like wood."

Shaw Danon chuckled, didn't mind it. His eyes faintly able to see the beautiful figure within the cloud.

Issa gave up. He opened his fan. Then, the bell rang from far away. Another contest had begun.

Issa looked in that direction, smiled suddenly and pulled Shaw Danon, said: "Come, I will bring you to watch the most popular person in Jadeon."

Shaw Danon was startled, asked: "Who?" Then, he paused, his face darkened, said: "Is it Dragon Head Peak's Kevern Shixiong?"

Issa said: “Huh?” Seemed like he was amazed, then he shook his head: “Qi Shixiong’s cultivation was well known already. But didn’t you hear? This session’s spotlight is on another person.”

Shaw Danon thought for a moment, asked: “Who?”

Issa seemed to have forgotten the argument they had a while ago. He smiled mysteriously: “You will know if you come with me!” He pulled Shaw Danon with him. Shaw Danon was also curious of who that person is, so he followed along.

Issa took Shaw Danon to the largest platform, “Qian.” Shaw Danon followed behind Issa. He saw below the stage it was overcrowded by hundreds of Jadeon disciples. At least four or five hundred people. Shaw Danon guessed more than half of the Jadeon disciples were all gathered here.

As they walked near, they could hear the Jadeon disciples were all discussing excitedly around them.

“Bamboo Height always has so many beauties. I heard Anan is said to be the most beautiful lady in five hundreds years.”

“Of’ course. That day I saw her at Crystal Hall. She is so enchanting. Huh? Who hit my head, Shishu?”

A white bearded old man was next to the disciple, he said angrily: “Brat, you are a cultivator. Your mind is supposed to be still; yet you still care about women? If you are up there, all you know is her face, you will be lost before you are even able to make a move.”

“Yes.”

“Hmph! I already told Head Shixiong, Jadeon should not be adopting females as disciples.”

“Ahem, Shishu you senior is really, um, brilliant, intelligent, wise, but isn’t your voice a bit too loud?”

“What? Am I wrong?” The old bearded man’s voice raised higher.

“No, no.” The disciples quickly surrounded him. They whispered: “Shishu, Master Shui Yue is sitting there.”

“Hhmp!” The old man lowered his voice, said: “If not because she is from the same faction, I already would have-”

The disciples immediately agreed and praised the old man who was highly cultivated who would not bother with the younger one. Issa and Shaw Danon looked at each other. Issa shrugged. Shaw Danon whispered: “The person you mentioned is a Shijie from Bamboo Height?”

Issa nodded, looked at the stage, said: “Haven’t started yet. You will know her soon. But, alas, there are too many people.”

They circled around the stage; however, it was too crowded by Jadeon disciples, they couldn’t find a way to get into the crowd. Shaw Danon was even

more curious. He wondered who was so popular that could draw so many Jadeon disciples here.

Issa was anxious, he kept saying: “Darn it, too many people. I should have waited here last night to get a good spot.”

Shaw Danon was surprised, but before he could say anything, suddenly Issa’s eyes brightened. He saw that there was a group of Peak of Wind disciples standing there. Without saying anything, he took Shaw Danon to the group. The Peak of Wind disciples recognized it was Issa. They all smiled. A huge man said: “Ho ho, you are late.”

Issa didn’t bother with him. He took Shaw Danon, squeezed into the crowd. The Peak of Wind disciples were very nice to him. They all moved out of the way. Shaw Danon followed him. They got inside of the crowd, the view was much better. Near the platform, eight people were sitting there. They were Jadeon’s Head Master Doyal Shen, Head of Dragon Peak Master Vasp Caelo and head of Bamboo Height Master Shui Yue. Other people were elders from different houses. Standing behind them, the Jadeon disciples were tightly crowded together. The most attractive were the Bamboo Height’s female disciples who were standing behind Master Shui Yue. Shaw Danon recognized Baako. The one who stood the closest to Master Shui Yue was a beautiful lady in a blue dress he saw yesterday in Hall of Crystal during sortation. Her face was still as cold as ice, attracting many people.

“See her? It is her.” Issa elbowed Shaw Danon, told him to look at the blue dressed lady. Shaw Danon looked at her, said quietly: “is she the one you said is the most cultivated?”

Issa was like a drunk, he said: “Not necessary to be the most cultivated. She entered Jadeon not long ago. Her cultivation is hard to predict. However,

everyone says she is certainly the most beautiful!”

Shaw Danon frowned: “Ceng Shixiong, your drooling face makes you look weird.”

Issa said: “Ahem, did, did I? Heh heh, you must be wrong. Do you see the Shixiongdi around us?”

Shaw Danon saw most of the disciples’ eyes were on the Bamboo Height’s disciples, especially blue dress Anan. But it seemed like the girls had already gotten used to it. Everyone of them acted normal. Anan’s face was emotionless, cold like frost and ice; ignoring all the males behind her.

Issa swallowed, whispered to Shaw Danon: “You can’t blame anyone for it. Jadeon suddenly adopted many young disciples in recent years. Look around, at least four hundred disciples are around our age. Heh heh, our cultivation isn’t high enough. Hard to resist.”

Shaw Danon peered at him. Drawing association with the book Issa had shown, he felt there was a word “Se” written on Issa’s face.

Issa turned and asked surprisingly: “Zhang Shidi, why you not look at them but me. You and I are friends, that’s why I brought you here. Right, who do you think get the best body?”

Shaw Danon immediately turned his head away. He added a “Lang” behind the comment he thought for Issa. (Note1)

The noise suddenly disappeared. Under the watch of people, Anan stepped

up, saluted Master Shui Yue. Master Shui Yue nodded, said: “Go.”

Anan responded. She tidied up her dress. Her right hand softly formed an incantation. Her eyes looked at the stage. The faint white smoke around her feet quickly gathered. Soon, a cloud formed. Anan stood on top of the cloud like a fairy. Slowly floating up into the air it carried her to the stage.

Wind came by, the white smoke was like the softest, most beautiful silk. Her dress fluttering between the clouds. Like a goddess from nine skies descended to the earth. Causing people to love and also respect.

Then, the sudden applause made Shaw Danon’s ears ring. He was surprised how popular Anan is. But as he looked at the beautiful figure in mid-air, he couldn’t help to control himself but to think there could be such a beautiful person in this world.

A smile appeared on Master Shui Yue’s cold face.

After a moment, a young disciple walked to the stage (no one noticed him). Square face and thick eyebrows. His look was fine, but at that moment his face seemed excited. Once he got on the stage, he said to Anan: “Lu Shimei, I am Dragon Head Peak’s disciple Aiko. Today I can fight against Shimei, it is very fortunate for me.”

“Boo!” Hiss and boo were everywhere.

Anan was calm, standing in mid-air and said coldly: “Fang Shixiong is courteous. Bamboo Height’s eight generation Anan, today asking Fang Shixiong for knowledge.”

Shaw Danon looked at Anan standing in mid-air like a fairy. It reminded him of Hidi who was also standing there in mid-air not long ago. He could faintly see Hidi's figure from Anan.

On the stage, Aiko was still talking. It seemed like he did not mind if he was talking like this forever and not beginning the contest. Fortunately, many people disliked it. After he spoke a word or two many people, including Issa, who was standing next to Shaw Danon, many people began to shout angrily: "Why still not beginning?"

"Pervert!"

"So annoying like a woman! Huh, that Bamboo Height's Shijie-Ouch! What are you trying to do? No, I didn't mean-"

"Ding!"

Finally the bell rang. Anan's eyes glared straight at Aiko. Aiko trembled under the cold glare of Anan. He couldn't dare to say stupid things any longer. He took back his smile, focused his mind. He held out his right hand and summoned a silver-white sword.

Shaw Danon frowned. The sword had reminded him of Kevern's esper "Frozen Ice." Issa snorted: "With Kevern's example, many people in Dragon Head Peak love to craft this kind of sword."

Shaw Danon looked around but couldn't find Kevern anywhere in the sea of people. He did not want to see Kevern anyway.

Where did they go? Shaw Danon lowered his head. Sorrow rose in his heart.

Suddenly, Issa pulled his arm, said happily: “Xiao Fan, look, the contest has begun.”

Shaw Danon saw Aiko already summoned his sword. He could feel the chill coming from it. However, Shaw Danon discovered Aiko’s ice magic’s power was still a distance away compared to the day Kevern battled against Tian Bolis.

However, Anan was still standing on the cloud, coldly watching Aiko channel energy and form an ice wall. She had no sign of attacking. On her back was a skyblue sword. This sword seemed unable to combine with its owner like most cultivators’ espers. However, no one here dared to underestimate this sword.

In cultivation, most espers could combine with their owner after a long time of practicing. They could summon the esper when it was needed. However, some strange espers, due to extreme high spiritual strength, the human body could not bear as a burden; so, the owner must carry the esper with him or her. This type of esper always has spiritual power. The stronger the owner’s cultivation is, the more power the esper could release. The Jaden’s treasure-ancient sword “Regenesis,” belonged to this type.

In a three-yard radius around Aiko, a thin layer of ice was formed. The nearby disciples could feel the chill that came from it. Anan who was standing in mid-air, did nothing and continued watching Aiko.

Aiko danced with the sword lonely under the eyes of hundreds of disciples. The eyes of other people were fine. But Anan's eyes were much colder than the chill that came from his own sword. It kind of limited his functionality.

Aiko was in a rush. His hand pointed at Anan from below. The silver sword charged at Anan. He said: "Lu Shimei, careful!"

Laughter came out from the crowd. Aiko appeared to be fearful of harming Anan. Master Vasp Caelo was embarrassed. He snorted heavily.

The person seated next to him immediately responded: "What? Vasp Caelo Shixiong is dissatisfied?"

Master Vasp Caelo didn't turn. He said: "Shui Yue Shimei, every disciples in your house are all so pretty!"

During the contest, Master Vasp Caelo did not praise her disciples' talents but instead mentioned the ladies' beautiful faces. It was clearly sarcasm. Master Shui Yue replied: "I also didn't know that under Jadeon there is such an abundance of lechers and trash."

Master Vasp Caelo flew into a fury. Just when he was about to retort, Master Doyal Shen held up his hand, smiled: "Okay, okay, we are hundreds of years old already. Don't you feel humiliated to argue in front of so many disciples? Watch the contest, watch the contest."

The two masters snorted heavily, then turned away.

Aiko's silver sword was already under Anan's cloud. Anan's cold face didn't

show anything and she didn't move. The cloud carried her backward. But Aiko's sword was so fast that it caught up to Anan within an instant. The audience screamed or sighed as they watched the sword get close to Anan.

Anan held the sword in her hand. She didn't draw the sword out from the sheath. She only used the skyblue sword block in front of her.

“Chang!”

The clear sound filled the entire square.

It was as though Aiko's sword received a hard blow. The sword fell back. Aiko and Master Vasp Caelo were both surprised. Without hesitation, Anan tossed away her sword. The fingers on the right hand twisted and formed a seal. The skyblue sword brightened in mid-air. Blue light covered the entire stage. It appeared as though this sword was definitely not a normal esper.

Aiko was shocked by the bright blue light, but he was also angered by Anan not pulling out the sword from the sheath. He used his sword and formed three layers of ice wall.

In mid-air, Anan's eyes were as bright as stars. Her hairs danced in the wind. Her mouth was quietly pronouncing the incantation. Her icy face had no emotion. A loud bang came from the skyblue sword, like a roar of a mighty beast. The cloud vapor within twenty yards were blown away by the bright blue light.

The light was as blue as the sky. The sword flew toward Aiko.

Sweat dropped from Aiko's forehead like rain. He was clearly shocked by the power of Anan's sword. Within an instant, the sword was in front of him.

"Ka, ka, ka"

The disciples were stunned as they saw the sword cut through Aiko's ice wall as if it was nothing.

With Aiko's strength, it was not that he could not form any more ice walls to defend, it was that he thought three layers of ice walls were already enough. He didn't expect Anan's cultivation was so high, and the skyblue sword was surprisingly powerful.

At that moment between life and death, Aiko forced himself to concentrate. The silver sword lay in front of him, formed a white shield. Then, Anan's blue sword crashed with the white shield.

"Bang!"

With the two swords as the center, the loud bang swiftly spread. The Jadeon disciples felt the gale hit against them. They all fell backward. The circle of the crowd enlarged instantly.

They had never seen such power came from an esper before.

After that surprise, everyone turned their attention back to the stage. Anan already landed on the platform. The sword returned to her hand. The blue and white light also disappeared. Everyone could see the pale colour of Aiko's face.

Aiko raised his head, pointed at Anan, his voice was cracked: “You-”

Everyone was confused about what happened. Then a strange thing occurred. A cracking noise came out from the white sword that was floating in front of Aiko. Under the eyes of the audience, a large split appeared. The sword then broke into half, fell on the floor.

It was silent. Everyone here knew what an esper meant to a cultivator.

On the platform, Aiko spit out a large amount of blood. His hand held his chest. Then, he couldn't hold out any longer and fainted.

Note 1: Se Lang mean pervert....:P

Chapter 24 Unexpected

Immediately several disciples from Dragon Head Peak rushed to the stage and lifted up Aiko. They looked at the broken sword. Their eyes were filled with fury, glaring at Anan like they were wishing they could kill that beautiful lady in front of them.

Master Vasp Caelo held his fists tight, said coldly: “Shui Yue Shimei, your disciple’s heart is very fierce. Winning the battle is not enough, she even broke his esper with the power of a divine esper. What logic is that?”

Master Shui Yue said coldly: “Xueqi’s cultivation is not good enough. She can’t control ‘Aeolian Firmus’ well. Not that big of a deal.”

Master Vasp Caelo was about to burst in his anger; suddenly, a hand patted on his shoulder. Master Doyal Shen had risen. He patted Master Vasp Caelo’s shoulder. Master Vasp Caelo looked at him and was forced to hold his hanger. He snorted heavily and strode away.

Master Doyal Shen looked at Master Vasp Caelo’s back, shook his head and smiled bitterly. He turned and saw Master Shui Yue also walked away. Anan came down from the stage and arrived in front of Shui Yue. Shui Yue looked at her, smiled and nodded. Anan didn’t say anything. She bowed and followed as

Shui Yue walked away.

Shaw Danon put himself back together after the soul stirring battle. Seeing Shui Yue walking with Anan, he realized how alike both of them were. They were both cold as frost. They seemed like they had come out of the same mold.

Suddenly Issa sighed: "Can't believe that even Aeolian Firmus has reappeared."

Shaw Danon was confused, said: "What is Aeolian Firmus?"

The Jadeon were slowly dispersing. Issa greeted several disciples of Peak of Wind, then walked away with Shaw Danon, saying: "Aeolian Firmus is the sword that Anan was using. I had read about it from <<Ten Volumes of Rare Treasures>>. Aeolian Firmus first appeared in the hand of a cultivator known as Dead Heart Master a thousand years ago. Legend said that this sword is made of steel that comes from nine skies. Dead Heart Master found it in the northern ice plain; he crafted the sword with it. At the battle between Good and Evil, the leader of Good was our Jadeon clan's Master Jade Leaf, but Dead Heart Master was also rather well known. Especially with his godly sword Aeolian Firmus, he battled Evil's Elder Black Heart for three days and nights. Then he severely injured Elder Black Heart, got rid of one of our biggest threats. During that time, it was said only Aeolian Firmus could restrain Sinister Orb. From that time, Aeolian Firmus became famous. A dream among the cultivators. However, after Dead Heart Master passed away, Aeolian Firmus vanished. Never thought that it was in the hands of Bamboo Height."

Then Issa shook his head, said: "Xiao Fan Shidi, sine Anan has such a godly weapon, this contest will not leave us with any hope."

Shaw Danon was not disappointed. He never thought of achieving anything anyway. But seeing Issa's disappointed look, he was curious: "Huh, Ceng Shixiong, didn't you tell me that you are not interested in the tournament? Why do you look so disappointed?"

Issa blushed, said: "If I am, at least, able to stand on top of the stage in the final, it would look quite impressive, don't you think?"

Shaw Danon laughed.

Issa looked at his weird face and felt embarrassed. He punched Shaw Danon: "What's so funny?" Then he himself laughed also.

The walked to another platform and watched another battle.

That day, Bamboo Peak had the record of four wins and three losses. Xavion, Hidi, He Dazhi, Amandla and the inclusion of the lucky Shaw Danon, five people advanced into the next round. This was the best record of hundreds of years. It made Tian Bolis so happy that he couldn't close his mouth.

※ ※ ※

Second day.

Dawn sunlight shown upon Cloud Sea. Jadeon disciples came to the square like yesterday; they continued to watch Jadeon's Seven Peaks Tournament.

Bamboo Peak people stood under the red list same as yesterday. Half of the

names had been taken out. Next to Shaw Danon's name, his opponent was written there—Chu Yu Wang.

Since the morning, Shaw Danon started to feel nervous. Although he knew he came here to absorb knowledge, his heart couldn't help but feel uneasy. He couldn't eat breakfast.

He whispered to Xavion who was sitting next to him: "Da Shixiong, who is Chu Yu Wang? Is he strong?"

Xavion frowned, shook his head: "I am not sure. I have never heard of him. The list says he is Sun Ris Peak's disciple. But, as for the level of cultivation, I do not know." Then, he looked at Shaw Danon, seeing him appear nervous, he smiled: "Xiao Shidi, don't worry. It is not that big of a deal. The first time I participated in the contest, I was also extremely nervous."

Shaw Danon murmured: "Yes."

Amandla came, with an evil smile on his face: "Hey, Shixings. Let us have a gamble on Xiao Shidi's result."

"Right, right, I bet Xiao Shidi lose!"

"Me too!"

"Me also, I put double shares!"

"Add me in."

Xavion was angry, pointed at everyone: "What do you guys think you are doing? Xiao Shidi has a battle ahead of him and you guys want to hurt him more?"

Shaw Danon said thankfully: "Da Shixiong."

Xavion said: "Sixth."

Amandla stuck out his tongue, said: "Da Shixiong, I was just joking. Please don't tell master."

Xavion said: "No, you hurt him already anyway. This gamble I put in five shares!"

Amandla and Shaw Danon said at the same time: "What?"

Tian Bolis and Surin came in. Bamboo Peak disciples stood up and greeted them. Tian Bolis looked at them, said: "Yesterday your performance was not bad. However today, in the second round, the opponents are basically Jadeon's elites. You must be cautious."

They answered: "Yes."

Surin looked at Shaw Danon, came to him, said: "Xiao Fan, today is your first battle. You must be careful, understand?"

Shaw Danon's heart was warmed, he said quietly: "Yes, Shi niang."

Surin nodded. She wanted to say something more; however, the ringing bell announced the contest had begun. Tian Bolis and Surin looked at each other, nodded, said: “You all know which platform you should go to. The red list has stated it. When the contest begins, your Shi niang and I will come watch your battle. Make sure not to make use lose face.”

They responded. Tian Bolis nodded, spoke with Surin privately, then walked away. Hidi looked around, then went to Shaw Danon. Shaw Danon’s heart beat rapidly.

Hidi looked closely at Shaw Danon, then laughed. Turned to everyone and said: “Look how nervous Xian Fan is. His forehead is sweating.”

The disciples laughed. Xavion said: “I had already tried to comfort Xiao Shidi, but it didn’t work. It seems we need Xiao Shimei’s help.”

Hidi said to Shaw Danon: “Xiao Fan, I have a battle, too. I can’t cheer for you. You need to try hard and be careful!”

Her face was so close to Shaw Danon that he could smell her faint fragrance. He nodded, but he couldn’t say anything.

Hidi clearly didn’t think too much of it. She smiled to Shaw Danon, then talked to her Shixionsgs for a bit. After a while, everyone went to their own platform for the contest. The people who did not need to fight were cheering for their members; however, no one came with Shaw Danon. Perhaps everyone thought

Shaw Danon was hopeless.

As Shaw Danon stood there watching his Shixions walking away, his heart had an indescribable pain. Then he slowly walked to the red list, carefully read through it again.

The platform for him and the Sun Rise Peak disciple Chu Yu Wang was the farthest “Zhen” platform.

Shaw Danon gave a bitter smile. On his way to the platform, he heard many people were talking about the contest yesterday. The well-known disciples advanced to the next round easily. They spoke of a very talented disciple in Dragon Head Peak asid from Kevern; Shaw Danon guessed it must be Baye. Most people’s topic of focus was Anan, the beautiful lady with the divine sword “Aeolian Firmus.” Her level of cultivation had surpassed everyone’s expectations. Most people were not happy that Anan had destroyed her opponent’s swords. But this also brought even more disciples to watch her battle. The vanished “Aeolian Firmus” attracted even more people. Some elders also wished to witness the godly esper from the Good and Evil battle a thousand years ago.

As he heard the discussion between the disciples along the way, he recalled the cold, beautiful face of Anan. He shook his head. Then, someone called: “Xiao Fan.”

This voice was familiar. Shaw Danon raised his head and smiled. It was Baye. Shaw Danon quickly went to him, said: “I was thinking why I could not find you. There you are.”

Baye pointed behind him: “Today, I still need to go to the contest. It is at this

'Kan' platform, so I came early to prepare." Then he looked closely at Shaw Danon, smiled: "Today is also your turn; which platform are you at?"

Shaw Danon said: "I am going to 'Zhen' platform. It will begin soon; I can't come cheer for you. Be careful up there."

Baye smiled: "You too. Huh? How come your Shixions and elders don't come to watch you?"

Shaw Danon was startled, forced himself to smile: "You know my house does not have much people. Today many of us need to go to the contest. Master and Shi niang are watching Da Shixiong and Shijie's battle."

Baye looked at him, sighed and patted Shaw Dannon's shoulder.

Shaw Danon smiled: "Does not matter. I came here to obtain experience. Don't worry. You need to try hard, however. Don't let them think our Grastemple Village people are useless."

Baye nodded. The bell behind him rang. He turned his head back and checked, said: "My contest is about to begin. I can't talk with you. If I can, I will come to see you after this battle."

Shaw Danon nodded, said: "Go."

Baye turned. Shaw Danon watched Baye leaving, he thought to himself: "It will be a miracle if I can still hold out until you get here."

He laughed at himself as he made his way slowly to the “Zhen” platform. It was the far eastern part of Cloud Sea. There were only several disciples, most were from Sun Rise Peak. The number of people was significantly different than Anan’s “Qian” platform. There was only one chair. A white bearded old man was sitting there. Shaw Danon found that old man was a bit familiar. He remembered that old man was the elder who scolded all the disciples during Anan’s battle yesterday. He complained Jadeon should never adopt any female disciples. Shaw Danon did not know which house that elder was from.

In Seven Peaks Tournament, there were eight platforms. Normally, there would be at least one elder for each platform to watch over the disciples; otherwise, they would be out of control.

Shaw Danon walked to the white bearded old man and bowed, said: “Shibo, I am Bamboo Peak disciple Shaw Danon. Today’s contest at the ‘Zhen’ platform.”

The old man turned and peered at Shaw Danon, casually said: “Oh, you are here. Hurry, go on to the stage.”

Shaw Danon responded; however, he saw no one on the stage. It was apparent that Chu Yu Wang hadn’t arrived yet. He hesitated for a second, then decided to follow the old man’s order and walked onto the stage. At the same time, Sun Rise Peak disciples were whispering; it was clear they were discussing Shaw Danon.

The morning sun had risen. The sun light of Peak of Widows gently shone down upon them. Shaw Danon was standing on the platform, looking at the east sky. The early sun slowly rising upward. The light was soft and red, brightening up the clouds from far away.

Many feelings rose in Shaw Danon's heart. Five years ago he was still an ignorant farmer child. He had never dreamed that he could stand at Peak of Widows to watch the sunrise. No, it was not that he never dreamed of it; it was that he could never imagine there could be such a beautiful sunrise.

Life was endless like the clouds.

His sixteen years old mind, now it was like a sixty years old men.

Shaw Danon put his hands into his clothes and touched the cold fire stick. A month ago, without anyone knowing it, Shaw Danon was surprised to find that he could manage to control the black fire stick. That moment, he could not believe his eyes. Later, after countless numbers of repeats, the fire stick did move under his mind's strength.

"Navigate Object" was a shocking term in Jadeon's way of cultivation. It was a symbol of level four Pure Essence. It was what new disciples focused on, hoped for and practiced for. Shaw Danon could only dream to reach that level; to make his master proud and to make his master smile.

But, is it possible?

Shaw Danon tried hard to control himself and not tell anyone about it. At the same time, he also tried to navigate other objects in the kitchen; however, they did not move. It weakened his confidence. He was also confused. Why did that happen?

At night, when he stared at this mysterious fire stick, he could feel the icy chill slowly circling in his body.

“Ding!” A clear bell rang, surprised Shaw Danon. There were still several Sun Rise Peak disciples standing present. The white bearded old man was still half sleeping, sitting on his chair; however, on the opposite side of Shaw Danon there was a man standing, about thirty years old, smiling at him.

Shaw Danon blushed, quickly saluted: “Bamboo Peak disciple Shaw Danon here to ask for Chu Shixiong’s guidance.”

Chu Yu Wang smiled: “No, no. There are many talented people. Although Zhang Shidi is still young, with the contest in front of you, you can only stand there normally; without nervousness or fear. This is far better compared to me in the last session. I am in admiration.”

Shaw Danon startled, murmured: “Not to conceal the truth, Shixiong, I was actually day-dreaming.”

Below the stage, all the Sun Rise Peak disciples almost fell down due to laughter. Chu Yu Wang was also startled. He couldn’t hold the laughter, then thought it was improper, so he forced himself to hold it: “Zhang Shidi must be joking. Um, it is the time. I will need Shidi to teach me a lesson.”

Shaw Danon became nervous. He said slowly: “Chu Shixiong please go easy on me.”

Chu Yu Wang didn’t reply. It seemed like he was very confident. His right hand shook. A sword with a soft yellow glow was summoned.

“Sword name ‘Shaoyang’. Zhang Shidi, please.”

Shaw Danon looked at Shaoyang sword. The yellow glow was soft and comfortable. It seemed like this sword was not common quality. He swallowed; however, he still reached his hand into his clothes and took out the fire stick.

Everyone’s eyes were on that dark black, fire stick.

Silence.

“Hahahaha” someone laughed and broke the silence. Laughter burst. Someone painfully said: “What is that, that?”

“I said it already. Everyone from Bamboo Peak are weird. Yesterday, there was a guy that used gambling dice as esper. Today, there is someone with a fire stick. So, so funny! Hahaha!”

Even Chu Yu Wang couldn’t hold it. He struggled to restrain his laughter, said: “Zhang Shidi, that, haha, is yours, haha, sorry, I can’t control it. Ah, is it your esper?”

Shaw Danon listened to their laughter. His face flushed. He didn’t say anything. He knew the fire stick was ugly and would cause people to laugh at him. However, he couldn’t navigate anything other than the fire stick. He had a small, tiny hope, to hope that his fire stick could prove himself, so he decided to bring it.

But, in the end, the fire stick had brought him disdain and sneers. People were laughing loudly. Shaw Danon lowered his head. All he could see was the black, ugly fire stick in his hand.

They laughed, laughed loudly. Just like when they were leaving, his Shixiongs were laughing; even his beloved Ling'Er Shijie also laughed.

He lowered his head, closed his eyes.

The coolness in his body was calling him.

A person...when is it that a person will feel the most lonely?

Is it when facing the world's apathy alone? Is it when facing all the sneers alone?

A person's blood, is it cold or boiling?

He raised his head.

The sun shone on his face. No one could see his expression.

Chu Yu Wang's Shaoyang sword glowed almost as bright as the early sun light. He shouted. Shaoyang sword's light followed his finger and crashed on Shaw Danon.

The heat blew against his face, but Shaw Danon's heart was as cold as ice.

Seeing the brightness in front of him, he recalled the morning a long time ago: After the soul shocking night out there with Baye, when they got back to Grasstemple Village they saw the bloody scene. At that morning, all his happiness was gone. He could feel as though he were buried in a sea of blood, try as he might to find his parents, but couldn't.

The heat felt like it was burning his skin. Another night appeared in his eyes. Next to the pond, a beautiful lady was standing next to the water and embraced with her lover.

“Alas!” The sixteen year old youngster sigh. The pain was so strong that he forgot the glowing light in front of him. He bit his lip. A drop of blood, slowly falling.

It landed on the black and green fire stick with blood-like threads..

In the next moment, he was engulfed by a light that was as bright as the sun.

The Sun Rise Peak disciples cheered. Within that, there was an exclamation.

Issa ignored the eyes filled with hostility next to him. He sighed and felt sorry for his new friend. Pity that the contest's rule did not allow him to help Shaw Danon, or else he would already go up there.

The bearded old man was also surprised by Issa.

On the stage, the bright glow fused with the sun light. Chu Yu Wang even thought he had reached the peak of cultivation; and then, after he defeat this trashy opponent, he will defeat every other until the last! After all, all he

needed to do is win four more battles.

At the thought of that, Chu Yu Wang could not hide his smile. Shaoyang's light became brighter. He watched Shaw Danon frown and bit his lip under the pain of the heat.

Then, at that moment, his heart beat heavily. It seemed like someone used a hammer to hit him inside of his body. No one could see Shaw Danon clearly except for Chu Yu Wang, who was standing in front of Shaw Danon. He could see through the light of Shaoyang. He could see him raise his head, open his eyes.

A pair of red, blood thirsty eyes filled with rage!

An unexpected, unknown coldness began to spread. Chu Yu Wang could see the black fire stick seemed to come to life. The black gas rose. The orb on the top of the stick brightened with a green glow, shone on Shaw Danon. It was like he had become a different person. Everything happened inside of Shaoyang's aura. No body could see it other than Chu Yu Wang.

Chu Yu Wang was shocked. Not waiting for him to react, the icy chill had surrounded him. He felt the world was spinning. There was a disgusting feeling inside of him; moments later, the light green glow from the orb shone on his body.

Issa nervously watched Shaw Danon being surrounded by the light. He thought of Shaw Danon as a roasted monkey (normally people would think roasted pig; however, Issa thought of monkey, which is weird), he did not want to watch anymore. As the opposite, the Sun Rise Peak disciples were cheering.

Then, they heard Chu Yu Wang roared. Shaoyang sword flew up into the air. The light immediately disappeared. Shaw Danon's figure reappeared. Chu Yu Wang seemed to be heavily injured. He took a few steps backward. Then, blood spouted from his nose, ears, eyes and mouth. He pointed at Shaw Danon with his right hand, but couldn't make any sound.

Then his body shook, and fell on the floor, fainted.

It was silent. Everyone looked at each other. So surprise that they could not speak.

Chapter 25 Luck

After a moment, the white bearded old man was the first to put himself back together. He jumped on the stage and examined Chu Yu Wang. His bod was fine. No sign of poison. It appeared that his inside was severely injured by the esper.

He frowned, rose up and looked at Shaw Danon. He was impressed by this youngster. He peered at the black fire stick in Shaw Danon's hand.

"You won." Putting away his uncertainty, the white bearded old man said calmly.

When Chu Yu Wang was about to win, but instead fell after a roar. The scenario was mysterious and unacceptable; however, the result was laying in front of them, they couldn't say anything.

Issa was also stunned. However, after he heard what the old man announced, he ran to the stage to Shaw Danon, as well; hitting him on the shoulder, he chuckled: "Good lad, so you were just hiding your skill!"

Shaw Danon turned, stared at him as cold as frost.

With a pair of cold, dark black eyes!

Issa felt chilled, surprised: "Xiao Fan, what is it?"

Shaw Danon's body shook as he heard this question; it seemed to remind him of something. His eyes softened. The coldness in his eyes also disappeared; returning to normal, except for confusion in his eyes. He replied: "No, nothing. I am alright. What is it?"

Issa stared at him: "You are asking me what? Why don't you ask me as if you don't know that you won this round."

Shaw Danon was surprised: "What? I won? I really won?"

Issa was even more surprised. His face turned pale and immediately put his hand on Shaw Danon's forehead, said: "That's bad. Did your brain get burned by that fire?"

Shaw Danon scratched his head, watched the Sun Rise Peak disciples carry Chu Yu Wang away. Several people glared at Shaw Danon angrily.

In Shaw Danon's mind, the scene of the battle replayed. He looked at his black fire stick. The ugly stick lay in his hand quietly. However, in Shaw Danon's eyes, the fire stick that had been with him for two years became unfamiliar, just like the nightmare the day in the ancient valley.

“Pop.” Issa saw Shaw Danon was lost in thought, used the fan to hit his head, said: “What are you thinking?”

Shaw Danon shook his head, sighed. He putted the fire stick back into his clothes, said: “Nothing. Let’s go. Right, why did you come to see my contest?”

Issa peered at Shaw Danon’s fire stick, said: “Mine hasn’t started yet. I have nothing so I came to watch your fight. I had never expected it could be such great battle. Huh? Today your Monkey Phantasm, what its name-”

Shaw Danon said: “Ashh.”

Issa said: “Right, Ashh. Why I don’t see Ashh today?”

Shaw Danon shook his head: “I didn’t see its figure for the entire morning. Probably hanging around with Big Yella again.”

Issa said: “Aw.” Seemed like he was disappointed. Shaw Danon guess that, although Issa said he came to watch his fight, he actually came to see Ashh.

“Wow!”

From the distance, there was a wave of loud noise. The could hear it clearly, even from far away. In the center of the square, many Jadeon disciples were surrounding the “Qian” platform. Wave after wave of exclamation was issuing from the disciples.

Shaw Danon hadn’t reacted to it, Issa was already stamping his feet: “Damnit,

damn it. I was too concerned about you, forgot the most important thing.” Then he pulled Shaw Danon’s arm and began to run.

Shaw Danon was confused, asked while running: “What is it?”

Issa’s face showed regret: “That is Anan’s contest!”

Shaw Danon smiled, but his heart was also moved by this friend that he only knew for two days. On the deserted platform, he couldn’t see his master, or any of his Shixiongs, except for Issa.

A feeling of warmth, rose in his heart.

“Issa, thank you for coming to see me.”

Issa startled and slowed the pace. He turned and looked at Shaw Danon, smiled: “Hoho, that was nothing. If you want to thank me you can give Ashh-”

“We need to be hurry!”

Issa shook his head. Then followed Shaw Danon, with his mouth murmuring.

※ ※ ※

As they approached nearer, they saw the Jadeon disciples were walking away. They were excited and debating. They looked up at the stage. No one was on the platform; however, it was severely scarred. It appeared that the contest

was already finished.

Issa rolled his eyes, pushed through the crowd with Shaw Danon. Then, he found his target: a group of Peak of Wind disciples.

Issa quickly went near them. The Peak of Wind disciples smiled when they saw it was Issa. The tall man said: “Shidi, didn’t you say you must see Anan’s battle? Why were you not there?”

Issa coughed, said: “I had, um, something to do. Right, hurry; what is the result?”

A man with thick eyebrows said: “No need to ask in order to know. With Aeolian Firmus, even if it is Peak of Widows’ Duwan, he still is no match as her opponent!”

Issa was surprised: “Even Duwan Shixiong loss to her?”

Shaw Danon asked Issa: “Is Duwan Shixiong strong?”

Issa nodded: “Yes. Duwan is one of the most outstanding disciples in the main house. Many people believe that he can win this tournament.”

The tall man shook his head: “That doesn’t matter much. You didn’t see it. The power of Aeolian Firmus is far too strong. The blue light flashed, then a few sounds arose, after that, Duwan Shixiong lost.” Then he paused and sighed: “You may not believe this; however, in the end, Anan still had not pulled Aeolian Firmus out of the sheath.”

Issa was startled, said: “What is the use of having the tournament? Who can stand as her opponent?”

The tall man shook his head: “That is not necessary. A godly weapon like Aeolian Firmus, the power is not much different without the sheath. As for Anan’s cultivation, it is terrific.”

Issa looked at him, said: “Gao Shixiong, how do you know?”

Shaw Danon looked at the tall man, his mind thought that person really lived up to his name (Note 1). Gao Shixiong said: “That’s what I heard from master.”

Issa was surprised: “My dad?”

Gao Shixiong said: “Yes. Before you arrived, master was here. At the end of the battle, he said that she might have already surpassed level eight of Pure Essence, perhaps she is already at level nine.”

Issa was stunned. He couldn’t say anything. Shaw Danon was bewildered. Issa said he did not care about the result of the tournament, but he seemed to be very concerned about it.

A ringing bell sounded in the distance. The Peak of Wind disciples seemed to have a contest. They all went to the direction of the ringing bell. Shaw Danon saw Issa was still standing there. He pulled him.

Issa awakened, then smiled: “It’s all over. Now we have no hope.”

Shaw Danon truly didn't care. He said: "Over is over. Right, why your contest still hasn't begun?"

Issa looked into the distance, said: "It still hasn't begun, yet, but I should go now. Where are you going to go?"

Shaw Danon thought for a moment, then said: "I am going to report to master and Shi niang, even though it's just a lucky win."

Issa nodded: "Come see me if you have time."

Shaw Danon answered, and they said good bye to each other.

Traveling on his way, he could hear many people were discussing the battle between Anan and Duwan. After a long while, Shaw Danon finally found the Bamboo Peak people in the west. He could see the angry face of Tian Bolis from far away. Shaw Danon always feared Tian Bolis, so he quietly walked to the disciples. Tian Bolis saw him. He quickly turned his face away without asking about the contest's result. Surin, Hidi and the other Bamboo Peak disciples were there except for Xavion. Shaw Danon peered at everyone. Hidi was fine, but the others were depressed. Shaw Danon asked Amandla: "Sixth Shixiong, how is it?"

Amandla peered at Tian Bolis, seeing he was not looking in their direction, he whispered: "Except for Da Shixiong, all of our contests are over. Only Xiao Shimei won. Master is mad, now."

Shaw Danon was startled, did not know what to say.

Surin shook her head and sighed, asked Shaw Danon gently: “Xiao Fan, you are back. How is the result?”

Shaw Danon hesitated, said quietly: “Shi niang, I, I won.”

Surin: “Oh, doesn’t matter, it is just a loss. Just pretend this is....” Then her voice became smaller, she looked at Shaw Danon, surprised: “What did you just say?”

Everyone, even Tian Bolis, turned to Shaw Danon. This was the first time Shaw Danon felt proud under the regard of everyone, especially Hidi’s surprised eyes. He looked at Tian Bolis, raised his voice higher and said: “Master, Shi niang, I won.”

They were surprised.

※ ※ ※

They were now at the “Kun” platform, watching Xavion’s battle. On the stage, the “Ten Tigers” sword was like a number of tigers, creating earth-shaking roars. It took full offensive and gained the upper hand over the opponent.

Besides being cheerful, the Bamboo Peak people could not believe what Shaw Danon had told them.

“Xiao Shidi, so you say that in the contest, you were about to lose; however, Chu Yu Wang suddenly became ill, bled and fainted?”

“Yes. Fourth Shixiong, you and second Shixiong, third Shixiong, fifth Shixiong already asked me twenty-two times. Why are you still asking me? Sixth Shixiong, can you please tell them I am speaking the truth.”

Amandla replied: “Xiao Shidi, so you said that during the contest, you were about to lose but that Chu Yu Wang suddenly became ill, bled and fainted?”

Shaw Danon held his head, groaned: “Yes, this is the twenty-third time.”

Hidi said: “Why are you guys forcing him? Xiao Dan wouldn’t lie.” But, then, she still shook her head, said: “But Xiao Fan, your luck is so good. Isn’t it a bit too much? No wonder other people don’t believe you.”

Shaw Danon couldn’t say anything.

Listening to their disciples’ argument, Surin asked Tian Bolis: “What do you think?”

Tian Bolis frowned, asked her back: “If he said he won with his own skill, would you believe it?”

Surin smiled: “This disciple’s luck is not like other people’s normal luck!”

Tian Bolis snorted.

“Bang!” A loud noise. Xavion roared. The brightness of Ten Tigers sword was so powerful that people could not keep their eyes open. The opponent finally collapsed by this mighty strength, flew backwards and spit out blood.

The Bamboo Peak disciples cheered loudly. Tian Bolis’ face finally smiled.

Xavion walked down the stage. He first greeted his master and Shi niang, followed by the warm congratulations of the people.

“Hoho, that was just lucky! Sixth Shidi, don’t say things that are so disgusting! Eh, Xiao Shidi, you are back. What is the result? Didn’t get hurt, right? Aw, look at you. Listen to Da Shixiong, your cultivation is still not deep, there are a lot of chances in the future. Don’t put the result of one battle into your heart. Why are you guys looking at me like that?”

Tian Bolis was the first that walked away. Surin smiled to Xavion, then followed Tian Bolis. Xavion was puzzled, and asked the people: “What is it?”

Hidi told Xavion what happened. Xavion turned to Shaw Danon with an unbelievable look on his face. Shaw Danon curled in a little: “Da Shixiong, I know it’s not good for my luck to be so good; however, this is the truth. I can’t control it.”

Xavion’s eyes widened: “Xiao Shidi, so you said that in the contest, you were about to loss, but that Chu Yu Wang suddenly became ill, bled and fainted?”

Xavion’s eyes widened: “Xiao Shidi, so you say that in the contest, you were about to lose, but that Chu Yu Wang suddenly became ill, bled and fainted?”

Shaw Danon fell on the ground hopelessly.

※ ※ ※

There were only sixteen disciples in the third round of Seven Peaks Tournament. Bamboo Peak had three people in the third round, which was surprising. For the entire day, Tian Bolis had a smile on his face. Disciples were discussing secretly.

Amandla : “Look at Master’s happy face. This time, we are finally able to throw away our shame.”

Wu Dayi : “Da Shixiong and Xiao Shimei really made our master proud.”

He Dazhi: “That is a shame for me. Although Xiao Shimei is still young, she is much better than I. Her future is so bright.”

Zheng Dali: “Don’t forget about Xiao Shidi, he entered the third round, too.”

Amandla: “Let’s gamble again: What is the likelihood for Xiao Shidi to pass this round? Do you guys dare to bet?”

Wu Dayi, He Dazhi, Zheng Dali, Ludaxin: “I bet he loses! Double amount!”

Amandla: “Ahem, eh, where is Da Shixiong? Ah, Xiao Shidi? Xiao Shimei? What the, where did they go?”

He Dazhi thought for a moment, responded: “I am not sure about Xiao Shidi and Xiao Shimei; however, I can guess where Da Shixiong is.”

They looked at each other, then said together: “Bamboo Height’s Baako Shijie!”

Xavion suddenly trembled. Baako was curious: “What happened to you?”

Xavion frowned: “I don’t know. My body just felt a sudden chill.”

Baako peered at him, said: “Aren’t you feeling guilty!”

Xavion immediately shook his head: “No such thing! No such thing!”

Baako’s face softened, but still snorted, said: “Then why did you sneak into Bamboo Height’s girls’ room?”

Laughter came out near him. Xavion looked around embarrassed. The contest was already over. Most of Bamboo Height’s female disciples had already returned. They were all smiling and looking at him with interest. Xavion quickly changed the topic: “Oh, why don’t I see my Xiao Shimei?”

Baako smiled: “Your Xiao Shimei was so pretty and enthusiastic. It is natural that someone asked her out already.”

Xavion was surprised: "What? By whom?"

Baako shook her head and did not continue, instead she said: "If you see your Ling'Er Shimei, best tell her to be careful tomorrow."

Speaking about Hidi, Xavion did not feel embarrassed to talk to Baako. He could speak more freely and with a steady flow. He frowned: "I know Xiao Shimei has a contest with your Bamboo Height's Anan tomorrow; however, our masters have such a good relationship with each other, there shouldn't be any problem. Seven Peaks Tournament is for testing each others' strength, anyway."

Baako looked at him, said: "Your Shi niang Su Shishu does, of course, have a good relationship with my master. My master greatly dislikes your master, though. She still blames your master for stealing our Su Shishu."

Xavion was waiting for Baako to continue; however, Baako looked at the other Bamboo Height disciples, seeing they were all quiet. Xavion was bewildered: "What is it?"

Baako looked at him, hesitated for a moment, then said: "Song Shixiong, Lu Shimei is different from us; however, master really likes her. Once she gets to the stage, we can't say for sure."

Xavion's face changed: "What?"

Baako stopped, didn't say anything.

Note 1: Gao mean tall. So that Peak of Wind Shixiong is Tall Shixiong....

Chapter 26 Self Esteem

“Xiao Fan, didn’t you said you are going to find Ashh and that big yellow dog, why you bring me to the kitchen?” Issa was behind Shaw Danon, kept murmuring while they were entering the kitchen.

The kitchen was much larger than Bamboo Peak’s. It was also brighter. He searched carefully while saying: “I didn’t see them at the morning, so I guess they must be here.”

Issa shrugged his shoulder, said: “Impossible. What do you think Monkey Phantasm is? They are celestial nature. Far holy than the men kind. And you see it as a thief, a greedy thief!”

Then Issa was stunned to see Shaw Danon held Ashh out behind the jar at the corner of the kitchen. Ashh screamed in mid-air. Big Yella came out behind the jar and barked at them.

Shaw Danon looked at Issa. Issa did not know he should laugh or cry.

Shaw Danon held Ashh in his arms, and scolded Big Yella: “Stupid dog, stop barking. You want people to catch us?”

Big Yella understood what he meant, and stopped barking. It looked at Ashh and moaned. Shaw Danon looked around and see everything was fine. It seem like the two thief hadn't steal anything yet. He quickly carried Ashh outside, but then he discovered Big Yella did not follow them. Shaw Danon turned and saw Big Yella took a bone out from the jar.

Shaw Danon glared at Ashh. Ashh grinned with a silly smile on its face. Issa stood next to them, shook his head.

They brought the monkey and the dog sneaked out of the kitchen. If someone discover them, the shameful record will never able to wash away. They relieved when they got far enough.

Shaw Danon said as he gasp for breath: "Right, I still haven't congrate you for wining an other round."

Issa didn't care, his eyes were on Ashh, said: "So what? Going to lose to someone sooner or later. Why Ashh is so dirty? You didn't wash it for days?"

Shaw Danon startled: "Never wash it."

Issa seem about to faint, he hitted himself at the forehead: "You, you, how could you treat it like this!"

Shaw Danon thought that moneky often running around, how can it be clean even if he does wash it. But seeing Issa's heart hurted face, he knew Issa wouldn't listen to any reason. So Shaw Danon changed the subject: "Right, do you know at tomorrow contest, Anan's opponent is my Shijie Hidi?"

Issa startled: "Is your Shijie, the Hidi with Pheonix Soul?"

"Yeah." Shaw Danon patted Ashh: "These two days Anan was really showing off. I am really worry about Shijie."

Issa nodded: "That's right. Anan's "Aeolian Firmus" alone already bad enough."

Shaw Danon began to worry: "Shushu, do you think my Shijie will be in danger? You see Anan had destoried her opponent's sword at the first battle. We also heard the Shixiong from main house was serverely injured at the second battle."

Issa stared at him: "You worry too much. I can see that your Shijie's cultivation is far higher than yours. You better worry about yourself instead. The opponent will get stronger and stronger later on. According to you, you haven't get to Pure Essence's Yu Qing's level three yet. At that time, you will get killed by one blow! Let me hold Ashh."

Shaw Danon hesitated for a moment, then handed Ashh to him. Issa cheerfully held it in his arms. Ashh was not happy it. It "creak creak" screaming.

Shaw Danon sighed: "You are right. Shijie's cultivation is very high. She is also beautiful. So many, so many people like her. How it is suppose for me to worry about her?"

Issa held Ashh tight. His eyes was fixed on Ashh. It was like he will suffer some losses if he doesn't look at Ashh for a second. He said casually: "Its good that

you understand that. You should focus on how to save yourself tomorrow. I am telling you. The opponent you are facing tomorrow is my Peak of Wind Devil Shixiong. His cultivation is definitely can not be compare by Chu Yu Wang. Especially his sword Wu Gou, it is crafted by thousands years old Flame Copper. Very powerful.”

Shaw Danon’s eyebrows touched, said: “Everyone of you have good esper with you. What can I do about it?”

Issa’s eyes was still on Ashh. He was walking away: “Ashh, come with me. I will give you some banana, good? Er, Xiao Fan, what did you said?”

Shaw Danon walked with him, sighed: “I really admire that you can use esper. How does that feel like?”

Issa shrugged: “It just the same. Once you use it long enough, the esper will naturally has some response to you. Then you can use your mind to navigate your esper. It will follow you where ever you go.”

Shaw Danon startled a little, said: “Response, is it like some coolness feeling?”

Issa’s eyes were on Ashh, answered: “Not necessary, depend on your esper’s material.”

Shaw Danon thought for a moment, then shook his head and threw away the idea in his mind, said: “Shushu, the godly weapon like Aeolian Firmus, how did they crafted it. The scene must be magnificent right?”

Issa looked at Shaw Danon, said: “How would I know? It is also the first time I

see the legendary esper.” Then he lowered his head and looked at Ashh. Not care about Ashh’s angry face, he patted its hair. He said: “But about response. I had read it from an ancient book. The esper that can truly connect to cultivator’s heart is not some heavenly, divine esper.”

Shaw Danon surprised: “What is that?”

Issa said: “It is the esper that added owner’s blood while crafting. Use blood to fuse the materials together. The esper will usually has some evil energy and chi. But it is like become part of owner’s body. Although the book say this is Evil way, it usually crafted out some evil esper, not accepted by the Good. But these type of espers can only use by the person with owner’s blood, not like our espers that will surrender to higher cultivated elders!”

Issa stopped, discovered no one was next to him. He turned and saw Shaw Danon stopped. He was lost in thought. His look was weird.

Issa was bewildered: “What it is, Xiao Fan?”

Shaw Danon’s body shocked, he forced himself to smile: “Not, nothing.”

Issa looked him, assumed that he was worrying about the contest. He went to him, smiled and patted his shoulder: “Rest assured. I already talked to Devi Shixiong. Tomorrow contest, he won’t give a hard time and let you lose no so miserable, so your master won’t be mad at you.”

Shaw Danon was still quite absent minded, but nodded: “Oh, thank you.”

They continued walking. Issa was busy looking at Ashh. Shaw Danon’s mind

was filled with thought, didn't say anything. After a while, Ashh could not take Issa any longer, it screamed angrily and scratched Issa's face. Issa thought Ashh was being obedience, so he lowered his guard. This time he couldn't dodge it. Few scratch marks were added on his face, so painful that he let go of Ashh.

Ashh regain freedom. It did not go back to Shaw Danon, instead, it ran swiftly forward. It went on someone that was walking to Ashh.

Shaw Danon startled. A lady was standing there with a red silk around her waist. It was Hidi. Just when he was about to speak, the boiled blood frozen down. Standing next to Hidi, it was a handsome young men. Isn't it Kevern?

Hidi was also surprised. Ashh normally sticked with Shaw Danon. Today it suddenly changed and came to her unexpectedly. She actually like that smart monkey. She patted Ashh and smiled: "Xiao Fan, why you are here?"

Shaw Danon shown no expression. He said quietly: "I am walking with my friend."

Kevern saw Issa, he smiled and folded his hands: "Ceng Shidi, we meet again."

Issa returned the salute, said: "Qi Shixiong, hello."

Hidi looked at time, surprised: "You two know each other?"

Kevern smiled: "Ceng Shidi is beloved son of Peak of Wind's Ceng Shishu. With his family secret teaching, he is very cultivated. He is an opponent that we must watch out for in Seven Peaks Tournament!"

Issa chuckled: "Qi Shixiong your name is shocking in Jadeon. You are the lead of the disciples. How could I dare to do anything!"

Kevern laughed: "Ceng Shidi overpraised me. I don't deserve this title."

Hidi noticed Shaw Danon was a little weird. She went to him, said: "Xiao Fan, what happened?"

Shaw Danon shook his head, said: "Shijie, you know tomorrow your opponent is Anan. You must be careful!"

Hidi smiled, then looked at Kevern. Kevern smiled and did not say anything. Hidi replied him with a smile, then turned to Shaw Danon: "I know. Kevern is highly cultivated and kind. He specially asked me out here to instruct me a few notices that I need to beware of during the contest."

Shaw Danon lowered his head, after a while he said: "Shijie, tomorrow I have a contest with Peak of Wind's Devi Shixiong. I can't cheer for you. You be careful!"

Hidi casually said: "Doesn't matter, Xiao Fan, dad and mom will come watch me. And beside, " She peeked at Kevern: "Qi Shixiong will also come watch my contest. With his advise, I can not lose."

Kevern laughed: "I can't promise that."

Hidi turned her head back and glared at Kevern, but then she chuckled. Her

white skin with faint color of pink, really enchanting.

Issa could clearly see Shaw Danon's eyes darken quickly, but he didn't get mad. Issa couldn't help but frown.

※ ※ ※

Deep in night, the cold moon hanging on the sky.

In Cloud Sea, it's silence. A lonely figure under the cold moon light aimlessly walking, walking.

He walked on the Rainbow Bridge, back to the green pond. The water was as smooth as mirror. It reflected the stars, like they had fell into the water.

A beautiful scene in a fine night, it was so pretty.

But that person appeared not notice that. He was just staring at the water. Seem like he was trying to recall something. After a while, his body trembled. His hands held tight like it was very painful.

Then, he slowly turned his head to the dark woods near the Rainbow Bridge. He slowly walked to there.

The moonlight shone upon Shaw Danon's face, there was a little sadness.

Should he just, forever stood there at the dark corner, quietly watching other people's happiness, while himself tasting his own pain?

Far away, there were sound of foot steps.

Dark, he quietly hiding in the woods.

"So late, what is Head Shixiong summoning us for?" Following the sound, six people appeared. They were the head of the six peaks. Tian Bolis was there. The one who just spoke was Shang Zheng Liang.

Master Vasp Caelo, who was walking in the front, said: " I heard Head Shixiong used Psychic Art on Master Spirit. I am fear he had discovered something, so he ask us to come and discuss."

"Master Spirit" Water Kirin was the Jadeon's guardian spiritual beast. It was very important. No one said anything more. Then, they were getting far away.

After they were gone, Shaw Danon came out from the woods. He looked at the pond. The pond was calm like usual. Master Spirit already slept.

He raise his head and looked at the cold moon. When he was planning to go back, he took the fire stick out from his clothes. What Issa had told him really shocked him. But at that moment, there were no idea in his mind other than Hidi and Kevern standing together.

His heart, alway seem stabbed by a needle. But now, his heart was already

numb. It was all empty. His souls and spirits were seem to be gone.

He slowly held up the fire stick. Under the green surface, he could clearly see the thin, red threads, like blood vessels, spread all over the stick, even on the orb.

Isn't that my blood?

At the moment he heard what Issa told him, he had an impulse in his mind that he wanted to throw away his fire stick. But then Keven and Hidi gave him a much more heavy blow. He could no longer care about the so-called evil item.

"Hmph!" He laughed bitterly, "even if it's evil, it's still a powerful esper. How could I be suitable for such thing. With me, isn't it the ugly fire stick?"

A coldness slowly rose from the fire stick and entered his body, seem like comforting him.

"Esper? Esper?"

Shaw Danon gritted his teeth, "What am I? How could I know how to use esper?" Then, his voice choked. The icy energy seem also surprised by his sadness. The coldness became more active.

Shaw Danon could feel it, but did not worry about it. He pretended it was just the mountain wind blew passed him. He slowly raise head, looked at the fire stick. The scene of him and Hidi went to the ancient valley appeared in his brain. It was like happened in previous life.

The blood vessels of fire stick slowly brighten up with green light. It was responding. Shaw Danon was surprised. He remembered what Issa told him today. An uncontrollable impulse suddenly appeared in his heart.

He closed his eyes.

Instantly, he felt no chill even though the coldness had spread through his entire body. Around him it was silent, but he could hear a roar in deep of his heart, like countless of souls screaming in hell, with the endless grief, rising in his heart.

White bone, flesh blood, screaming, smell of blood!

Shaw Danon opened his eyes, panting. Then, he calmed his breath.

His hands lay flat. His finger formed incanation mark. The black fire stick flight away from his palm. Standing in mid-air, with black gas and green light.

In front of the fire stick, a heathly tree completely withered all the sudden. The leave fell on the ground. It was like its life got taken away by some force.

It was the first time Shaw Danon felt how closely he were with the fire stick. Even the fire stick was stopped in mid-air, he could still feel he is holding it. The familar coldness had never be so strong before. A strange flesh energy was absorbed by the fire stick, and spread through Shaw Danon's body.

At that moment, Shaw Danon heard a low whiz behind him. He turned and

found the water of the pond was no longer calm. It seem like something was surprised. He did not think more and quickly ran away. Ran across the Rainbow Bridge. He did not turned his head. When he finally arrived at Cloud Sea, felt there was nothing strange behind him, he stopped and gasp for breath.

Then, he looked at his black fire stick again. Now, the fire stick was like usual, laying on his hand quietly.

※ ※ ※

The next day, Jadeon Seven Peaks Tournament entered the third round.

Eight platform was exactly enough for sixteen disciples, start the contest at the same time. Shaw Danon was assigned to “Kan” platform, Xavion at “Li”, as for Anan and Hidi’s contest, they were assigned to the largest platform, “Qian”.

According to Shaw Danon’s friend Issa who he met for only three days, the Jadeon’s old men were having problem on assigning platform. But that was no wonder, Anan and Hidi’s battle attracted the most people. Anan and her “Aeolian Firmus”, everytime when she had a contest there would be hundreds of Jadeon disciples crowding around the platform. Bamboo Peak’s Hidi was also well known in Jadeon for her wisdom at young age. She defeated many powerful opponent in the past two days. She was also attractive to many young disciples.

Today the two most outstanding, young female disciples were crossing in battle, elders may felt sorry for them, but the Jadeon disciples already surrounded the Qian platform like a steel bucket.

Xavion and Shaw Danon were standing in front of Tian Bolis. Tian Bolis said to Xavion: “Today your opponent is main house’s Dubaku. He is very hard working and cultivated for long time. Extreemly strong in defenive magic, the opposite of your ‘Ten Tigers’ sword. You need to be careful.”

Xavion said respectfully: “Yes, master.”

Shaw Danon felt this name was familar. He remembered it was Dubaku who lead him and Baye to Crystal Hall five years ago. Thought of that, it reminded him of Baye. He heard his friend had won the second round yesterday, and see as a prodigy, but Shaw Danon did not get the time to congrate him.

Tian Bolis turned to Shaw Danon. Shaw Danon stood there, lowered his head. Tian Bolis frowned, said: “Seventh, you too need to be careful. It doesn’t matter if you lose, just careful not to hurt yourself.”

Shaw Danon’s body shook. No one could see how he felt, he said quietly: “Yes, master.”

Xavion looked at far away, told Tian Bolis: “Master, it’s not early now, Xiao Shidi and I should get going.”

Tian Bolis nodded. Surin smiled: “Look out for everything.”

Xavion answered and walked with Shaw Danon to the outside of the crowd. He had a feeling that this Xiao Shidi was unusual today. He was so quiet unlike normal days. He said to Shaw Danon: “Xiao Shidi, why you did not say anything today, are you nervous?”

Shaw Danon looked at Xavion, forced himself to smile, but didn't answer.

Xavion cheerfully smiled: "Don't think too much, and don't worry about win and lose. Although master and Shi niang really care about reputation, but they will not blame you. Understand?"

"Yes." Shaw Danon answered. His mind thought: They don't have any hope on me anyway, of course they won't blame on me.

Xavion nodded. They finally got out of the crowd. Xavion laughed: "Xiao Shidi, we will need to go different direction. Good luck to you. Hope you win again." Not wait for Shaw Danon to react, he laughed and walked away.

Shaw Danon sighed and walked toward to his platform.

Below "Kan" platform, most Peak of Wind disciples were there. Shaw Danon could see Gao Shixiong and others. Peak of Wind was an important house in Jadeon. It had over two hundreds disciples, after Peak of Widows and Dragon Head Peak. It's appeared that they heard something from Issa. Everyone smiled to Shaw Danon friendly.

But for some reason, Shaw Danon felt the kind smiles were all annoying, like despise to him. He expressionlessly walked onto the stage. Everyone were opposition of him. This time, Issa wasn't here, because he had his own contest too.

Even if he is here, he should cheer for the Shixiong of his own house!

In Shaw Danon's heart, there was an indescribable loneliness. On the top of

the stage, facing so many people's eyes, and yet he had no friend.

Because of what, why, why it is that he always need to face everyone himself, not even able to see a friend!

A sixteen years old youngster, his heart was silently calling. He bit his lip, lowered his head.

The mountain wind passed his face.

"Ding!"

The bell ring from far and near almost rang at the same time. Sounding over the Peak of Widows. Shaw Danon's heart beated. The first idea came to mind is: Hidi Shijie's contest should have already begin. She must not get injured.

Then his heart sorrowed, thought: "She get hurt or not, when does this up to you to care? Not to mention about master and Shi niang are there, even Kevern said he will go there right after he quickly finish his opponent. Heh heh, quickly finish the opponent. Really impressive, really confident, seeing the opponent as nothing-"

As he was thinking, he thought that he was standing on the stage, until his opponent called for the third time: "Zhang Shidi!"

Shaw Danon suddenly awaken. He raise his head and found a Peak of Wind Shixiong was already there in front of him. He was a huge guy, but his face was kind. He saw Shaw Danon was day-dreaming, and his expression was a little strange.

Shaw Danon flushed. The people below the stage laughed.

Devi folded his hands and smiled: "I am Peak of Wind disciple, Devi. Zhang please give some guidance."

Shaw Danon quickly said: "Bamboo Peak disciple Shaw Danon, greeted Peng Shixiong."

After they greeted with each other, Devi smiled, looked at Shaw Danon then said quietly: "Zhang Shidi, Ceng Shidi already told me about you, I-"

Shaw Danon couldn't control himself, said: "Peng Shixiong, please give me all you got."

Devi startled. Then took back his smile, his right hand sliced in front of him. A sword that bright with red glow, was like it was burning by fire, was summoned.

"This sword 'Wu Gou' is crafted with the thousand years old Flame Copper. Zhang Shidi, please." Devi had turned into serious. It was like he is facing equal level opponent.

Shaw Danon could feel the heat from far away. This fire was strong and fiery, very different than Chu Yu Wang's Shaoyang sword's soft warmth.

Shaw Danon's heart beated fast. His body was shaking. But he gritted his

teeth, controlled himself, and took out the black fire stick.

Mean laughter came from below the stage.

Shaw Danon's heart was like stabbed by a needle.

Devi did not laughed. He looked at the black fire stick, said solemnly: "Zhang Shidi, please!"

Shaw Danon looked at this opponent. Behind the burning fire, he was like an ancient fire god. The burning flame cause smoke in the air. He couldn't see his face clearly.

The black, ugly fire stick, slowly left his hand, and let out the green light. Although ugly, although seem weak, it stood in mid-air, facing the unstoppable fire, it and its owner, had no sign of withdraw.

One person, one fire stick, facing the entire world.

The laughter stopped. They all held their breath.

The ball of fire became stronger. No one know what made it burn so vigorous. Even the Peak of Wind disciples could feel the heat. The low cultivation disciples even stepped back. Friend of Issa like Gao Shxiong's face changed. They could see Devi was not going to go easy on him. He was completely going all out.

The fire dragon was getting stronger, covered up most of the stage. Shaw Danon's clothes, and even hair, had sign of burned. He was like in the heated

oven.

And then, that youngster standing there, although felt the pain he was not stepping back. His eyes had fear but also rage. The fire in his heart was like burning in his eyes.

A whistle, the fire dragon pounced, and swallowed the world.

Seem like that moment had frozen the time.

Shaw Danon and the fire stick entered the sea of fire.

The sound of burning fire could be heard from far.

Below the stage, Gao Shixiong and others looked at each others in the eyes. Then, they sighed: “Why it turn out like this!”

Chapter 27 Persist

“Good!”

Below the “Qian” platform, it was like an other world. Everyone were shouting loudly for the two beautiful figure on the stage.

The red light of Phoenix Soul and the blue light of Aeolian Firmus shone the stage like the fairyland. But the most beautiful thing was still the two young ladies on the stage. From the begining to now, it had last already two hours. They still hadn’t able to get the result. Especially Bamboo Peak’s Hidi, she had survived long under Anan’s Aeolian Firmus and still had no sign of losing.

Even the Head of Jadeon Master Doyal Shen was enjoyed by the contest.

Tian Bolis and Surin were worried about Hidi. But seeing Hidi was not in any disadvantage, their hearts were relieved. Tian Bolis noticed Surin’s nervous look, he said softly: “Relax. Ling’Er will be fine.”

Surin turned and looked at her husband and smiled, then turned her attention at the platform once more. Tian Bolis shook his head, then noticed there were some disturbance behind him with the disciples.

He turned his head and looked, even with his high cultivation, he startled by what he saw.

The people were moving out of the way, let out a thin path. Shaw Danon was walking slowly. All his clothes were burned. Smoke even came out from some part of his clothes. On his face, hands, body, many places were burned black. They could see Shaw Danon was walking with great difficulty, it seem like every steps used up all his strength. But he was still stubbornly walking, walking.

Tian Bolis saw his youngest disciple was walking toward him. He said nothing and left his seat with his short, fat body. Surin felt something was wrong. She turned and looked at Tian Bolis. Her face immediately turned pale. She rose up.

At that moment, more people were looking at this way.

Shaw Danon walked to the front of Tian Bolis. Tian Bolis looked at this disciple who he neglected most of the time, looked at his ignorance stubbornness. An unstoppable anger rose in his heart. The anger was so strong, people could hear the anger from his tone even if he tried hard to cover it: "Seventh, which guy hurted you like this, victory is not enough for him?"

Surin was surprised that Tian Bolis truly got mad because of his young disciple. She pulled Tian Bolis sleeve, but her eyes landed on Shaw Danon again.

The Bamboo Peak disciples were too shocked to help Shaw Danon.

On the stage, Anan and Hidi were battling. The espers were flying around.

Shaw Danon looked at the stage, then to his master. He saw his master angry face, there seem to be an unnoticable loving care in his face.

He used his remaining strength to shake his head, said quiet: "No, master, I won."

Then his head felt dizzy. The sky seem darken instantly. He fell on the ground and fainted.

Shaw Danon fell on the ground, unconscious. But the words Shaw Danon said before he fell had shocked Tian Bolis as well as other Bamboo Peak disciples. After a moment, they lifted up Shaw Danon's back.

Tian Bolis closely examined Shaw Danon. His body was burned by fire, but his inter organs were all right. He seem fainted due to tiredness. Tian Bolis did not know what happened in Shaw Danon's contest. He noticed many people were looking them. He did not want to stand there and watched by others. He carried Shaw Danon, said to Surin quietly: "I bring seventh back first. You stay there and watch Ling'Er."

Surin frowned, still nodded still. Looking Shaw Danon, she couldn't hide her anxiousness any longer. The Bamboo Peak disciples circled them. Amandla said: "Master, let me come with you."

Tian Bolis shook his head, said: "No need."

Even Master Doyal Shen was attracted. He said: "Tian Shidi, he is your disciple. What happened?"

Tian Bolis said: “His skills isn’t good enough and get some light injury. I will bring him back and cure him. Please excuse me.”

Master Doyal Shen nodded then he turned back to the amazing battle. A while after Tian Bolis carried Shaw Danon, the disturbance was soon calmed down, the disciples were enchanted by the two beauties once again. Only small amount disciples at the outer layer of the crowd noticed a group of Peak of Wind disciples, most with ghastly pale on their face, were gathering at the platform far away.

If Shaw Danon is here, he would know that platform is where Issa contest take place.

※ ※ ※

In netherworld, hall of Yama, there were fire everywhere, burning the crying people. The blood were stink and disgusting. Shaw Danon felt the sky was spinning. At that instant, he was back to the peaceful village many years ago.

A thunder. The dark clouds covered the mountain. Just in the blink of the eyes, the kind villagers became dead bodies. The peaceful village became a hell.

“No!”

He shouted as hard as he could. His muscles were tensed. His heart was like stabbed. Pain came out from his chest. His body trembled and woke up.

“Ah, he wake up. Xiao Fan had woke up.” The familiar voice that was engraved in his heart was the first came to him. The voice contained some anxious and

relieve. Shaw Danon opened his eyes and saw Hidi.

It was like, back to the time long ago. She was in all red dress with Phoenix Soul around her waist. Her beautiful hair falling hanging down smoothly around her neck. Shaw Danon could see his reflection in Hidi's bright eyes.

Shijie! A cry from the deep of his heart.

Shaw Danon looked at her. His eyes did not blink. How great it is if this moment become an eternity!

In the room, everyone gathered around him. Tian Bolis took his pulse, nodded: "Good. No problem now."

Everyone relieved and released a smile.

Shaw Danon saw everyone was here. He was laying on the bed while the disciples were standing, Tian Bolis and Surin were sitting on the chairs in front of the bed.

"What, what happened?"

Hidi smiled: "Are you forget already? You fainted after the contest between you and Peak of Wind's Devi. It scared everyone. Lucky nothing serious."

Shaw Danon moved his body. Except for some tiredness, and the pain in his chest, every parts of his body were alright. He surprised: "How can this be? Aren't my body-"

Tian Bolis cutted in: "The burns are just skin injuries, I used the Jadeon's special ointment to cure it. Your body only received one damaging hit on the chest, but the bones did not get dislocated. It should be fine after few days of rest."

Surin smiled, said: "Xiao Fan, you should thank your master for it. If not because of him cured you, just your burns alone will taks more than half year to recover."

Shaw Danon said quietly, with undescribable gratefulness: "Disciple is useless, bothered master."

Tian Bolis snorted. His face turned cold: "How are you useless? The best in the Bamboo Peak is now you!"

Shaw Danon was surprised, he did not know what Tian Bolis meant. He said: "Master, I, no, like Shijie, ah, and also Da Shixiong and other Shixions are far ahead of me, I can not..." Then his voice got quiet. He noticed the Shixions and Hidi's faces were weird. Especially Da Shixiong. He looked very pale, no like his usual energetic. Now he looked like he was about to fall down.

Surin sighed, said: "Daxin, bring a chair for your Da Shixiong."

Ludaxin quickly answered and brought a chair for Xavion. Xavion wanted to refuse, but then his body couldn't hold out, and sat down, panting.

Shaw Danon was stunned: "Da Shixiong, what happened to you?"

Xavion smiled bitterly, did not reply, while He Dazhi said: "Xiao Shidi, now Seven Peaks Tournament is at fourth round, our Bamboo Peak only has you remain." Then he looked at others.

Shaw Danon then realized, looked at Hidi, said: "Shijie, you also-"

Hidi's face darken, said quietly: "I lost too."

Shaw Danon looked at her disappointment in her eyes. His heart was hurt. But now it was not the time for him to think about something else.

Tian Bolis looked closely at Shaw Danon, said: "Seventh."

Shaw Danon's heart beated. He could hear the anger in Tian Bolis voice. He began to has a little fear: "Yes, master, what-"

Not waited for him to finish, Tian Bolis asked: "Your cultivation, where you learned it?"

A huge ring in his brain. He opened his mouth but did not know what to say. He looked at everyone in the room. The familiar kind Shixions remained silent, looked at him with doubt.

But that was expected, the Xiao Shijie who was used to be dumb suddenly became surprisingly strong, no one could accept that within such short time.

Under aggressive eyes of Tian Bolis, Shaw Danon sweated hard on his forehead. He almost told his master that he was practicing other faction's martial art.

He was no longer the ignorant child five years ago. From daily conversation between his Shixions, he already knew about the famous Skysong temple, and also old monk Pozhi's true identity. For the past years, Shaw Danon had practiced "Fawin Wisdom", the gratefulness in his heart had not lighten.

"I, no, disciple is dumb. These years the cultivation did not have much improvement." Shaw Danon lowered his head, avoided Tian Bolis's eyes. He said slowly: "Few days ago, disciple suddenly able to drive some objects. Disciple himself couldn't believe it, so, so did not report to master, did not expect-"

Tian Bolis laughed coldly: "Did not expect became famous from one battle!"

Shaw Danon immediately said: "No, not like that, master-"

Tian Bolis was not that easy to lie to, he said coldly: "You said you can drive some objects, but this need to be at least Yu Qing stage level four to accomplish. I asked Daren, he only taught you the level two incanation. Can you tell this ignorant master how did you skipped level three cultivation and got to level four?" At the end, his voice remain cold, with some fury. Everyone's faces changed.

Shaw Danon did not say anything. The room was silent.

Tian Bolis's face became worse and worse. Everyone was getting more

anxious. Shaw Danon quietly got up. Though he was tired, he still got off his bed. In front of everyone, in front of Hidi, he knelt down before Tian Bolis.

Tian Bolis said coldly: "What?"

Shaw Danon lowered his head, looked at the ground, did not look at anyone he said quietly: "Master, please punish me."

Tian Bolis got even more mad. Surin frowned: "Xiao Fan, if you have any reason, just tell your master. Why make it like this?"

Tian Bolis laughed coldly: "Good, good, good! You are a hard bone. I have a good disciple!"

Shaw Danon trembled. He did not know how he felt. It seemed like there was also another person, the breath became faster. He said quietly: "It is all disciple's fault. Master please punish me!"

Tian Bolis suddenly rose up. The chair he sat on fell apart. He said angrily to Shaw Danon: "It's all your fault, heh heh, you know it is a great forbidden in Jadeon to learn behind master's back. The punishment is from imprisonment for several decades to destroy all cultivation and expel out of Jadeon, you know that?"

Shaw Danon lifted his head and looked at Tian Bolis. He saw his master's face was filled with anger, he wasn't joking. His heart sank.

"Why it turn out like this?" His mind said. Hidi didn't tell him that when she gave him the incarnation.

But still, he did not turn back.

The room was dead quiet. No one said anything.

The only sound left was the panting of people.

A person's heart, in this silent, had quietly, coldly frozen. Shaw Danon closed his eyes, lowered his head again. It was like he is taking his final step in his life:

"Disciple dishonor, master please punish!"

"Beng!" A great force hit him. Shaw Danon flight back and hit against the wall. He fell on the ground. Large amount of blood spitted out.

Xavion knelt down. Other disciples followed, said: "Master, please forgive Xiao Shidi!"

Xavion said: "Master, I, (Coughed), I, It's me who did not teach him well and let him do such thing. It's all my fault. Please forgive Xiao Shidi!"

While everyone was whining, Hidi did not move and stood there, stunned, and watched Shaw Danon struggling. His body was covered with blood and his face was pale.

Tian Bolis looked at the disciples and Shaw Danon. The anger was still on his face. He snorted then left. Surin looked at them, sighed and shook her head, said to Xavion and others: "You all can stand up." She looked at Shaw Danon,

then said: “You guys take care of Xiao Fan, I will go see your master.”

Xavion and others quickly answered: “Yes.”

Surin sighed again, then left.

The people looked at each other. After a while, Hidi walked slowly, and helped Shaw Danon. Bubbles came out from Shaw Danon’s mouth. Laying in her arms, Shaw Danon smiled.

At that moment, a drop of tear fell on Shaw Danon’s blood stained face.

※ ※ ※

It was dark night now. In Cloud Sea, the cloud vapor still floating around, like the fairyland.

Tian Bolis stood at the square, looked at the sky.

The night sky was filled with countless of stars. The moon was cold as frost.

Behind him, a familiar footstep came. Surin went by his side, looked at the stars with him, smiled: “Feeling better?”

Tian Bolis snorted, didn’t say anything.

Surin smiled: "You can fool Daren, Ling'Er and others, but you can not fool me. That swing is probably intentionally shock Xiao Fan's blood vessels near his heart, so the congested blood can get out from his body, right?"

Tian Bolis looked at the night sky, still remain silent.

Surin shook her head, said: "Already hundreds years old, and still care so much about reputation!"

Tian Bolis turned, glared at his wife, said: "You saw that. That brat was like, 'Master, please punish me!'" Tian Bolis mocked Shaw Danon's tone, said angrily: "It's clearly his fault, and still act like he got treated wrong, make it like I, the master, is abusing him, forcing him isn't it? Out raneous!"

Surin turned around and looked at the dormitories, said: "You think I will believe you did not see that?"

Tian Bolis said: "What?"

Surin said: "Ling'Er was acting strangely. Don't you think?"

Tian Bolis snorted.

Surin smiled: "You also see that. Xiao Fan had never left Bamboo Peak for five years, the only possibility is that our disciples taught him. Ling'Er always being nice to Xiao Fan. She is also spoiled by us, she would dare to secretly pass them level three incantation. If isn't because she felt guilty, with her normal behavior,

she would already help Xiao Fan. And yet this time she said nothing? Who could that be if isn't her?"

Tian Bolis seem to have expected his wife to say so. He did not seem surprised, but he still looked angry, unwillingly said: "Even if it's Ling'Er's fault, look at that Shaw Danon talk back to me and not telling anything, damn it!"

Surin chuckled, patted her husband's shoulder, scolded: "Aren't you the same? And you still blame on a child. And beside, Xiao Fan did that for Ling'Er, this intention is hard to get!"

Tian Bolis rolled his eyes, didn't say anything.

Surin looked at him, said: "What are you going to do once you are back to Bamboo Peak? Learn behind master's back is great crime. For Ling'Er, let's not punish him too hard, just lock him up in back mountain for thirty or fifty years."

Tian Bolis startled, snorted, said: "Hardly our house finally got a, got a crazy geek. Doesn't that let Vasp Caelo, Shang Zheng Liang get away too easily. Don't think about it. Tomorrow don't worry about life or death, just let him continue the contest.

Surin held her husband's hand, smiled: "I know you are soft hearted."

Tian Bolis blushed, but quickly went back to normal. He peered around, said: "We are old couple now, you don't think people will tease us?"

Surin looked at him, said: "What, you become scare now since you are the head of the house? Three hundreds years ago, also at Peak of Widows, didn't

you went into my place at dark before Seven Peaks Tournament. That time my Master Zhen Yu and Shijie Shui Yue were nearby. I did not see you scare!”

Tian Bolis giggled: “Your Master Zhen Yu was already six hundreds years old. She is already an old fool. I don’t fear her; as for your vicious Shijie, I already hated her. It’s fine for her to be alone for the entire life, but she wanted to keep you with her. I hated her so much already, when did I ever fear her!”

Surin glared at him: “Don’t say bad thing about my master and Shijie, they meant a lot to me.”

Tian Bolis shrugged, didn’t say anything. Under the moon light, his eyes said: no matter how good they are to you, you still married me in the end.

Surin couldn’t help but scolded: “Silly minded.”

Tian Bolis was in a very good mood, he held his wife’s hand, walking slowly in the Cloud Sea.

“Right, I forgot an important thing.”

“What?”

“That brat could use a fire stick as esper. I was too busy to be angry and forgot to take a look at it.”

“Xiao Fan was secretly practicing cultivation. He probably doesn’t know much about controlling esper. I think you need to find a time to give him some

instruction on?”

“Huh, let’s talk about it later. Last night Head Shixiong summoned all heads to him. He said after using Psychic Art and talked to Master Spirit, he discovered Master Spirit’s odd behavior was due to some evil spirit, later it couldn’t find it.”

“What are we going to do?”

“What can be done about it, Master Spirit couldn’t find it. Master Spirit lived for six thousands years already. Your master became a fool after living for six hundreds years, it’s not unusual if Master Spirit became a fool!”

“.....”

Chapter 28 Top Four

Next day, the sun rose like usual. Bamboo Peak people arrived at the square. Four of the platforms were gone, leaving four platforms in the four directions.

Tian Bolis and Surin walked in the front. Shaw Danon's wound seem recovered over night. He walked between the disciples. Suddenly everyone valued him, and it surprised him. He turned his head back and asked Amandla: "Sixth Shixiong, is Da Shixiong's injury really bad that he couldn't even walk?"

Amandla shook his head: "Master had visited Da Shixiong his morning. He said that the battle between him and Dubaku was too intense. One all offensive while one all defensive. It end up either side win. It might damaged his cultivation."

Shaw Danon was surprised: "Even Da Shixiong can not beat him, is that, is that mean I am going to lose miserably?"

Amandla rolled his eyes, said: "If it is following common sense that is. But because of common sense, all of your Shixions had bet you lose for the pass two days!"

Shaw Danon couldn't find a word to say, closed his mouth.

The platform at the north was extremely crowded. It was Anan's contest no doubt. Tian Bolis snorted as he looked at that platform. He did not have any good impression to the person who defeated his daughter. He lead his disciples to the platform at west.

After a few steps, Shaw Danon's body shocked. He saw the group of people were coming to their direction. An old men was leading them. The person who was next to the old men was Issa. Behind them were about a hundred Peak of Wind disciples. Shaw Danon saw Gao Shixiong and others, but he did not see Devi.

Like noticed Shaw Danon's eyes, Issa said as their shoulders passed: "Peng Shixiong did not come, he is resting in his room!"

Shaw Danon managed to smile. But he saw Issa's face was solemn, his eyes were cold.

The leading old men was Peak of Wind disciple Ceng Shu Chang. He looked at Shaw Danon. Shaw Danon felt that old men's eyes were not shape, but it seem able to look into his deepest heart.

He curled in a bit. Tian Bolis said: "Hello Ceng Shixiong."

Ceng Shu Chang replied: "Hello Tian Shidi. I heard your house have a prodigy name Shaw Danon. His cultivation was unique and almost killed my useless disciple Devi in yesterday contest."

Shaw Danon was surprised: “What? Peng Shixiong was hurted that badly?”

The Peak of Wind disciples were discussing of how that person malicious is. Injured someone and pretended to be surprised, showing himself was unintentional or insult Devi.

Anger flashed in Ceng Shu Chang’s eyes. But he could not release it in front of younger generation. He smiled coldly, said: “Tian Shidi, you had cultivated a good disciple!”

Tian Bolis was frowned and thought Shaw Danon was a bad speaker. But after he heard what Ceng Shu Chang said and noticed the sarcasm within, he immediately smiled: “You flattered me Ceng Shixiong. Xiao Fan, come and greet Ceng Shishu.”

Shaw Danon startled. Ceng Shu Chang waved his sleeve, said coldly: “No need.” then walked away.

Issa looked at Shaw Danon said: “I did not see you are actually hiding your strength all along. I asked Peng Shixiong to go easy on you, did not expect this actually caused trouble for him.”

Shaw Danon said quickly: “I did not-”

He hadn’t finish, Issa already walked away. The Peak of Wind people followed. Everyone’s eyes were icy cold. But when he looked at Gao Shixiong, Gao Shixiong winked to him.

He startled, but Gao Shixiong already walked away.

Tian Bolis peered at the Peak of Wind people. He smiled coldly, then he waved his hand and lead the people to the west platform for today contest. As they got near, they discovered there were about two hundreds people had gathered. It seem like beside Anan's platform, the most crowded place in Cloud Sea was here.

Shaw Danon was amazed, asked the Shixions: "So many people. That Dubaku Shixiong is surely strong?"

They laughed. He Dazhi said: "Chang Shixiong cultivation is high for sure. But I think they come here to see you most likely, Xiao Shidi!"

Shaw Danon was surprised: "How, how's that?"

He Dazhi chuckled: "Until now, only eight people remain in the Seven Peaks Tournament. The largest black horse is you. Who doesn't want to come see how many mouth or arms you got?"

Shaw Danon was muted.

Tian Bolis lead them to the platform. The people moved out of the way when they saw it was the Bamboo Peak. Many disciples were from Peak of Widows. Because Dubaku had a contest today, most disciples from main house were here. But there were not many elders from main house, even Master Doyal Shen was not here.

Tian Bolis frowned, asked Surin: "Head Shixiong is not here, is there anyone from main house has today?"

Surin shook her head, said: “No. For some reason, the disciples’ quality of main house this year are not that good. Only Dubaku remain now.”

Tian Bolis pondered, then walked to the six chairs located right below the stage. Only a white beard old men sat there. He rose up as he saw Tian Bolis arrived.

Shaw Danon startled. It was the white beard old men in the contest between him and Chu Yu Wang.

The white beard old men seem also remembered him. His eyes landed on Shaw Danon for a moment then turned to Tian Bolis: “Tian Shixiong, I can never imagin your house have such prodigy this year.”

Tian Bolis seem have good relationship with this senior, he smiled, said: “Tera Shixiong overpraise me. Please sit.”

The bell rang. Tian Bolis turned to Shaw Danon, said: “Seventh, go up there.”

Hundreds of eyes landed on Shaw Danon at that instant. Shaw Danon had never being stared by that many people before. He flushed, answered: “Yes.” Then he walked to the stage without looking back.

But then he was pulled by Surin. Shaw Danon was surprised: “Shi niang, what it is?”

Surin smiled, said with loving care: “Does your body still hurt?”

Shaw Danon shook his head: “Master himself had cured me, it’s almost recovered.”

Surin shook her head also, said: “Outside is easy to be recover but the inside is hard. Xiao Fan, Dubaku you are facing isn’t a common opponent, even your Da Shixiong loss to him. Though according to your Da Shixiong, Dubaku was also severely injured after he won, but with your cultivation you still couldn’t I am afraid. Just give up when you can’t hold out. Don’t take risk and get injure, understand?”

Shaw Danon didn’t nod, but murmured: “Master will be mad.”

Surin shook her head smiling: “Silly child, just go. Your master worry so much about you.”

Shaw Danon immediately turned and looked at Tian Bolis, and saw Tian Bolis was chatting with the white beard old men. He did not look at him.

Surin patted his head, said: “Go.”

Shaw Danon walked slowly onto the stage. He stood there with what Surin just said: “Your master worry so much about you!”

Since he was young, Tian Bolis was no different than god in his mind. Although Tian Bolis did not treat Shaw Danon well, to get his master’s approval

was Shaw Danon's greatest wish.

And now, heard what Surin suddenly said, he could not believe it.

The people below the stage began to feel not right. After a while, even Shaw Danon felt something was wrong: his opponent still hadn't arrive yet.

The disciples from main house was worrying. They kept looking around. At that moment, a main house disciple was running toward them. He rushed to the white beard old men and whispered to him.

The white beard old men couldn't believe what he had heard, asked: "Really?"

That disciple looked at the stage, and finally nodded. The white beard old men's face turned pale, fell back into the chair. Tian Bolis was puzzled, asked: "Tera Shixiong, what happened?"

The white beard old men looked at him weakly. He sighed and pulled himself back together, rose up and announced: "Main house disciple Dubaku, due to the injuries yesterday contest, he give up today contest."

It was silent.

After a moment, the crowd rose into an uproar! Though the Jadeon disciples were cultivators, many of them cursed. As for the Bamboo Peak people, the first reaction of them was not cheer, but a weird look. They looked at each other for a while, then smiled bitterly.

Tian Bolis and Surin slowly rose up, staring at their young disciple on the stage. Surin smiled, said quietly to Tian Bolis: "I already said it. This small disciple's luck is not common."

Tian Bolis couldn't say anything, but bitterly smiled.

That day, it seem like everyone wanted to look at Shaw Danon like he was a precious beast. At the same time, the contest result came out. Shaw Danon was "fortunate" to be able to list into the semi-final along with Kevern, Anan, and Issa.

Many people already expected Kevern to win the tournament. Anan was also extreamly popular for the past few days. But Issa and Shaw Danon entered semi-final was out of many Jadeon's elders' expectation. Issa was known for being Ceng Shu Chang's only son. Though many people of Peak of Wind knew Issa was very talented, but he was not well known in Jadeon. During the contest, he defeated many opponents with his flawless magic skills, amazed many people. In comparison, Shaw Danon was seem out of spot within the four people.

On the stage, the four people stood shoulders to shoulders. The Head of the faction Master Doyal Shen and Head of Dragon Head Peak Master Vasp Caelo stood in front of them. Master Doyal Shen had a smile on his face, could not see any unsatisfy for none of his disciples remain in Seven Peaks Tournament.

Below the stage, near thousand disciples were gathered. All the Jadeon's elders were sitting in the front. Surin looked at the stage, whispered to Tian Bolis: "Xiao Fan seem a bit nervous!"

Tian Bolis snorted, did not say anything. How could he not see what his wife was able to see. On the the stage, Kevern was cool and calm; Anan was cold as frost; Issa was smiling; only Shaw Danon was standing there, looking at the ground, both hands did not know where to put.

Master Doyal Shen looked at the four people. He smiled, turned to the disciples below the stage: “Everyone, the Seven Peaks Tournament had selected the our top four disciples. Their talent surpass many people, amazing cultivation. They are our Jadeon’s elite, burden with the future of Jadeon clan-” Suddenly someone below the stage laughed. Then, Jadeon disciples burst into laughter.

Master Doyal Shen frowned, peered at Shaw Danon who was the youngest out of the four. He shook his head. The laughter continued, the solemn situation turned into clownery. Master Vasp Caelo stepped forward. His eyes were like blade, sweep across the crowd.

The laughter instantly extinguished. It soon returned to silent. Vasp Caelo had in charge of Jadeon’s punishment for years. The disciples feared him more than Master Doyal Shen.

Wait until it returned to absolute silent, Master Vasp Caelo stepped back, said to Master Doyal Shen: “Head Shixiong, please.”

Master Doyal Shen smiled: “I don’t have much to say, Vasp Caelo Shidi, you go.”

Master Vasp Caelo nodded, announced: “Tomorrow contest, Dragon Head Peak Kevern verse Peak of Wind Issa, Bamboo Height Anan verse Bamboo Peak Shaw Danon....”

Master Vasp Caelo kept on talking. Everyone eyes turned to him. Shaw Danon could finally relax. Many people were looking at him, so he almost could not breathe.

“Why you sweat so much?” Suddenly, Issa asked quietly.

Shaw Danon was surprised. After he defeated Devi yesterday, Issa was being cold to him. He did not expect Issa would talk to him. Though they only knew each other for three days, Shaw Danon had see Issa as his friend.

He looked at Issa, and saw he was standing there looking forward, smiling to the disciples below the stage. It was like he had never spoken to Shaw Danon.

“Idiot, don’t turn your head.” Issa’s face did not change, only the corner of his lips moved: “You had made my dad to scold me half dead!”

Shaw Danon immediately turned his head away, whispered: “Sorry, I was, was, ai, is Peng Shixiong alright?”

“Although Peng Shixiong is heavily injured, but its not too bad. He will recover after few days, or else why I am not make you to pay back? But I can never expect you are really hiding your strength.”

“No, alas, I did not know what happened. I think it must be Peng Shixiong went easy on me, and my head was burned so-”

“I asked Peng Shixiong, though he lost, he praised a lot about you. He said he

had gave all he got, did not go easy. So you don't need to worry about it."

Shaw Danon surprised again, then he asked: "Then about your dad scolded you-"

"Huh, that is because Gao Shixiong and his idiots were having a big mouth, told my dad about me asking Peng Shixiong to go easy on you. Peng Shixiong was trying to help me, but dad scolded me, other wise I won't pretend to be like this in front of people."

"Shushu, I am really sorry."

"That was nothing. Don't mention it. I got scolded all the time when I was young anyway. But you bastard need to be careful tomorrow. Next battle is against Bamboo Height's icy beauty. Careful not to get killed by 'Aeolian Firmus'!"

Shaw Danon said sadly: "I know that too. It will be great if the contest place me against you-" Then he stopped. He and Issa felt a frozen chill. They turned and saw Anan's cold eyes were on them.

Shaw Danon was stupefied. Issa gasped. They stopped talking and pretended listening Master Vasp Caelo's reminder.

After Master Vasp Caelo finished, the disciples were dismissed, prepared for tomorrow climax of the tournament. Shaw Danon and Issa walked down the stage, they could feel the chill on their back. They wondered is Anan came from northen ice plain. Their hearts were frozen just from one stare.

Just when he wanted to say good bye to Issa, he said Issa changed his face, looked at him contemptuously and snorted, walked away. Surrounded by Peak of Wind disciples, Issa's father was looking at them.

Shaw Danon smiled bitterly, then turned and walked to the Bamboo Peak people. Tian Bolis looked at him, said: "Let us return." Then he looked at Hidi, said: "Ling'Er, come with me, your mother and I want to speak with you."

Hidi answered and smiled to Shaw Danon before she left.

They returned to the dormitory. Once they were back to the room, Wu Dayi and others quickly told Xavion the good news. Ludaxin held up Shaw Danon and laughed. Only Amandla kept shaking his head, said: "God has no ears or eyes!"

Chapter 29 Supreme Art

The night returned.

Shaw Danon couldn't go to sleep. Even Ashh's eyes were also opened, looked at him. Other Shixions were already snoring. Big Yella also felt asleep.

Moonlight was like water, came in from the window. It landed on the ground like snow.

Shaw Danon quietly got up, Ashh immediately jumped into his arms. Shaw Danon carried it, patted its head, and walked outside.

Not a sound at the corridor. It was silent.

He smiled bitterly. Since he arrived at Peak of Widows, he never had a good sleep. Thinking of the contest tomorrow against Anan, there was still an undescrivable nervous in his heart.

In his arms, Ashh uneasily moved. Shaw Danon looked at it, and found its eyes were staring at the shadow in front.

In the dark, a figure passed by.

Shaw Danon followed it.

The figure did not ran fast. The shoulders kept shrugging, it was like that person was crying. Shaw Danon could recongize that person was Hidi. He was puzzled, but seeing his Shijie was crying, a pain was in his heart.

Hidi went to the Cloud Sea, arrived near the central platform. Seeing no one was nearby, she couldn't hold it anymore, fell on ground and let out the cry.

Shaw Danon had never see his Shijie was so sad before. He went to her side, said quietly: "Shijie, you-"

Hidi was surprised. She jumped up and turned around. She was relieved to see it was Shaw Danon. Then her heart soured, couldn't help but threw herself on Shaw Danon, cried on his shoulder.

Shaw Danon's body was petrified, couldn't move.

Her sound of sob was next to Shaw Danon's ear. He could feel the warmness from her body. It was like his dream had came true. A faint delicate fragrance came.

Shaw Danon stood there, looking far away. Even though he really wanted to hold that lady, but he did not.

Perhaps, truly embarrass you, the life will be different?

Hidi left his shoulder. Shaw Danon's heart became empty, like he had lost something.

His shoulder was wet with tears.

Hidi rubbed her eyes, looked at Shaw Danon's shoulder, said: "Sorry, Xiao Fan."

Shaw Danon shook his head, said: "Shijie, what happened to you?"

Just when Hidi was about to speak, "creak creak" sound came near their feet. They looked down and saw Ashh. She bended down and held Ashh.

"It had never ever been like this, Xiao Fan, never ever." That lady stand in the moonlight under the darkness of night. Sad and beautiful. She said to Shaw Danon with some grieve: "Dad and mom had never scold me like this before."

Seeing this beauty within the sorrow, Shaw Danon's heart was like teared apart, like all her sadness was brought by him. He forced himself to remain calm, he asked gently: "Shijie, what happened? Why Master and Shi niang scolded you?"

Hidi hesitated, looked at Shaw Danon. Since young, this Xiao Shidi was her closest playmate beside her parents. In her mind, she thought of an idea: When did Xiao Fan Shidi became so gentle to me?

But this idea was only just a flash and passed by. Her heart was filled with grieve at that moment, she cried to Shaw Danon: “Isn’t it all because of brother Kevern!”

Shaw Danon’s face instantly became pale. He held his fists tight, so tight that his nails went into his palms.

“You still don’t know it?” Hidi was no longer aware of Shaw Danon, but in Shaw Danon’s heart, he was shouting wildly: “I know, I know, I already know it!”

The moon coldly shone upon this earth.

“Kevern Shixiong and I in love with each other. I told them, I am really really in love with him.” Hidi calmed down a little, but hadn’t discover, each time she spoke, Shaw Danon became more pale.

“But dad scolded me loudly, said I am ignorance. Even my mom who always love me stood on dad’s side. Why it is like this, Xiao Fan?”

Shaw Danon lowered his head, did not want Hidi to see his face. He said quietly: “How did Master and Shi niang know?”

Hidi did not discovered something was wrong about Shaw Danon. She almost cried again: “I could never expect this. I found it out later. Bamboo Height’s Baako Shijie told this to Shui Yue Shishu. Shui Yue Shishu told my mom. I reminded Baako Shijie so many times not to tell anyone about this, but she still let it out. I, I-”

A drop of tear came out from her eyes.

Shaw Danon said sadly: "Perhaps master and Shi niang are doing it for you own good. They are your parents, they won't be bad to you!"

Hidi dried out her tears, said loudly: "What do they know! They only know the difference of houses! They only know brother Kevern is head of Dragon Head Peak Master Vasp Caelo's favor! They only know if people know I am with brother Kevern they will be ashamed in Jadeon! They had never think of me."

She said with anger and definite: "Those reputation compare to my happiness, what are they? I really doubt they care about reputation or their daughter?"

Shaw Danon lifted his head, looked at this unfamiliar Shijie.

How sad are these eyes!

Like a small bird without its parents in the storm. How weak. Sorrow with panic had stabbed his soul like a blade.

Shaw Danon seem immediately defeated by these eyes. A sadness that had never happened before, rose up in his heart. If he could help this lady to carry her pain, no mater how difficult it is he will carry it. But he did not know what to say, all he said was: "Shijie!"

"I need to be with him," Hidi said certainly. Instead to say it was to Shaw

Danon, rather to say this was for her heart, for Tian Bolis and Surin who were not here, “I must stay with brother Kevern. We had made a vow, no matter how hard my parents disapprove, even wait until the sea dry up, the stone rotten, we will still be together.”

She looked at the night sky, swore to the bright moon. The moonlight quietly shone upon her. Her beauty was like the grieve lily bloomed at night, completely ignored the heart dead shadow standing next to her.

※ ※ ※

Standing on the stage, the sun of early dawn shone upon Shaw Danon. Warmed his body but not his heart. He stood there expressionless facing the fairy like Anan.

The frost lady’s scorn was so obvious. In the square, everyone knew Shaw Danon mostly rely on luck instead of strength to get to semi-final.

Behind her, Aeolian Firmus was glowing with blue light. Shaw Danon looked at this legendary item, he thought lightly: After a while, is it what he is going to face?

Then, he totally forgot this question. Since last night, his mind was going up and down.

In Cloud Sea, only two platform left. If talk about numbers of disciples watching, the people who were watching Kevern and Issa at west was not even one-third of the people here. Almost everyone was drew by the most popular Anan and the luckest Shaw Danon. As for the elders, most were sitting below

this platform include Master Doyal Shen.

But, after everyone cheered when Anan arrived on the stage, they were discussing how fast Shaw Danon would lose, in the blink of the eyes or in a second.

Below the stage, Tian Bolis frowned. He knew the level of cultivation Shaw Danon is at. But with all the disdain behind him, it made him very uncomfortable. Surin who was sitting next to him was looking around, searching for Hidi. After the argument last night, Hidi went away crying. With her understanding of her daughter, she was afraid Hidi went to watch Kevern's contest.

She shook her head. Although she really loved her only daughter, but this time she completely stood on her husband's side. She always thought the people from Dragon Head Peak were not that good.

She turned and looked at the stage. At the same time, Shaw Danon also turned and looked at them. Their eyes met. Shaw Danon did not see the person he was looking for. He turned away quietly.

Surin frowned, said to Tian Bolis: "Xiao Fan look a bit strange today. Like half dead."

Tian Bolis said lightly: "He is only nervous. Child never face such great situation before, not surprising."

Surin became quiet, did not continue.

Shaw Danon turned back and looked at Anan. Under the sunlight, her beautiful face was shining. Soon, Anan felt Shaw Danon's eyes and shown disdain again.

But this time, Shaw Danon did not avoid. He did not even felt her scorn. That beautiful face meant nothing to him. Only his heart was saying quietly, painfully: "She is not here. She went to watch Kevern's contest!"

Anan quickly discovered that Shaw Danon was only using his eyes to look at her, while his hollowness told her that he was actually thinking about something else and ignored her existence. This was Anan's first time experience it. Her eyes shown a slight of surprise.

"Ding!"

The bell rang, sounding over Peak of Widows. The surrounding quickly quiet down.

Anan straighten her body, took a deep breath. Only need to win two more battle, only two more, and she could make her dream real and reach her master's expectation. Aeolian Firmus brighten up behind her back.

"Bamboo Height disciple Anan, please leave guidance."

Shaw Danon was like waking up from dream. His first reaction was not to salute, but to search through the crowd with his eyes. So many people, but none is the one he is searching for.

Anan's face changed. The Jadeon disciples below the stage were also in a

uproar. This person was the first one that being impolite to Anan. Tian Bolis and Surin noticed this disciple was really not right today.

Shaw Danon slowly turned his head. His face was like dying embers, said lightly: "I am Bamboo Peak disciple Shaw Danon. Shijie please don't hold back."

Anan startled. People normally said polite thing before the contest, but Shaw Danon looked weird, who will say don't hold back. It sounded like sacrasm. But he did not look like it.

Anan was the favorite disciple of Master Shui Yue, her mind was strong. Her face did not change. Not speaking anymore, she held out her right hand, Aeolian Firmus slowly rose up in the air.

Shaw Danon looked at that bright blue light getting darker and darker, brighter and brighter. It had turned his entire body blue. He could not feel anymore nervousness, instead, he was like long awaited.

He took out his ugly and black fire stick.

Laughter bursted from below the stage. Compare to the noble "Aeolian Firmus", his fire stick was like a ugly worm.

And at this moment, it was like a dead, ugly worm.

The icy cold feeling filled his body again. For some reason, the fire stick seem excited today. The circulation of the cold engergy appeared to be faster than usual. Shaw Danon could even felt if not because he was blood bonded with the fire stick, if not because he was holding the fire stick, the fire stick would

already charge at Anan.

No, it was not charge at Anan, it was to Aeolian Firmus. This strange feeling was like two deeply hated enemies.

At that moment, Anan's face also changed a little. The glow of Aeolian Firmus was too bright, even she was puzzled by it.

But Shaw Danon had no will to think. He looked at this beautiful girl in blue glow. He suddenly discovered she was like Shijie. But this "Shijie" was looking at him coldly.

On the stage, an unexpected thing happened. Shaw Danon and Anan did not make a move. They just stared at each other.

The people were in a discussion.

Anan realized Aeolian Firmus was having weird behavior. But she used her mind to check, there were nothing abnormal. Aeolian Firmus just seem a little overly excited.

Feeling the numberless eyes below the stage, Anan frowned, focus her mind. She snorted, kicked out all ideas in her mind. Aeolian Firmus brighten, rose into the sky, but it still had its sneath on.

Since the begining of Seven Peaks Tournament, Aeolian Firmus became the

main focus of many people. Until now, Anan defeated all her opponets without unsheathe her sword. This caused many people to wonder who can make Anan to actually draw out her sword. Many people guessed during the final battle, with Kevern's cultivation, he should able to do it.

The blue light shined on Shaw Danon's face, but could not reflect any of his expression. Black fire stick glowed with fiant green light, slowly left his hand and stopped in mid-air.

Even they had already took a look at the fire stick before, but everyone here, including the Bamboo Peak people, was the first time seeing Shaw Danon cast magic. Amandla snorted: "If not because I see it with my own eyes, I can not believe the foolish Xiao Shidi have suddenly become a gifted genius."

On the stage, Anan held her incanation mark tight. Aeolian Firmus turned and charged at Shaw Danon with unstopable momentum.

Fire stick immediate went forth. The mystic green light crashed with the bright blue light in mid-air. It was like the fire stick did not fear this momentum.

At the next moment, under the stunned eyes of the audiences, Shaw Danon appeared to be vulnerable and received a hard blow. He fell backward. The fire stick lost its glow, and flight back to its master.

The Bamboo Peak people rose up, some screamed out like Amandla.

Shaw Danon's back hitted on the pillar and fell on the floor. Blood spitted out from his mouth, landed on the fire stick. Without anyone's notice, the blood was absorbed.

The power of Aeolian Firmus had shocked everyone!

Anan's cold face without sense of hesitation, the blue light flashed, the Aeolian Firmus heartlessly chopped at Shaw Danon from mid-air. Black gas suddenly rose from the fire stick. The green light was getting brighter. With blood on the corner of his lip, he slowly got up. Face pale but eyes red, a savage look.

The fire stick already rushed toward Aeolian Firmus within the black gas and green light. The two espers met in mid-air then immediately bounced off. Anan and Shaw Danon could feel their body shocked.

The blue and green lights were flying across the sky. The giant, hard woods of the platform were drifted like paper scraps. The sound was like thunder's roar. Not a single Jadeon could remain normal. Since the beginning of the contest, there were no battle was as exciting, magnificent as this one. Just after a while, the entire platform had completely fell apart due to the power of two esper.

The surrounded audiences had backed up for a distance away from the platform. Shaw Danon and Anan were floating in mid-air. Anan's both hands held incanation mark, focus on controlling the esper, the posture was serious and cool; Shaw Danon on the other hand was a bit strange. Although the fire stick is surprisingly powerful, he did not held incanation mark but gesturing in mid-air, and the fire stick followed his will, battled with Aeolian Firmus.

Even like that, Shaw Danon had the suffer that could not tell. The power of Aeolian Firmus was far greater than he could imagin. Everytime fire stick hitted Aeolian Firmus, channels of his body shocked. If not because he had practiced "Fawin Wisdom" to strengthen his channels, and protected him, and managed

to within Aeolian Firmus' godly power, he would already dead. Anan did not seem to feel anything. Under her control, the blue light was brighter and brighter, gradually suppressed the fire stick's black gas and green light.

Shaw Danon was complaining in his heart over there, Anan here was also surprised. Her opponent's fire stick could have equal amount of spirit force, it also had a draining force. It kept draining her vigor. If not because she had a stable foundation, she fear she couldn't control her blood inside of her.

Thinking of that, Anan felt the blood rushed into her brain again, and almost loss balance in mid-air. Her mind became angry and anxious. From the battle, she could tell her opponent's cultivation in Pure Essence is far behind of herself, but his esper was so weird and powerful, even Aeolian Firmus could only gain the upper hand in surface.

Anan gritted her teeth, face flushed with pink, Her clothes fluttered without wind. After another hit between Aeolian Firmus and the fire stick, Shaw Danon's entire shocked, the fire stick also slow down.

Aeolian Firmus flight back. Anan held out her right hand and held Aeolian Firmus. At the instant her hand touched Aeolian Firmus, the blue light glow so bright that it swallowed her body. Aeolian Firmus let out a loud bang like dragon's roar. Anan and Aeolian Firmus rose straight into the sky.

Shaw Danon already forgot everything around him. With his bond between him and the fire stick, Shaw Danon could feel the fire stick was almost like alive. It was very excited, a strength savage thinking rose in his brain.

He stood in mid-air, roared at the sky.

The sound shocked earth, the sky changed!

The black gas and green light rose into the sky. The fierce wind blew, the cloud whirl!

Suddenly, the blue light flashed, the whistle sound increased quickly, until it was deafening, no one could hear any other sound. The blue light concentrated together, formed a giant pillar, and striked from above the head. It was like it is going to cut Mount Jadeon in half.

Shaw Danon's face twisted. His eyes, nose, mouth and ears were bleeding. But his eyes had no sense of fear. He also held the fire stick. The black gas and green light were like holding in his hand, and faced the blue light pillar.

The Jadeon disciples held their breath. No one underestimate Shaw Danon anymore. The elders' look changed.

This contest, is a battle of life and death.

But why, no one come to stop?

"Beng!" Like a thunder. It seem like the entire Peak of Widows shook. The blue light backed up. Aana reappeared in the sky, holding Aeolian Firmus, a stream of blood flow out slowly from her mouth.

Below the stage, Master Shui Yue stood up.

In mid-air, Shaw Danon could only hear the wind next to his ears. His eyes

were blurred. The blood almost covered his eyes. If he can hear, he will hear the screaming from the Bamboo Peak people from below.

Surin's lips loss color. Seeing the small disciple covered by blood in mid-air, she hurriedly said to Tian Bolis quietly: "Buyi, let Xiao Fan give up, hurry tell him give up."

Tian Bolis's body shook, stared at mid-air, then slowly shook his head.

Could no longer feel any pain, in the ever changing sky, an idea suddenly passed through Shaw Danon's mind: After I died, will Shijie going to visit me? After many years, many of happiness days, is she going to forget about me?

He rubbed the eyes, the blood, and, the water!

Anan felt extream pain in her body. The energy in her channels were unrest, like was about to leave her body and cheer for the savage devil within the horrify green light, black gas.

It was already the life and death moment!

It was already the eternal instant!

That beautiful lady, stood in wild wind. Let the wind blew at her face like blades, she still not back up. She lifted her head, looked at the sky.

Wind, suddenly stopped, frozen in the air.

The world, suddenly quiet, stopped at that moment.

“Bang!” A low roar seem came from heaven, sounding within the earth.

Anan drew out “Divine Sword Aeolian Firmus”.

The blue light disappeared, like a giant dragon sucking in the water, the blue light was absorbed by the clear blade edge.

The Peak of Widows was silent!

The thousand years Aeolian Firmus finally unsheathed!

Anan’s face was cold as frost, her hand held the sword mark, took seven steps in seven stars position. Walked seven steps in mid-air. The sword pointed toward the sky. Her face was completely pale, her mouth worded the incanation:

“Rage of Nine Skies, turn to divine thunder.

Might of heaven, arrive at this sword!”

Then, the originally clear sky turned dark. Dark clouds suddenly appeared in the sky. Sound of thunder was roaring. The lighting flashed at the edge of the clouds. Fierce wind blew.

Shaw Danon opened his mouth. This scene, had appeared in his memory of

long time ago. On the ground, all the elders and even Master Doyal Shen stood up, turned and looked at Master Shui Yue with an unbelievable look on their faces.

After a moment, Tian Bolis said: “You have raise a good disciple!”

Master Shui Yue ignored everyone. Her cold face eventually shown worry, watched the two people.

“Thunderblade!” Master Doyal Shen slowly moved his eyes away. His heart was shocked. He could never imagin in Jadeon, within the young disciples, there can be such extraordinary talented person.

But, looked at this female disciple’s face, although she was able to cast this type of amazing magic, her body was shaking, face was pale. It seem her strength had reach its limit.

The thunder howl was getting more rapid. Shaw Danon could feel the fire stick was filled with energy at moment Aeolian Firmus was unsheathed. It was like the blood-bonded esper shouted from its heart.

It was like it had waited for his moment for thousand years!

The sky was getting darker, the dark clouds were covering the head. A swirl appeared in the thick clouds.

Chapter 30 Suspect

Like the path to nether, the dark, bottomless, giant swirl heng up-side down on the sky. Like the devil opened its mouth and about to swallow everything of the world. Fierce wind was freezing, the wind gathered the clouds. Thunders were howling, lighting were flashing.

Shaw Danon flight toward Anan. The green light of fire stick flashed, very noticeable under the dark clouds. Anan looked at figure of Shaw Danon who was surrounded by green light, her face paled.

“Thunderblade” was the highest level of Taoist Art. Using normal body to summon the might of heaven of earth, it was clear pressure of Anan baring was extreamly heavy. “Aeolian Firmus” was a godly weapon, a prefect weapon for casting Thunderblade. But even with that, Anan’s cultivation practice was not enough for that.

She could feel coming from the dark clouds, wave after wave of energy rushed into her body like angry tide. Though no one could see anything weird on the outside, her blood was boiling, like swelled by the great force. If not because Aeolian Firmus kept absorbing the energy, Anan would probably already fall.

The wind whistled, the thunder roared. She stood in mid-air, she almost thought she was a powerless grass in the wind. The next moment, she recalled what her master said when she taught her this skill: “Xueqi, the fine quality of you is the only one I met in my entire life. But this incanation is too strong, the back fire power is hard to withstand. Your cultivation is still basic, though you can manage to cast it, never cast it if not neccessary, otherwise you are risking your life.”

“Bang!”

A thunder burst right above Peak of Widows. Everyone could feel the earth below them was slightly shaking. It was like the ancient god of thunder was awoken from sleep, and roar in anger.

Everyone’s color changed!

Shaw Danon was only twenty feet away. By looking at this situation, everyone knew once Anan is done with channeling, he will turn into dust. But Shaw Danon stopped, it was like he hitted on a soft wall, couldn’t advance any farther.

Shaw Danon’s face turned to dead pale. “Thunderblade” is one of the Jadeon’s final art, so amazing that it form a invisible barrier while channeling. So Shaw Danon could not advance.

The fire stick getting brighter, but still couldn’t advance. In comparing spiritual strength, fire stick is definitely not weaker than Aeolian Firmus, but in comparing cultivation, the different is too much. He only used his own spirit to drive the fire stick, it could never match Anan’s surpreme art that refined by many Jadeon’s masters for thousands years.

At that hopeless moment, just when the swirl became more rapid, lighting flashing, the light of Aeolian Firmu getting brighter, the moment of this supreme art was about to complete, Anan's body suddenly shocked, the white face turned red, and spitted out large amount of blood.

The light of Aeolian Firmus became unstable. Anan gritted her teeth, closed her eyes, and focus her mind, spirit on Aeolian Firmus. After a moment, the light became stable. It was getting even brighter, so bright that could not look at with eyes.

A bang came from the dark clouds. A light came from the deepest of the giant swirl. It was a combine of numerous of lighting. It was aiming at Anan's Aeolian Firmus.

But, hopelessness rose in Anan's heart. Just as she had expected, a sharp whistle came. She was focusing on protecting Aeolian Firmus and ignored the barrier. Without the barrier, Shaw Danon and the fire stick formed a green light pillar, charged at the beautiful lady in the wind.

Is that it?

Everything end here?

Her heart calmed down. Her mind lightly thinking.

At that instant, just at that short instant. The world was quiet, frozen, everything fixed there. Only she was standing in mid-air, clothes and hair fluttering. She reopened her eyes, watching the green light charged at her.

That moment was like eternity!

Shaw Danon saw her, and her eyes!

She stood there alone in the storm, so quietly facing the might of heaven. Only her face was a bit pale. Her eyes had a bit sorrow, a bit panic.

The wind screamed. The world was lonely. And that beautiful lady, quietly looking at him.

Who's eyes, were so sorrow and lonely. It was like last night, that person was hurt by love! This pain, deeply entered the marrow, deeply entered the soul.

Deeply! Deeply!

Is she your, the lady that love other person?

The one that you will never regret to think about her for entire life?

Shaw Danon suddenly smiled, with grieve and hopeless, just like last night.

The fire stick entered the light of Aeolian Firmus. No one could see the two figures anymore and could not see the light of fire stick had suddenly dimmed. At that moment, a giant lighting came from the sky, landed at Aeolian Firmus.

The whole world, all the gods, seem like at the same time, sang together.

The giant light pillar reflected from Aeolian Firmus, with earth crashing momentum, struck at Shaw Danon. At the critical moment, fire stick rose up, blocked in front of its master.

At next moment, Shaw Danon had swallowed by the light.

Long time! Long time! Long time!

The dark clouds scattered, the light disappeared.

The people stared at the sky, watched the young man holding his black fire stick, like a rock covered with scars, falling.

He did not fall on the ground. Tian Bolis swiftly appeared below him like a shadow, and caught Shaw Danon. He immediately opened Shaw Danon's mouth, took out a vial and poured the yellow pills into Shaw Danon's mouth.

The pills dissolved quickly in Shaw Danon's mouth. Tian Bolis did not say anything. He jumped up and Flame Spirit rose up, carried him away. He did not look at the square for one more time, and judging by which direction he was going, it was to Bamboo Peak.

Surin and other Bamboo Peak people quickly followed.

At that time, Anan landed on the ground and soon surrounded by the ecstatic Bamboo Height disciples. She silently looked at the sky, looked at the red light in the sky.

※ ※ ※

He was like slept for thousands years. Wanted to wake up but the eyes could not open. In the endless darkness, only he alone.

He definitely did not wish to walk in the darkness alone, but beside darkness, there is no where else for him to go.

So he became angry, fire burned in his heart. So he swore to the lord of nether world: Even if his body and soul turned into ash, he wanted to have a bit of light, and bury everything of the world together with him.

The anger since ancient time was wild like the begining!

Shaw Danon slowly opened its eyes.

Soft light shined into his eyes. The familiar smell floating inside of the room.

Here, seem like no one is here.

He slowly sat up. Just when he raise his hand and wanted to rub away the sweat on his forehead, a heart tearing pain came from his, shoulder, chest, and stomach. He gasped and face turned pale.

He sat on the bed, did not dare to move. After a while, the pain was gone.

It was afternoon now. The door was closed. The two windows were opened. He could faintly see the green bamboos in the courtyard. Big Yella and Ashh were not here. Are they looking for meat bones again?

He smiled. In this empty room, he smiled to himself.

The door was pushed open. Surin came in. Shaw Danon moved a little, said: "Shi niang", hadn't stand up, his face was already twisted together from the pain.

Surin quickly walked to him and sat on the bed, softly said: "Don't move, Xiao Fan."

Shaw Danon waited for the pain to ease a little, then said: "Disciple did not know Shi niang is coming--"

Surin glared at him, said: "Life is already half lost, you still have the heart to remember this manner! Don't talk about rubbish, sit up."

Shaw Danon giggled. Surin examined him, said: "Your outer injuries are almost recovered, but the inner channels damaged too serious. It won't work if you don't rest well."

Shaw Danon said: "Yes. Disciple had disgraced master and Shi niang, I am so sorry--"

Surin cutted in, said: "It's you had made your master proud. For three hundreds years, beside your master, no other disciple was as remarkable as you in Seven Peaks Tournament."

Shaw Danon blushed, said: "That, that is because disciple has good luck."

Surin smiled, patted his shoulder. Shaw Danon remembered, asked: "Contest is over right? Who won? Is it Lu Shijie?"

Surin shook her head, said: "No, its Dragon Head Peak's Kevern."

Shaw Danon felt unknown sorrow in his heart, said quietly: "So its Qi Shixiong. He is really powerful, even Lu Shijie with Aeolian Firmus lose to him."

Surin heard what he said, and seem reminded her of something. She sighed and changed topic: "Your injuries this time are not light. Your master used a lot of effort to save you. According to him, using Aeolian Firmus to cast Thunderblade, although Anan's cultivation isn't strong enough, if not your fire, fire-your esper blocked it for you, even gods can not save you by then."

Shaw Danon heard what she said, and suddenly remembered. He looked around but couldn't find that ugly, black fire stick.

Surin looked at him, said lightly: "You esper was taken by your master."

Shaw Danon startled, said quietly: "Yes." Then he couldn't help but ask: "Master he senior-"

Surin said: "You were fainted for five days and nights. Your condition was stabilized at last night. Today morning, Head Shixiong of Peak of Widows sent a letter here, and asked your master to go there. So he should be in Peak of Widows now."

Shaw Danon slowly nodded. He did not know how he shall feel. He thought it is not a problem. But the fire stick that had been with him for two years suddenly left him for the first time, he felt a bit empty.

Surin looked at him with a strange look, but then said: "You just woke up, don't tire yourself, rest more. I instructed them to not bother you. The meals will let Bishu to bring them here."

Shaw Danon said: "Thank you Shi niang."

Surin nodded, said: "Rest. I will tell Bishu to bring the meal to you." Then she turned and walked toward outside. When she was about to left the room, Shaw Danon called:

"Shi niang."

Surin turned, said: "What?"

Shaw Danon looked at her, hesitated for a moment, then said: "Shi niang, I want to ask, do you know what is the result of this contest for Baye of Dragon Head Peak? I was at Peak of Widows, did not have the time to ask him."

Surin looked at him again, said: "He entered the top eight, but lose to his Shixiong Kevern."

Shaw Danon said: “So he too-thank you Shi niang.”

Surin shook her head, said: “Rest.” Then turned and left.

Shaw Danon slowly lay down, looked at the ceiling, did not say anything.

※ ※ ※

Jadeon Peak of Widows, inside of Crystal Hall.

Master Doyal Shen sat at the center, other six heads were also there. Other than that, there was no one in the hall.

Everyone were silent. Master Doyal Shen lowered his eyes, looked at the black fire stick in his hand.

“Tian Shidi,” Master Doyal Shen broke the silent, said: “What do you think?”

Tian Bolis pondered for a moment, then said: “When Shaw Danon adopted, he did not have this item. Most likely because of coincidence and got this treasure by chance.”

Master Vasp Caelo said coldly: “This stick can be a match with Aeolian Firmus, which is a divine weapon. But across the world, there are nothing mention about this stick.”

Tian Bolis' face darken, said: "How large Shenzhou is. There are numbers of treasures not known by the world. You and I are just frog in the well."

Master Vasp Caelo was angry. He hadn't speak, Bamboo Height Master Shui Yue already said coldly: "Of course we are frog in the well. But this black stick had evil gas when it casted. It is clear that the stick is a evil item. Not sure why Tian Shixiong did not see it?"

Tian Bolis snorted, said: "So black gas is evil gas? With some red threads it's a evil item? If it's like that, I go back and paint my face black, are you guys going to slay me like I am a evil heretic?"

Master Doyal Shen frowned, said: "Tian Shidi, don't say such thing. Why calling yourself a evil heretic!"

Tian Bolis snorted, then turned his head away, not saying anything more.

Master Doyal Shen sighed, putted the fire stick on the teapoy, said: "Today ask you all to come is for discuss about Bamboo Peak disciple Shaw Danon's weird esper that was used during Seven Peaks Tournament. It has unknown history and extreamly strong power. Also we are discussing about sending the top four disciples to Kongsang mountain, Cave of Fangs to investigate. Other three disciples you have no comment, only Shaw Danon-"

The more Tian Bolis heard the more angry he got. He was already confused about how Shaw Danon's cultivation advance so fast, and also felt suspicious about the fire stick. But now in Crystal Hall, not discussing other disciple but his.

How could he not get mad. His face darken, immediately rose up, said loudly: “Head Shixiong, what you want to do about it?”

Master Doyal Shen never thought Tian Bolis will have such great reaction. He was surprised. Sitting next to Tian Bolis, Head of Peak of Wind Ceng Shu Chang who normally had good relationship with him, pulled Tian Bolis’ sleeve, said: “Buyi, Head Shixiong did not say anything. You sit down first.”

Master Doyal Shen’s face dimmed a little, said: “Tian Shidi, this thing is really strange. I as a leader of this faction, will handle this impartially. You don’t need to worry.”

The anger was still on Tian Bolis’ face. But looked at Master Doyal Shen’s face while Ceng Shu Chang persuading him, he sat down in the end.

Master Doyal Shen slowly said: “Everyone, all of you have examined this stick. On the outside it look normal, but in the inside there are savage spirit. But the most important point is, with our level of cultivation, we can not control this object, while a disciple with only Pure Essence level four could use it. Why is that?”

Everyone include Tian Bolis were silence. They were the top cultivators, how would they not know the answer? It’s just none wanted to say it out.

But in the end Master Doyal Shen said: “From what I think, this stick most likely is ‘blood smelted’ item.”

Although they were prepared for it, the heads looks were still changed a little. The blood smelted item, is the owner putted his own blood into the esper while

crafting. This type of art was really difficult, the esper's materials were extremely unique, and it's very dangerous. One mistake could lead to esper's vicious energy back fire and end up with painful death. Of course, if it success, the power of esper must be extremely powerful. And one more good thing is that the esper connect with owner's blood. Only the one with the creator's blood could use it. But because it used blood as medium, the esper often contain savage energy.

Legend said this type of blood smelt art was passed down from ancient devils. The Felkin heretics passed down from generation to the next generation. But there were no famous blood smelt esper, perhaps the way to craft it is so dangerous that even Felkin people did not dare to try.

But, in a Jadeon disciple, there was such esper.

Master Doyal Shen looked at Tian Bolis. Tian Bolis' face was ghastly pale, slowly shood up: "Shixiong, maybe you are right. But I got to say, Shaw Danon is just sixteen years old, how can he know the art of blood smelt? From the time he came, he never left the mountain for these five years. He did not even bring anything with him when he came. Where can he find such rare esper material?"

Master Vasp Caelo suddenly said coldly: "Perhaps he is sent by Felkin people and place him in Jadeon, its not weird!"

Tian Bolis was mad, said: "If he really have the heart, then why he used it under the eyes of thousand people in Seven Peak Tournament? And beside, if he is really Felkin's spy, heh heh, Vasp Caelo Shixiong, I am fear your Baye isn't clean!"

Master Vasp Caelo was stabbed at the weakness, stood up, said angrily:

“What did you said? How can my Jing Yu compare to your stupid disciple?”

Tian Bolis' face darken even more, snorted, peered at him, said: “Yes, my disciple is stupid. But I heard he entered the semi-final. I don't know what place did Vasp Caelo Shixiong's prodigy Baye got?”

Vasp Caelo said angrily: “He was just unfortunate to face his Shixiong Kevern. If not because of they, why he can't enter semi-final!” Then he paused, laughed coldly: “But he is not lucky like someone else who rely on people to give up to advance, and still not feel shame talk about that!”

Tian Bolis shouted: “So the battle between him and Anan is also luck?”

Master Vasp Caelo said: “Correct. Because he did not have the luck, that's why he lost, lost so badly that he almost die!”

Tian Bolis was getting more angry, but his tongue was not smart, couldn't beat Vasp Caelo. His anger caused his face turned all red: “What do you want? You want to see am I not as good as my reputation too?”

Master Vasp Caelo had no sign of stepping back. He stood up and said proudly: “Then I need to test Tian Shixiong's Flame Spirit sword!”

Tian Bolis did not bother to say anything more. He stepped forth with right hand held sword mark. The air in the hall seem frozen.

“Impudent!” A loud hit. Master Doyal Shen's hand smacked on the teapoy. Face angry. He stood up, said: “You two really pretending that this Head of Faction is head is it!”

Master Doyal Shen was at the position of the head for three hundreds years already. Highly honored. Usually he was kind, but this time he was mad, it surprised Tian Bolis and Master Vasp Caelo. They stepped back and said quietly: "Yes, Head Shixiong please calm down."

Master Doyal Shen looked at the two, the anger on his face took a while to be gone. After a ponder, he said: "Tian Shidi."

Tian Bolis stepped forth, said: "Head Shixiong."

Master Doyal Shen looked at him, said: "Anyway, the history of this black stick is unclear. If its Felkin's item, and Shaw Danon got something to do with Felkin, we can not keep him. You understand?"

Tian Bolis lowered his head, quiet for a moment, then said: "Yes."

Master Doyal Shen said again: "Tian Shidi, I know you don't like it. But this is very important, we can not take it lightly. You go back first, wait for Shaw Danon to recover, then interrogate him thoroughly, and bring him back here. We are going to discuss about that afterward. How it is?"

Tian Bolis' face pale and then flushed. Stampped his feet, nodded, not saying anything and left.

A whistle from the outside of the door, probably use sword to fly back.

In the hall, Ceng Shu Chang said to Master Doyal Shen: "Head Shixiong, Tian

Shixiong's Bamboo Peak hard have such talented person, but with this thing happen. It is natural that he is not happy about that. Please don't mind him."

Master Doyal Shen sighed, shook his head: "Of'course I don't mind. I know Tian Shidi. I can trust him."

Then, he seem remembered something, turned to Bamboo Height Master Shui Yue: "Shui Yue Shimei, your female disciple Anan these days--"

Shui Yue said lightly: "Thank you for Head Shixiong's worry. Xueqi's body almost recovered. If not because Tian Bolis Shixiong has a weird person and a strange esper, and consumed Xueqi so many chi within one battle, she will not lose to that person."

Vasp Caelo's face changed. Master Doyal Shen waved his hand, said: "Ai ya, the thing is the past, no need to argue it."

Vasp Caelo and Shui Yue glared at each other, then turned their head away. Master Doyal Shen sighed, then turned his eyes on the teapoy, seeing the black and ugly fire stick was laying there quietly.

Chapter 31 Path of Righteous

Big Yella lay on the floor, eyes half closed, its tail swing frequently. Ashh lay on the bed, the pair of bright eyes looked at Shaw Danon's anxious face. Shaw Danon glared at it, tiredly said: "What you looking at?"

Of course Ashh did not understand what Shaw Danon meant, so it "creak creak" twice. Its master was injured, but looked at this monkey's face, it got no sign of worry, but felt happy for Shaw Danon's suffer.

Shaw Danon said impatiently: "Go, go, go, get out!"

Shaw Danon heard foot step came from the door. He smiled, said: "Sixth Shixiong, why you send the meal so early today?"

His voice stopped all the sudden as he saw Tian Bolis' stout body came in from the door. Shaw Danon surprised. These days, Surin let him rest under quiet condition. All the Shixions include Hidi only visited him once. Only Amandla came and send him the three meals. He did not expect Tian Bolis will appear.

He startled, then he realized and got off from the bed, about to salute. Tian

Bolis' heart was depressed, volatile. He waved his hand, said: "No need."

Shaw Danon answered, then stood up at the side. Watching Tian Bolis sat next to the table, he held his breath.

Tian Bolis looked at this disciple's reaction. There was no way he looked like an outstanding, talented person, more like someone who is dumb, but why.....

Tian Bolis shook his head, sighed, said: "Seventh, come sit here."

Shaw Danon surprised again. Normally Tian Bolis did not care about him. Today he was little kind to him. He could not believe his ears.

Tian Bolis waited for a moment, saw Shaw Danon was still staring at himself, seem like did not react. He became little angry, said: "Do I need to please you to sit down?"

This scold filled with anger. Shaw Danon found back the normal feeling of his master. He immediately reacted and sat down.

Tian Bolis stopped. Then he smiled bitterly, shook his head, said: "How is your body?"

Shaw Danon respectfully said: "Reply to master. Since came back from Peak of Widows, thank to master, Shi niang's cure, and all Shixiongs' care, it almost recover."

Tian Bolis looked at him, said lightly: "Seven Peaks Tournament already

passed for more than a month, look like you are almost recover. I have a few questions that I need you to answer them right now.”

Shaw Danon’s heart sank. He felt the thing that he fear finally came. But he could only say: “Yes, master please say it.”

Tian Bolis said slowly: “Your black stick, where did you get it?”

Shaw Danon’s heart beated, and looked at Tian Bolis. Tian Bolis was also staring at him. His face was still calm, but his eyes were aggressive.

Thousands of thought in his mind, but he couldn’t make a sound. Tian Bolis’ face darken, said: “Say it!”

Pressed by his master, sweat already appeared on Shaw Danon’s forehead. Although he did not have much experience, but years ago in ancient valley, Sinister Orb accidentally combined with the weird black stick was too awkward. From what he had heard from his Shixiongs’ daily conversation, the Path of Good never allow evil thing with ability to suck out blood. If he allow Tian Bolis to know what actually happened, the result will be unimaginable.

Other than that, in his heart, there was still one thing, a thing that he fear the most to tell, especially when he found out Pozhi was Four Divine Monks of Skysong and remembered the incarnation he taught him.

At that moment, he determined not going tell anything, even a little, about Pozhi no matter what happened.

Tian Bolis stared at him.

Shaw Danon left his chair and kneeled down.

“Master!”

Tian Bolis frowned, snorted, then coldly said: “Speak.”

Shaw Danon lowered his head, said slowly: “This black stick, was found by chance, when Shijie and I went to back mountain’s ancient valley.”

Tian Bolis startled, then remember about that happened two years ago. Hidi was fainted for no reason in the ancient valley. Surin went there and check but could not find anything strange. He too went there later. This thing remained as a mystery. As time passed he forgot it. Now, it seem it was all because of this black stick.

But how dangerous is an item that could knock out Hidi while no one control it? How could Shaw Danon able to drive it? The mystery became more confusing. Tian Bolis asked lowly: “How you get it?”

Shaw Danon did not dare to lift his head and fear to let Tian Bolis to see his expression. He was not a smart person. Especially the situation now was very anxious. He could not find a explantation within such hurry.

Tian Bolis saw him hesitated. He immediately shouted: “Speak.”

Shaw Danon was surprised. The sweat raining down. His heart raced. He did not dare to hide anymore, so he told the story of that day, but he took away

thing about Sinister Orb. He only said that day in ancient valley, he saw a black stick. He felt curious and picked it up. As the result, the black stick sucked out his blood (It suppose to be Sinister Orb). He felt sick then fainted. Before he fainted, he could see the black stick obsorbed his blood.

He finished and still not raise his head and look at Tian Bolis. Tian Bolis frowned and pondered: This small disciple doesn't seem lieing. This type of special power of the esper is definitely not make up by him. But such weird esper was the first time he heard of. If there is something that is smilar to this black stick, it will be the wicked esper of Felkin thousands years ago, "Sinister Orb".

But it was obvious that the black stick does not look like Sinister Orb.

Tian Bolis stood up, hands behind his back. He walked across room, pondering, then turned back to Shaw Danon, said: "You get up first."

Shaw Danon answered, rose up, but his head was still looking down, and stood on the side.

"Even it's like that, that esper is blood bonded to you, its a blood smelted item."

Shaw Danon was curious: "Master, what is blood smelted item?"

Tian Bolis startled, then said impatiently: "Doesn't matter if you don't know. Just listen to my question."

Shaw Danon immediately lowered his head again, said quietly: "Yes."

Tian Bolis looked at him, said: “Even this black stick is a precious esper that not known by the world, you must get to at least Pure Essence to level four in order to drive it.”

Shaw Danon’s face changed.

Tian Bolis said slowly: “That day on Peak of Widows I already asked you. Now I am going to ask you again. Who gave you the incanation for level four?”

Shaw Danon shocked. He knew he was in great trouble for the mysterious black stick. If include him secretly practiced incanation, the punishment would be unimaginable.

At that moment, seem like Hidi’s face had passed by in front of his eyes: go to mountain and chop down bamboo with him, the gentle face under the candle light in raining night, and running around in Bamboo Peak in the past, even the delicate fragrance of her was so clear in his memory.

Every drop of the memory, rose in his heart.

He knelt down, and heavily kowtowed, did not say a word.

He lay on the ground, did not move. The newly recovered body was skinny but strong, with a bit grieve.

Tian Bolis looked at him deeply. After a while, he gave out a long sigh, said: “Stand up. Follow me to Peak of Widows. As for can you come back alive, it will depend on your preformance.”

※ ※ ※

In deep of white clouds, it was peacefully quiet like the fairyland that people dreamed.

Mount Jadeon, Peak of Widows, Crystal Hall.

Jadeon’s Heads of the Seven Peaks were all gathered there. Their eyes were on the kneeled young men.

Master Doyal Shen watched Shaw Danon kneeling there. His brain remembered the two children’s figures five years ago when they were saved. Time passed like in the blink of the eyes, they were already grown up.

His heart sighed, his eyes left Shaw Danon, and turned to other masters, said: “Everyone, what Shaw Danon just said, what is your decision?”

They were quiet for a while, then, Master Vasp Caelo’s voice suddenly rose, said with certainty: “This boy’s word can not be trust.”

Shaw Danon’s body tremble, but did not lift his head.

Master Doyal Shen frowned: “Why Vasp Caelo Shidi so certain?”

Master Vasp Caelo peered at Shaw Danon, said: “Art of blood smelt is evil and vicious. If not because of Felkin heretic teaching him, how could he know the way to craft such esper. So this person must be Felkin spy, we can not let him live.”

Master Vasp Caelo was in charge of Jadeon’s punishment with high position and reputation. His voice was so certain. Shaw Danon immediately turned pale, almost couldn’t breath.

No one said anything, only Tian Bolis darken his face, said slowly: “If he is really deliberately planned to place him into Jadeon as a spy, then why he use it during Seven Peaks Tournament under the eyes of thousand people?”

Master Vasp Caelo snorted, said: “Felkin heretics are already difficult to understand. Doing such weird thing is not unusual.”

Tian Bolis said angrily: “Isn’t that too fetched, irrational?”

Master Vasp Caelo said coldly: “Me irrational? Excuse me Tian Shidi, is the art of blood smelt belong to the Good?”

Tian Bolis couldn’t say anything. His face flushed. Anyone could see that Tian Bolis was stand on his disciple’s side. At that embarrassing moment, a icy cold voice came, it was head of Bamboo Height Master Shui Yue:

“Then excuse me Vasp Caelo Shixiong, you said art of blood smelt is evil and vicious. Then may I ask, what make it evil, what make it vicious?”

Master Vasp Caelo opened his mouth and about to speak, but stopped, and

then said: "It's Felkin wizardry, what else do I need to say?"

Shui Yue said coldly: "Then that mean Vasp Caelo Shixiong knows nothing about the art of blood smelt. Then why say this is evil vicious, and want to kill this boy?"

Master Vasp Caelo looked at Master Shui Yue aggressively, said: "Oh, Shui Yue Shimei, what do you mean?"

Master Shui Yue said lightly: "Shixions, first I don't know much about the art of blood smelt. Although there are rumors but most are just guesses. If blood smelt can really happen by chance, aren't we killed the wrong person? Second this boy is just sixteen. His background is clear. Saying he is a Felkin follower, it is just too illogical."

Master Vasp Caelo squinted his eyes. His eyes were sharp, said: "Why Shui Yue Shimei is so abnormal today to help this boy, really hard to understand?"

Anger flashed on Master Shui Yue's face, said: "I am just talking about fact. I will definitely not like someone who see other house has a talented person, and fear it will be danger to his position, so find some small matter to get rid of him, animal!"

No one here is as sharp as Master Shui Yue. Master Vasp Caelo was in rage and swiftly rose up.

Master Doyal Shen immediately interrupted: "Okay okay, why argue again. Sit down, sit down."

Master Vasp Caelo did not dare to disobey the Head's order, and sat down. Shui Yue's face was as nothing happened, sat quietly on her chair.

Master Doyal Shen shook his head, turned to other people, said: "Everyone, what do you think?"

Other heads quiet for a moment, then head of Peak of Wind Ceng Shu Chang said: "Head, I think Shui Yue Shimei is right. This boy's background is clean, and never left the mountain before. Maybe it is just really a coincidence to find this treasure. It is our Jadeon's fortune."

Master Doyal Shen nodded, turned to head of Sun Set Peak Master Tian Yun. Tian Yun looked at Vasp Caelo, said: "I agree with Vasp Caelo Shixiong's decision."

Master Vasp Caelo got an ally. He nodded to Master Tian Yun.

Only head of Sun Rise Peak Shang Zheng Liang was left. He looked at Tian Bolis, then Master Vasp Caelo and Master Tian Yun, and Master Doyal Shen at last. He pondered for a second then said: "I think Shui Yue Shimei is right."

Tian Bolis was relieved while Master Vasp Caelo snorted. Master Doyal Shen nodded, said: "Everyone already said it, then I should say my own." Then he said to Shaw Danon who was still kneeling: "Xiao Fan, stand up first."

Shaw Danon shocked, lifted his head and looked at all the masters. He slowly rose up.

Master Doyal Shen looked at him, seem like he wanted to see him more clear.

Then he said to other heads: “Everyone, actually I think Shaw Danon does not seem like a Felkin follower. Though there is savage power inside of the fire stick, but unlike the Felkin espers that shown its vicious, blood thirsty energy that we had seen before.”

Master Vasp Caelo couldn't help but said: “Head Shixiong, Felkin heretics are dangerous and vicious. Rather to kill the wrong person than let him lose!”

Master Doyal Shen's look changed, looked at him, shouted: “Vasp Caelo Shidi, do you know what you just said?”

Vasp Caelo understood he said the wrong thing. He lowered his head, not saying anything.

Master Doyal Shen's face was serious, but his voice turned low, said slowly: “Vasp Caelo Shidi, you had in charge of Jadeon's punishment for two hundreds years already. I really respect your fairness. But these years your are getting more aggressive, filled with anger, I really worry. You understand?”

Master Vasp Caelo said quietly: “Yes, Shixiong.”

Master Doyal Shen said: “Rather to kill the wrong peron than let him lose is what a Felkin heretic will do. We Jadeon is follow the path of righteous, we rather to let lose than to kill the innocent, otherwise what is the different between us and Felkin heretics? Your cultivation is deep, but still need to study the meaning of cultivation.”

Master Vasp Caelo held up his palm, said: “Thank for Shixiong's guidance. Vasp Caelo understood.”

Master Doyal Shen relieved, said: "Its good that you know." Then he turned to others. They said: "Head Shixiong can decide."

Master Doyal Shen nodded, said to Shaw Danon: "You hear?"

Shaw Danon was thankful, quickly answered: "Yes, thank you, thank you Shibo, Shishu," Then he turned to Tian Bolis, with a little choked: "Thank you master."

Tian Bolis waved his hand, did not say anything.

Master Doyal Shen picked up the black rod from the teapoy, tossed it to Shaw Danon, smiled: "This thing can only be used by you. Take it back."

Shaw Danon caught it, and immediately feel the familiar coolness. It spread throughout his body. It seem also happy. He saluted to Master Doyal Shen, said: "Thank you Head Shibo."

Master Doyal Shen smiled, his hands clapped three times. A child came out from the rear hall. Master Doyal Shen instructed him a few things. The child nodded and went outside. A while later he lead three people came in. Shaw Danon looked at them. They were all the people he knew. Kevern and Issa walked in the front. When his father Ceng Shu Chang wasn't looking, Issa made a face to Shaw Danon. Walking behind them was the cold beauty Anan of Bamboo Height.

Three people plus Shaw Danon were the top four disciples of Jadeon's Seven Peaks Tournament.

Chapter 32 Leave Mountain

Kevern and Issa saw Shaw Danon, they smiled and greeted him. Only Anan's face was unconcerned, but her eyes peered at Shaw Danon, with some kind of mysterious emotion in her eyes, but then disappeared instantly.

Master Doyal Shen looked at the four people, smiled: "Today ask you four to come here is to let you to leave mountain to obtain some experience."

Kevern and others were excited.

Master Doyal Shen told them about Kongsang Mountain's "Cave of Fangs", then said: "This mission is very important. You four are my clan's elites, that's the reason why send you there investigate. But Felkin heretics are evil and vicious. You must be cautious."

They answered: "Yes."

Master Doyal Shen nodded, said: "Also, beside the Jadeon Clan, Incense Valley and Skysong Temple also send their best disciples to investigate. You must not be rude and bring shame to Jadeon. Also, main house disciple Enu Xiao Shixiong already went there investigating this thing. If you can find him,

discuss with him before doing anything.”

The four people looked at each other, then answered.

Master Doyal Shen carefully looked at the four disciples, then his eyes landed on Kevern. He waved his hand, said: “Kevern, come.”

Kevern startled, and stepped forth. Master Doyal Shen looked closely at him, then turned to Master Vasp Caelo and smiled: “Shidi, your Dragon Head Peak has a worthy successor!”

Master Vasp Caelo was in a bad mood, and now he finally smiled: “Shixiong is kidding.”

Master Doyal Shen smiled and took out an item from his clothes, then handed to Kevern, said: “Take it.”

Kevern took and saw it was a small mirror. It looked old. Bronze on the edge. A dragon was on the top while a tiger on the bottom. Bagua was carved around the mirror. The glass did not seem like a normal bronze mirror. It was hazy and unclear.

Kevern still hadn’t react, Master Vasp Caelo was very pleased and shouted: “Silly child, why startling, hurry kneel down and thank.”

Kevern immediately realized it was most likely the esoteric “Union Mirror”. He quickly knelt down, said: “Thank you Head Shibo.”

Master Doyal Shen smiled: “No need, no need. Stand up.” Then said to other people: “Go outside first.”

The people knew he was going to teach Kevern the incantation for Union Mirror, so they went outside.

Outside of the hall, Shaw Danon went to Tian Bolis. Tian Bolis looked at him, said lightly: “You are burden with heavy responsibility now, can’t return to Bamboo Peak. After a moment you will leave the mountain with them. I will tell the people of Bamboo Peak about it for you.”

Shaw Danon surprised, then lowered his head, said quietly: “Yes, master.”

Tian Bolis said: “While your were recovering your wound for the past month, I heard your Shi niang had taught you some basic blade incanation and mystic art. You memorized those?”

Shaw Danon nodded, said: “Yes, disciple had memorized it.”

Tian Bolis turned away, said slowly: “That’s good. Although your quality is not good, but you are still part of Bamboo Peak. Do not make me lose my face out there.”

Shaw Danon immediately said: “Yes, master. Disciple will definitely not make you senior lose face.”

Tian Bolis snorted. With his back turned, Shaw Danon couldn’t see Tian Bolis’ face. But from his tone, he did not have any anger. After a while, Tian Bolis sighed. He turned back and looked at Shaw Danon, didn’t say anything. He

waved his hand, summoned his sword and left.

Shaw Danon startled watching his master figure turned into a red light, disappeared in the sky. Suddenly someone hit his shoulder. He was surprised, turned around and found out it was Issa, grinning. He looked around and saw all heads were gone already. Only two of them and Anan, who was standing far away, were left.

Issa laughed: "You are lucky. I was afraid that you are not going to pass this trial."

Shaw Danon was relaxed when talking to Issa. He smiled: "Yeah, I was scared to half death."

Issa patted his shoulder, looked behind him, said quietly: "Why don't bring Ashh here?"

Shaw Danon said bitterly: "Today master brought me here. I did not expect we are going to leave the mountain today. I brought nothing with me, how I suppose to remember Ashh?"

Issa smiled: "Doesn't matter. I can lend some clothes to you. Or we can just buy some in Sunstream City." Then he winked, whispered: "Ho ho, we get something nice this time anyway."

Shaw Danon was puzzled, said: "What?"

Issa raised his eyebrows, peered back, and chuckled: "A beauty is coming with us!"

Shaw Danon did not know should he rather laugh or mad. But he still looked at Anan. At the same time, Anan seem felt it, and looked at them. Shaw Danon could felt her coldness even from far away. He quickly turned his eyes away.

They chatted for a while. When Issa was talking about what to say to Anan on their way, Shaw Danon's smile suddenly froze, his eyes stared at behind Issa.

Issa was puzzled. He turned and saw a men was walking down the steps. He seem around fourty years old. His clothes were clean enough. But his face was sluggish. His mouth speaking random illogic stuff.

"Its raining. The sky turned dark. Stupid mom. Immortal, immortal, heh heh, immortal."

Under the eyes of Issa and Anan, Shaw Danon walked slowly, very very slowly. It seem took a long time for him to get to that men.

Was like, get back to the past!

"Uncle Bozo, how are you?" He tried to control his excitement, said quietly.

But his men's eyes seem did not have Shaw Danon's existance. He kept murmuring, left Shaw Danon and walked away, disappeared behind the hall.

"Who is he?" Issa got next to Shaw Danon and asked.

Shaw Danon stared at the spot where Uncle Bozo disappeared, he said

sorrowly: “A mad men!”

Issa looked at him, understood and not to ask anymore. After a while, Kevern walked out from the hall happily, and greeted with the three people.

Shaw Danon absent-minded and followed Issa and gathered with others. After they discussed (Shaw Danon was lost in thought, did not say anything), they decide to get to Sunstream City first.

Issa smiled to Kevern: “Qi Shixiong, the Union Mirror that Head Shibo gave you is powerful?”

Kevern smiled: “Union Mirror is our Jadeon’s treasure, of’ course it’s powerful. I only fear my cultivation is not enough to handle it! Ha ha, okay, this place is mountain peak, disciples can not fly here except for the seven heads. We walk to Cloud Sea then fly to Sunstream City.”

Anan was expressionless. Shaw Danon blinkly nodded. Only Issa was smiling. Seem like it’s a happy thing for him to do to leave the mountain.

※ ※ ※

From Jadeon Clan to Sunstream City, on the way, the four “outstanding” disciples of Jadeon were flying. Other people were very relaxing, but Shaw Danon met some difficulty.

He had rested for a month, Surin predicted that he wouldn't get killed by Master Doyal Shen, so she passed him some Jadeon mystic art, also taught him how to fly by navigating esper. It was very easy. All you need was cultivated enough, esper isn't too crappy, using Jadeon incantation and the help of mind could achieve it. But Shaw Danon's cultivation wasn't deep. His esper surely wasn't bad, but it was very weird. He was unfamiliar with this newly learned Jadeon art. It really troubled him when he used it.

Surin did not expect him to leave immediately right after he went to Peak of Widows, but still let him memorize the incantation first, and let him practice once he come back to Bamboo Peak. Other heads of the house of course did not know that weird boy's cultivation background. From his performance in Seven Peaks Tournament, they assume he knew art of skyblade. They did not know Shaw Danon had secretly practiced incantation, himself did not even know he reached "Navigate Object" stage. How could he had the ability to fly.

Seeing other people summon their sword, Kevern's was a white "Frozen Ice" sword; Anan's was a blue "Aeolian Firmus" sword; Issa's was a sword with purple gas—"Xuanyuan" (note 1). Shaw Danon was nervous, managed to summon "fire stick", but it did not seem as comfortable as the time he was in Seven Peaks Tournament.

They spent half of the day of their journey on crossing clouds and mountains. The four people reached Sunstream City at sun set. Shaw Danon and others wanted to bring less attention, so they found a quiet place near Sunstream to land. Their bodies were all wet due to the clouds, and their faces were pale. This seem more tiring than contest.

On their way flying, Shaw Danon almost lost control of fire stick several times. If not because Kevern and others noticed something was not right, stay close to him and helped him, otherwise this new Jadeon "elite disciple" will fall from the sky and die, ashamed his faction before even make his master proud, and cause

Jadeon Clan to lose face. Kevern and others landed outside of the city, although they did not want much attention, they also feared Shaw Danon will fall off under the eyes of thousands people in the market. The prestige of Jadeon Clan that built over two thousands years may destory instantly by him!

After a rest, for Shaw Danon to regain his breath, the four people entered the enormous Sunstream City under the glow of sunset. Shaw Danon walked in the end, felt the doubtful eyes often came from Kevern and Anan. Clearly they did not understand why a person who shined brightly in Seven Peaks Tounament did not know the art of skyblade. Issa happily walking with Shaw Danon, did not mention anything about what just happened. His mouth kept introducing Sunstream City to Shaw Danon:

“Within hundred miles radius, this is the largest, flourishing place. There are at least two or three hundreds thousands people live here. This place is also in a good location. Many merchants pass here.”

Shaw Danon really admired Issa’s knowledge, said: “Shushu, how you know all these stuff?”

Issa said proudly: “Nothing unusal. It’s natural to know it if you read more books.” Then he gave a evil smile, whispered: “Actually I sneaked to here many times already.”

Shaw Danon was surprised, said: “You, you-”

Issa curled his lips, said: “What kind of face is that? Not a big deal. When I practiced art of skyblade, of’course I need to practice flying around. Fly and fly and fly then I got to here, then I take a walk in the market when I got tire, not a big of a deal!”

Shaw Danon couldn't say anything.

As the two were murmured to each other in the back, Kevern smiled, said to Anan: "Lu Shimei, the sky is getting dark. We are going to spend a night at Sunstream tonight. Tomorrow continue."

Anan's face was cold as ice, without any expression, she nodded.

Because they wanted to avoid trouble, they already changed their Jadeon outfit, so no one suspect anything. But Anan's stunning beauty had drew some attention. Shaw Danon peered at Anan, her face was remain cool, but anger flashed in her eyes. He couldn't help but worry about the passerby. If Aeolian Firmus unsheathed, this ancient city will be half destoried.

But Anan's virtue seem better than Shaw Danon's expectation. Anan still did not make a move as they walked into a tavern called "Shanghai Yuan". Kevern had the highest knowledge, so he was the leader within the four people. Checking into the tavern also done by him, then they were arranged to the finest rooms in the backyard.

Shanghai Yuan was quite large. There were four serperate garden in the backyard. The four were at west garden. Each person had a serperate room. After resting for a while, Kevern called everyone to go to the teahouse and eat dinner.

Shanghai Yuan had a teahouse, located at the most busy street. But at the third floor special guest hall, it was quiet. Out of ten table, about only five of them had customers eating. Kevern summoned the Xiao Er (note 2), ordered couple of dishes. It seem like he was very familar with this place. Perhaps he came here

a lot.

Shaw Danon's heart was thinking, he borned in a farmer family, never been to such luxury place like Shanhai Yuan. When he passed second floor, he saw the magnificent hall. But when he got to third floor, the wall was carved with dragon and phoenix. The beams were make out of red wood. It looked very like old style, completely different than second floor. Of'course he did not know if people became rich, they will want fame and reputation. Some people wanted to have luxury, but because they also wanted to think they were cultured, they would pretend to be one.

The four sat on a small table next to a window. Issa looked at the decoration of the hall, asked Kevern: "Qi Shixiong, the price here is not cheap right?"

Kevern smiled, said: "This is the best teahouse in Sunstream, of'course not cheap. But our Jadeon is quite famous in here, their boss earnestly wish us to come here. They won't charge us too much."

Issa exclaimed "Ah!" then nodded. After a while, the Xiao Er came and served several dishes. That last one was a fresh braised fish. The fish was long, round head, dark brown, and had a pair of whiskers. The most important was the smooth white flesh with delicious smell.

Shaw Danon alway interested in cooking, and he had never saw this type of fish before, he couldn't help but asked the Xiao Er: "Xiao Er, what is the name of this fish, and how do you cook it?"

The Xiao Er laughed, said: “Customer you really have a pair of good eyes. This ‘Flesh Braised Mei Fish’. It is our Shanhai Yuan’s famous dish. Fresh smell, smooth, and sweet. This dish is very well known within hundred miles of Sunstream.”

Shaw Danon swallowed, picked up his chopsticks and took a piece of fish into his mouth, then he closed his eyes and nodded: “Ah, the flesh quality is great, but the way to cook it even better. A bit of sugar, and some ginger to get rid of the fishy smell. Um, taste of fried scallion, must be fresh small onion. Ah, there is also pepper, spices, er right, sesame oil used perfectly. Wow!”

Kevern and Issa were stunned. Even Anan was looking at him with a strange look on her face. But the Xiao Er was really admire, said loudly: “Customer is such expert, exactly correct!”

Shaw Danon noticed others were looking at him. He blushed and putted down the chopstick, but still asked: “May I ask Xiao Er, where do Mei Fishes come from?”

The Xiao Er hadn’t replied, a female voice from the nearby large table already said: “Mei Fishes special local product of the Zhu Gou Mountain at the south, thousands miles away from here. How can they get here, isn’t your inn lieing to us?” (Note 3)

They were surprised. They looked at that large table, eight people were sitting there. Six men were in yellow clothes. There were two females. One wore a long, light purple dress, with a soft vile covered her face; other was the girl who just spoke. Not very old, seem around sixteen or so. Entire dress was watery green. With a pair of large bright eyes, beautiful face and snowy white skin, she was not much worse than Anan.

Shaw Danon exclaimed: “ah” But after she finished speaking, her eyes landed on Anan, appeared to be also surprised by Anan’s beauty. But then even the icy cold Anan couldn’t help but looked back that that girl.

The Xiao Er smiled: “This customer is right. But you may not know, hundred years ago, Mei Fishes only live in Zhu Gou Mountain, but then one day Jadeon’s Master Doyal Shen passed by, and brought the Mei Fishes here to Hong Chuan river, allow the fishes to flourish here. It is thank to the good deed of Jadeon’s Doyal Shen the Celestial to have such nice food.” Then he face shown extream admire.

Shaw Danon and others smiled. But that girl looked at the woman with vile, then snorted.

※ ※ ※

After that delicious dinner, Shaw Danon and others returned to the west garden. Kevern said to others at the entrance: “Tonight everyone rest here. Tomorrow morning we will head to Kongshan Mountain.”

Shaw Danon and Issa answered, but Anan did not say anything, returned straight into her room and shutted the door. Kevern startled, then smiled bitterly: “Two Shidi, you should also rest.”

Shaw Danon looked at Kevern’s handsome face. Under the glow of sunset, Kevern was still as energetic as alway. Shaw Danon suddenly felt tire. He said bye to Issa, then ignored Kevern and returned to his room.

Issa laughed, and talked to Kevern for a moment, then they returned their own room.

That night was the first time he left Mount Jadeon in five years. He couldn't go to sleep. When he finally could go to sleep at mid-night, he dreamed himself was stained with blood, standing within the bloody scene with a savage face. His heart was thirst for blood. It was like the blood in front of him was sweet spring water, attracting him, luring him. He couldn't help but came up with an idea to took over everything by killing.

“Ah!”

Shaw Danon woke up from dream. He sat up and gasped. His entire body was sweating. After long while his heart beat finally slowed down.

He sat in the dark for a while. He held out his hand and touched fire stick near his pillow. A coldness feeling surrounded him. This dream was very similar to the nightmare he had over these years. But this time was in different person point of view. This sinister person in the dream had caused him to fear.

Quiet, everywhere was dark.

He crossed his legs, straighten his back, took a deep breath, both palms held together in front of him.

Darkness was like a gentle lady, softly surrounded him. A layer of faint gold light came out from his body. Solemn covered Shaw Danon face.

After a long time, the gold light disappeared. Shaw Danon opened his eyes in

the dark. This heart was calm. Everytime, he would think of that amiable Pozhi monk.

He did not feel sleepy. He went outside of the room. Other rooms were dark, Kevern and others should have sleep by now. In Shanhai Yuan's backyard, there were four gardens in four directions. Shaw Danon left the west garden and went to the central garden.

The night was already dark. Stars filled the sky. A round moon heng on the sky. The night wind breezy, with faint fragrance. The narrow path was dark, lead to unknown place. On the side, there were bushes and flowers all over the ground.

Shaw Danon followed this narrow path walking. The soft wind hitted his face, brought him some chill.

In that silence night, a young men walking alone in the garden, recalling the past memories.

On the side of the road, a small flower trembled in the night wind. A crystal dew was on the white petal. Shaw Danon stopped, and enchanted by that flower.

The soft fragrance came.

Suddenly a soft hand came out from the eternal darkness, with grieve beauty, marked with the light of moon and stars, the hand reached the flower.

And picked it!

A bang in Shaw Danon's brain. It was like the moon lost its color. The garden fell into darkness.

He turned and looked at her, with hate.

A girl in green dress was standing there. It was like she had taken all the light from the sky, softly putted the flower in front of her nose, and smelled it.

Note 1: Xuanyuan - The name of the first emperor, the yellow emperor, according to the legend.

Note 2: Xiao Er - traditional title for the waiter in teahouse of ancient China.

Note 3: <<Collection of Mountain and Sea - Mountain Volume Four - Zhu Gou Mountain>>: South Water five hundreds miles, name Zhu Gou Mountain, no grass or tree. A mountain, within hundreds miles, many Mei Fishes.

Chapter 33 Ten Thousands Bats

Shaw Danon startled, and recognized she was the young girl argued about mei fishes during dinner. She was in a watery green clothes. Under the moon light, she was just like a fairy.

The girl putted the flower under her nose and took a deep breath. She was like intoxicated, added a bit soul touching beauty. That flower seem brighter in front of her.

But Shaw Danon had a nameless anger in his heart. He frowned said: "The flower was fine there. Why you picked it?"

The green dress girl took a look at Shaw Danon, said lightly: "I picked this flower is good fortune; let me smelled its fragrance is the result of this flower's good deeds over three reincarnations. How can a uncultured person understand?"

Shaw Danon startled, it was the most ridiculous thing he ever heard of. He shook his head: "The flower was picked by you, it lost is life, how could it be happy?"

The green dress girl peered at him: “You are not flower. How do you know it’s not happy?”

Shaw Danon heard this girl’s words were so unreasonable, he became more angry, said: “You are not flower either, how do you know it’s happy? Perhaps it is suffering right now. Ah, look, there are water on the flower, it is crying because of the pain it is suffering.”

The green dress girl stunned, then chuckled. She was as charming as the blooming flower. Also cause Shaw Danon to startle.

“Flower’s tear? Ha ha, flower’s tear. It is my first time hear a men say a dew is flower’s tear. So funny-”

Shaw Danon blushed. He mumbled but couldn’t say anything. But seeing that girl laughed so hard that she bended her back, he forced to say: “Then, then what about it?”

The girl laughed even harder. The laughter filled the quiet, dark garden, added a bit warmth.

Shaw Danon did not know how to say. Seeing the girl’s smile, he stamped his feet and walked away.

Suddenly the green dress girl held the laughter, but the tone still contain a bit laughter, said: “Hey, wait.”

Shaw Danon was in a good mood while walking in the garden. But when he met this girl, his mood became really bad. Now she said it, his heart was

impatient, he turned back and said: “My name is not hey, who are you talking to?”

The girl startled, the smile on her face disappeared. Her eyes became cold. It appeared not much people had ever talked to her like this. But then she thought of something, although the smile did not reappear on her face, her voice was gentle, said: “Oh, then what’s your name?”

Shaw Danon said: “My name is-” Then he paused, and snorted: “Why I need to tell you?”

That girl’s face became serious, seem like she got mad. But when she looked at Shaw Danon’s face, like a little boy, she couldn’t help but laughed again.

This laugh had removed the anger on her face, fused with the moonlight and fragrance. She knew it was not proper to laugh, but when she tried to hold it, she laughed again.

It was like the naive of long time ago had came alive tonight.

The moonlight was like water, shined on her face and shoulders, reflected the soul touching beauty.

Don’t know when, Shaw Danon was enchanted.

After a while, the girl noticed Shaw Danon was staring at her. She did not blushed like most other ladies, but asked directly: “Do I look pretty?”

Shaw Danon was surprised, kind of like a thief that got caught. Under her soft eyes, he seem couldn't escape. He said: "I, you um, you are pretty!"

Shaw Danon was startled after he said it. But the girl did not care. She had a light smile: "That's what I thought. Since I was young, no one said I am not pretty. Every men are like that."

Listen to her tone, it was like she had much experience of the world. Shaw Danon wanted to argue, but he realized her figure under the moonlight was a little familar. He remembered on Mount Jadeon, near the green pond, he saw his Shijie's beautiful figure with his own eyes. At that moment, he felt dispirited. He looked at the green dress girl once more, then sighed, turned and walked away.

"Hey." Then the green dress girl called again. Shaw Danon frowned and turned back, looked at her.

She squinted her eyes, her lips tighten, seem like thinking something. It was silent.

"What is your name?" She asked again, with Shaw Danon's figure reflected in her eyes.

Shaw Danon suddenly shrink back. The anger were all disappeared. It seem like facing that figure he couldn't have slight of anger. He avoided that gentle eyes, with a bit coward, he said: "Shaw Danon."

Then he quickly walked back, kind of like running away.

He walked quickly with his head lowered. At the corner of the trail, a black figure suddenly appeared. It was difficult to see in this dark garden.

He almost couldn't stop. Lucky his body was still keen, stopped right in front of that figure. In the darkness, a pair of bright but quiet eyes appeared in front of him.

Their distance was too close. Shaw Danon was surprised and quickly stepped backward. Now he could see clearly. That person was the masked woman sitting next to the green dress girl during dinner. She still had her veil on, but had changed into a black silk dress. In the night, she was just like a spirit.

Shaw Danon could smell a faint fragrance. Was it just the flowers' odor of the garden or could it be because of that woman.

Shaw Danon regretted coming out here tonight. He murmured: "Sorry." Then went passed that masked woman and heading to his room.

From the beginning, that masked woman did not speak. She just quietly standing there, watching that young men. After Shaw Danon went passed her, she turned slowly and looked at his back.

After a while, her body almost fused with the darkness of the garden, she turned and walked into the garden. Soon, she saw the green dress girl was still standing at the same spot, playing with the flower.

The green dress girl lifted her head, did not surprised. She smiled: "Aunt

Negar, you are back.”

The masked woman looked at the flower. Her vile moved a little, it seem like she nodded, she said: “The four people are from Jadeon.” Her voice sounded in the garden. Although soft and gentle, but it was a little ghostly, “The leader is Dragon Head Peak’s Kevern. Never saw the other three people before. They appeared to be the young generation disciples. Don’t know what their names are.”

The green dress girl smiled: “I know one. The one that just went. His name is Shaw Danon. A stupid name.”

The masked woman looked at her, said lightly: “Bilu, long time haven’t see you viewing flowers.”

The green dress girl, also called Bilu, startled, then smile reappeared on her face at the next moment: “Yeah, Aunt Negar, a long time.”

She held up the flower and took a careful look at it. The under the watch of the masked woman, the green dress girl had a smile on her face, her hand held tight, squeezed the flower into pieces.

※ ※ ※

The next day, the four people woke up. After they freshen themselves, Kevern gathered them, discussed: “Kongsang Mountain located three thousands miles at the east, we better get going.” The other three people had no comment, so they checked out.

The innkeeper of Shanhai Yuan was really admired Jadeon. He gave them a fifty percent discount. The expensive room price dropped to almost equivalent to normal room price. Shaw Danon peered around while Kevern was chatting with the innkeeper. But when he was leaving, he still couldn't find the green dress girl from last night.

The four fly for ten days to cover three thousands miles. Shaw Danon was certainly what slowed them down. But at the last few days, Shaw Danon began to get used to the art. He could fly decently. Everyday, flying in the sky had brought him the excitement.

That day they finally arrived at Kongsang Mountain. They landed and surprised by what they saw. Within a hundred miles around the mountain, there were only rocks and almost no plants. There were no sign of any people. Very desolate.

It was near sunset. The sun sinking at the west. The yellow glow of sunset shined at Kongshan Mountain, with a bit desolate, and a bit dreadful. They landed at the foot of the mountain, putted away their esper. Kevern looked at the sky, said: "I think we can't find any house here that can allow us to spend a night. How about we begin to go up to the mountain, search for 'Cave of Fangs' while look for anywhere that is decent enough to rest for the night."

Issa nodded, said: "Qi Shixiong is right. Let us go to the mountain." Shaw Danon saw Issa agreed, himself did not have any comment either. Anan looked at the sky, then without saying anything, she was the first headed to the mountain.

Although Kongsang Mountain was not as high as the Jadeon's Peak of Widows, it was not short neither. Plus the path was dangerous and risky, hard to find a way. When the four people reached mountain waist, the sky was

already dark.

When the four people arrived at a flat area, Kevern stopped others. He took out a small mirror. They immediately recongeized that was precious esper of Jadeon "Union Mirror". They startled, wondered what Kevern is going to do.

Kevern held the Union Mirror in his hand. He murmured several lines of incanation, then the dark Union Mirror reacted, brighten, and floated into the air, stopped at two feet above his head. A light yellow aura brighten the circle six feet around and protected the four people.

Kevern said: "Kongsang mountain was a gather place for Felkin Heretic eight hundred years ago. This mountain is so barren and strange. There could be many monsters hiding in here. Union Mirror can protect the owner, so we can be more prepared."

Shaw Danon looked at the Union Mirror floating in mid-air. That small mirror's appearance was not special, but the energy coming out from the mirror can not be underestimate. At that moment, they heard a loud sound, then some wings flapping sound. The sound was getting more and more intensive that they could not hear any break. Only this loud noise sounding at the wild mountain. With the help of the light of Union Mirror, they could see a large black cloud came out from the back of the mountain. It was wicked in the darkness. The loud noise was coming from that black cloud.

Their faces changed. Issa rolled his eyes, then suddenly cried out: "Union Mirror!"

They hadn't reacted yet, the large black cloud seem noticed something and turned to them. After a moment, a ear piercing scream came out from the black

cloud. At that instant, the black cloud charged at that only light in the darkness.

The sky with stars became dark, it was like it was covered by something. They could smell the stink odor filled around them instantly. Shaw Danon and other were frightened. Only Kevern remain calm, but his face was already pale, he quickly said: "Don't move. Do not leave the Union Mirror's aura."

After a minute, the scream noise was already next to their ears. Under the light of Union Mirror, they could see clearly that the black cloud was made up by countless of black bat. Their bodies were more than two times larger of normal bats. Each opened their jaws. Within the black, the mouth was blood red, very scary.

The light yellow aura of Union Mirror was obviously effective. All the bats were blocked outside of the aura. No matter how hard they tried to crushed, the aura did not shake. Outside of the aura, the bats' bodies issued a buzzing sound when they touched the aura. The bats then fell on the ground, struggled and died.

But there were just too many bats. The entire starry sky was covered by the bats. There were at least billions of bats here. The bats that were dead were not even one percent. The countless of bats hitted wave after wave. The four people were surrounded in the center. Although they were fine, but everywhere were the horrifying mouths. The stink odor was disgusting.

But the Union Mirror was still the precious esper. Under the attack of countless, vicious animals, it had no sign of weaken. The yellow aura looked thin, but it stood like mountain. Soon, the dead bodies of bats built higher and higher on the outside of the aura.

Above the aura, many black bats also surrounded there. It was not three layers, it was three hundreds layers. (Three layers mean very thick in Chinese) But the attack on the aura seem slowed down. They seem realized it was useless but the bats were not willing leave until they got their relish foods.

Shaw Danon had never seen such savage animals before. He was still a bit nervous and scared. He looked at Anan and saw her face was also extreemly pale.

At the same time, Anan felt his eyes. She turned to Shaw Danon. Their eyes met.

Anan quickly turned away, her pale face was getting more white, and did not turned back.

Suddenly, all bats flight into the sky. Issa looked at them, relieved said: "Finally manage to--"

He couldn't continue. The black cloud, or the countless of bats, flight to high area then turned and striked at the Union Mirror's aura like hailstorm. They were shocked back by the Union Mirror's aura and created blood mist. Under the soft yellow light, they fell on the ground in pieces.

The blood flow on the ground. The smell of blood floated in air. Countless of horrifying blood dropped on the ground. The bats ignored the comrades that died and kept hitting the aura. The four Jadeon were all pale, watching the rare savage beasts.

Outside of light aura, soon, it built up a thick bat corpses that near half men

height.

Shaw Danon suddenly discovered, the back of his clothes was wet by the sweat.

The scary scene last for long time, until the bat corpses outside of the aura had built to a men height, the bats finally stopped their vicious attack. That time, even the Union Mirror's aura had darkened, but still not falling under the darkness of night.

The black cloud was still surrounding the only light in the night, not willing to leave.

The four people did not blink, their hand holding the espers, remain on guard.

The large crowd of bats seem ran out of ideas. They were only surrounding them, not making any attack.

That lasted until dawn.

The first beam of sunlight came. It was like a summon. All bats suddenly flight up, circled in sky for a moment, then headed back to the place where they came out last night. Not even awhile, the countless of bats were already gone.

The four Jadeon relieved. But waited for a while for Kevern to make sure the bats won't reappear, he unsummon Union Mirrior's aura.

The aura disappeared.

The bats corpses surrounding them suddenly collapsed and fell into the center from all directions. The four people were flooded in this disgusting river. Shaw Danon's heart beated hard, and almost thought he had stopped breathing. At the same time, he heard a scream came near him. A hand held out and grabbed his arm.

The strength was so strong that even with clothes lay between it, the nails sunk into his skin.

The pain pierced into his heart. He turned and saw the frightened beautiful girl. Her pale face in dawn with a little panic, caused his heart to hurt without reason.

All the sudden, all the fear in his heart seem disappeared. Though there was still nervousness, but his attention was drew by Anan. It seem like standing in front of him, he could not flinch.

He stepped forth, blocked in front of her.

Anan's breathing calmed down slowly. She slightly lifted her head. Lips moved. She looked deeply at Shaw Danon's face and let go of her hand.

Chapter 34 Ancient Cave

The four people managed to get out from the bat corpses. They already in a very embarrassing situation. Their bodies were covered by the dark red blood. The smell was also extremely stink.

The four people were Jadeon, normally stay clean, especially Anan. In this situation, it was worse than cut her with a blade three times.

They quickly walked away, just to get as far as possible from those disgusting corpses. They arrived on a flat rock. The four hit their clothes and tried to clean it up. But those blood mark and the stinky smell could not get rid of no matter how hard they tried.

The three men were still better, but Anan's cold face was more like snow and frost than usual. She rubbed her clothes aggressively, it was like she will not give up until those disgusting thing is gone.

Those blood were very sticky. Really soon, Kevern, Issa, and Shaw Danon gave up. But Anan was still not giving up. The three men looked at each other, even Kevern was embarrassed, did not know what to say.

The four people were silent. When Anan was still frowned, and rubbing her clothes, and whistle came from the sky. They looked up and saw four lights appeared in the sky. Two were yellow, one white and one green. A moment later they landed in front of them. After the lights were gone, four people appeared.

On the left were two monks. One of them was huge, thick eyebrows and large eyes. His body filled with muscles. If not because of the cassock, people may mistaken him as a bandit. The young monk standing in front was a head shorter. He was completely different. White skin, bright eyes. Covered with a white cassock. Though he may look thin, but could not be underestimate.

The two people stood on the right were two young male and female. They looked like a pair, just like the boy and girl servants of bodhisatta.

The four people looked at the Jadeons. Seeing their bodies covered with blood, they frowned. The young monk said: "Amitabha, may I ask are four donors Jadeons?"

The four Jadeons looked at each other. Kevern stepped forth, bowed: "Correct. It is Kevern. You are....."

The young monk smiled: "Young monk is Skysong Temple's Fazzan, this is Shidi Fashan. The two there are Incense Valley's distinguish disciples Li Su and Yanon."

The tall Fashan greeted them respectfully. But Li Su and Yanon were quite arrogant, they slightly nodded.

Kevern nodded and ignored the Incense, said to Fazzan: “Ah, I had admired Skysong Temple’s Fazzan Shixiong name for long time, praise as the rare talent by the righteous cultivators. Today we meet, it’s really true!”

Fazzan smiled, said: “Qi Shixiong mistaken. Young monk’s potential is dumb. Its just because master Puhan did not desert me, and pass me the incanation, wish to do good deeds for the world. How could I able to mention along side with all the Shixions from Jadeon.”

Kevern laughed, waved his hand: “Fazzan Shixiong is too modest. Come, I will introduce my Shidi and Shimei.” Shaw Danon did not know why, when Kevern was introducing him, he felt Fazzan’s eyes brightened, and paid more attention to him.

This time, Li Su who was being ignored was already not pleased. Wait until Kevern finished introducing, he suddenly spoke coldly: “Qi Shixiong, your Jadeon Clan is the leader of the Good. Taoist cultivation is the most supreme in this world. But why today we meet, everyone of you are in such embarrassment?”

The four Jadeons’ faces changed. Shaw Danon dislike him more as he saw Li Su’s arrogant. Anan stopped rubbing her clothes. Her eyes coldly looked at the two Incense, but more of glared at the beautiful girl called Yanon.

Although there was a little anger in Kevern, but he calmed down very fast, laughed: “Not to conceal any of you. Last night we were trying to search for Cave of Fangs, but unfortunately there were countless of bats.....”

Fazzan and others’ looks changed. Fashan’s eyes widen, said roughly: “Um, they are the animals from Cave of Fangs. Vicious and cruel. Very difficult to deal

with.”

Kevern noticed that the four people in front of him were arrived earilier few days earilier, and also met those painful creatures. Issa laughed, stepped forth, smiled to Fashan: “Fashan Shixiong, then that mean you guys also met those vampires?”

Fashan nodded, said: “Right. But the numbers are massive, so we can only return.”

Issa exclaimed, then sighed: “Ah, not to conceal anyone, we also met those bats last night. We wanted to remove the harm from the people, so we killed for the entire day. But no matter how much effort we putted it, its not helping. We could only drive those evils back to the cave, and now we ended up body of filth. Alas, shameful, shameful!”

He turned and looked at Kevern, smiled and said together: “Shameful! Shameful!”

Incense Valley’s Li Su snorted with scorn. Yanon’s face also written with disbelieve. Fazzan smiled and not say anything. Fashan shown admire on his face. Shaw Danon was startled.

After a moment, Fazzan smiled and said: “This quest to Kongsang mountain, the elders of three factions want us to come and train ourself. Now everyone are here, but Jadeon Shixionsgs are tired by the journey, we shall rest for a day. Tomorrow morning we will go into Cave of Fangs and invesitgate. How does that sound?”

Li Su snorted, said: "Fazzan Shixiong is right. Otherwise someone will find an other excuse when they get into the cave."

Except for Shaw Danon, from Jadeon, Kevern, Issa, and Anan were doted by their master of their own house. Who did not have a bit of arrogant in their bones. Kevern snorted, said: "Li Su Shixiong is right. Otherwise we won't have the strength to rescuse you since we are all tire!"

It was clear that Li Su did not expect people from Jadeon were also so arrogant. He came from Incense Valley, favored by his master since young. Not much disciples at his age could match his cultivation. He grew up to be arrogant, how could he take this. He stared at Kevern: "Then that mean Qi Shixiong's cultivation is far better than me. I would like to see it myself."

This was matter for clan's reputation. Just when Kevern was about to step forth, Anan came out from behind, said coldly: "No need Qi Shixiong to bother with this. Let me to test Incense Valley's magic."

Li Su suddenly startled. Although Anan was covered by bloodstain, her skin was whiter than ever in comparsion. Though the look was cold, but there was a celestial like beauty. He had never saw such peerless beauty before. He was stunned.

At the same time, Fazzan stepped forth, smiled: "Shixions, we come here to invesitgate the left over Felkin. Before you departed, your master must had already reminded you. If your master know we are handling thing here with violent, when we go back we will be punished. This is unnecessary, what about we all take a step back?"

Li Su snorted, looked at the sky. Though he did not say anything, the meaning was obvious. Kevern remembered the reminder of Master Doyal Shen. He felt a little regret, and since this is the chance to get away, he said: “Lu Shimei, Fazzan Shixiong is right, harmony is important.”

Anan looked at everyone, then snorted. She went back, and saw Shaw Danon was looking at herself. Her eyes swept around Shaw Danon’s face, then stood alone at the side.

Shaw Danon could feel the chill rose from his heart after being looked by Anan.

Then Fazzan said: “We leave here first, and return tomorrow to investigate. .”

No one had comment. They followed Fazzan arrived at a small hill thirty miles away from Kongsang Mountain. There was clear spring. That was what the Jadeon needed. They washed and found a secluded place to change clothes. Then came out and met with Fazzan and others.

Anan is a female. She picked the farthest place to change, so she was the last one came out. After washed, her beautiful face added some coquetry. Issa, Li Su and others eyes brighten, even the quiet Yanon looked at her.

The eight “best” disciples of the three main Good factions were sitting in a circle on the ground. From Fazzan and others, Shaw Danon found out the bats from “Cave of Fangs” were tamed by the Felkin. They assisted Felkin heretic’s task. Eight hundreds years ago when Felkin’s hideout got wiped out, small number of bats survived. After a long time, their numbers grew into today’s amount. They went out and hunted everyday, turned the place within five

hundreds miles radius into barren.

But those bats seem afraid of sunlight, so they only active at night and rest inside the cave at day. Last night the Jadeon was happened to meet those bats, they would be fine if they went to the mountain during day.

Issa frowned, asked Fazzan: “Fazzan Shixiong, with those animals in the Cave of Fangs, how are we suppose to get inside?”

Fazzan hesitated for a second, then said: “According to what young monk found out these days, those animals only hang up-side down on the cave wall in morning, not doing anything. Perhaps we can get inside.”

Issa couldn't speak. Shaw Danon could not help himself, said: “Then that mean Fazzan Shixiong is unsure. If they attack us when we get inside, what are we going to do?”

Fazzan turned to him. There was like something shining in his eyes, but his manner was still soft: “Exactly. Young monk is not perfectly sure about it. But masters ordered us to do it, we have to do it. Go there and try, if that really happen, we can alway retreat. Today me, Shidi Fashan, and the two donor from Incense Valley were planning to enter the cave. Did not expect to meet you. That even better, more people more help.”

“Hm” Li Su snorted again. The four Jadeon looked at him. Li Su did not fear, but his expression changed when Anan looked at him.

Kevern ignored him, turned to Fazzan: “There is still one thing that need to ask Fazzan Shixiong.”

Fazzan said: “Qi Shixiong say it.”

Kevern said: “Three months ago, our Jadeon disciple, Enu Xiao Shxiong came here already. Not sure if you know where he is right now?”

Fazzan shook his head: “The two from Incense Valley and us arrived here together, never see Xiao Shixiong.”

Kevern frowned, thinking.

※ ※ ※

The next day, at dawn, Shaw Danon and others arrived at Kongsang Mountain. The mountain was barren, sands all over the ground. There was not even a bird call. They probably became the bats’ dessert or already moved out from the mountain.

Fazzan and others had been here several days earilier, so they already discovered the location of Cave of Fangs. They followed him and carefully arrived at the entrance of Cave of Fangs.

It was a large cave, located at the back of the mountain. Slightly slide downward. Only the entrance had a bit of light. Inside was completely dark. Even standing sixty feet away, they could feel the freezing wind coming out from the cave. There was also some sound coming, like whisper, like ghost cry.

Kevern looked at the cave, turned back and forced a smile on his face, said:

“Let us go in.”

Fazzan nodded: “Right, but there are unexpectable danger inside the cave, we better prepare our esper first.”

This was life and death matter, they quickly took out their esper. When Shaw Danon took out his fire stick, Li Su, Yonan, and two monks of Skysong were stunned. Shaw Danon blushed, quite embarrassed. Fortunately at that moment, Anan said coldly under the blue glow of Aeolian Firmus: “Go.” Then being the first one went into the dark cave. Others followed.

When he was about to enter, just when the wind from the cave became the coldest, Shaw Danon could feel Fazzan moved close to him intentionally. He smiled, Fazzan smiled as reply, said quietly: “Zhang Shidi, the road ahead is dangerous. You need to follow closely behind me.”

Shaw Danon startled. But Fazzan already entered the darkness. He did not have time to think about additional stuff. He quickly followed.

After a few steps in the cave, Shaw Danon felt the ground under his feet turned soft, his entire body sank. He was surprised. Fortunately it stopped at ankle height. They were already swallowed by darkness. But with the glow of espers, Shaw Danon looked down, his face turned bitter. He found out he was standing on extreamly thick layer of bat stool. Stink smell was enough, but with the feet sank into it, it was as miserable as it can get. He saw other people’s expressions were also the same. Especially the two females, Anan and Incense Valley’s Yanon’s eyebrows held tight. Their faces were pale.

Shaw Danon shook his head, forced his mind to settle down. After they got familar with the environment, they continued forward. At the same time, the

whisper like sound was getting louder. It was at everywhere, near, far away, front or back, left or right.

They walked for another forty feet, then suddenly Kevern said quietly: "Halt!"

Everyone immediately stopped. Kevern's Frozen Ice sword slowly rose up, lightened cave ahead. Everyone held their breath.

It was an extremely huge cave. The top was very far from the ground. Under the white light of Frozen Ice sword, they could see countless of bats were hanging upside down on top of the cave. The bats were packed so densely that they couldn't see the rock of the cave. It seemed like the ghost cry was created by those bats.

The bats felt uncomfortable when they got shined by light. They moved, but did not fly. They climbed to the darkness. Some just climbed on their friends. The large jaws of these animals were fearsome.

They held their breath. After a while, they noticed the bats did not make much movement, and wouldn't attack. Everyone was relieved. Fazzan said quietly: "Fortunately young monk's prediction is right. Everyone, let's continue."

They turned and continued to further inside the terrifying cave, deeper into the darkness. As they advanced, the stools on the ground were getting thicker and thicker. Under the light of Frozen Ice sword, the bats in the cave were like endless. The bats' mumble around their ears. If not because all eight of them were cultivated, mind strengthened, normal people would have gone mad already.

They walked and walked. Shaw Danon walked in the middle. Fazzan always walked in front of him. He saw there were also some dirt on the young monk's white cassock. Shaw Danon suddenly remembered Pozhi.

The person that lived inside of his memory, was he from the place same as the monk in front of him?

From the front, Kevern suddenly called: "Ah!"

Before Shaw Danon realized, he felt his feet stepped on hard ground.

Chapter 35 Heretics

Fazzan quietly whispered a buddha word. Then, a orb glowed with solemn gold light rose from his palm. At first, the light was still staying with Fazzan, but under Fazzan's control, the orb brightened instantly. The gold light surged to all direction. The golden aura already passed Shaw Danon before he could hear the sound of it.

Everyone's faces were shined by the golden light. At the same time, their heart felt easy. The nervousness also eased. The dark cave instantly turned as bright as day. If not because of the bats, it may cause people to think this is the holy place of Buddhist.

Even the proud Li Su was surprised: "Orb of Luck!"

Fazzan looked at him, said: "Li Shixiong has a pair of sharp eyes."

Li Su mannar toward Fazzan became respectful, said: "No, it is Fazzan Shixiong who has high cultivation."

With the light of "Orb of Luck", Shaw Danon could see they were on a clean ground. He lifted his head and found the bats were gone, but the strange sound

was still next to his ears.

After few seconds, he realized behind him, countless of bats were hanging on the top of the cave. But above the hard, clean ground Shaw Danon and others were on, there was a red line cutted through the cave wall. It was like the blood vessel of the stones.

This red line acted as a border. Outside, there were countless of bats, but none went across the line. There were no more bat's stool on the ground.

Fazzan looked around, said lowly: "This place is very weird. Be cautious everyone."

They finally able setted their feet on a clean, after they checked surrounding, their first action was to tidy up their clothes. Issa took off his shoes, poured out all the disgusting thing, whispered to Shaw Danon: "This is the first time in my life understand that walking on a clean ground is such comfortable thing!"

Shaw Danon smiled, quickly tidy up the clothes. He felt better. After a while, Kevern saw everyone was ready, said: "Let go." Then walked deeper into cave.

Everyone followed. Soon, as they walking forward, the place behind them sinked into darkness again.

And in front, darkness was like a devil, opened his arms with a evil smile and welcome them.

The small light in the darkness, slowly walking.

They walked for long time. The ancient cave was like endless. It used to be very wide, but as they got deeper, the tunnel became narrow and twisting. They did not know which direction they were going except downward.

The sound of the bats were already gone. In the darkness, there were no sound except for their footstep. Shaw Danon could feel the moisture was getting heavier. He could not imagin how deep they were underground.

“Orb of Luck” shined with golden buddhist light, shone at everyone. Kevern also summoned “Union Mirror” just in case anything happen. They walked. After a while, Kevern suddenly stopped, held out his arm, said: “Stop.”

Everyone immediately stopped.

Around them was silent. Not a single sound.

“Orb of Luck” and “Union Mirror” got brighter. In front of them, the cave ahead, there was a fork. Both were dark, leading to unknown place, like a devil’s mouth. Between the forked roads, there was a stone tablet that was about six men high, four characters were marked in red:

Heaven On My Side!

※ ※ ※

Li Su snorted, said angrily: “Felkin Heretic, dare to call the name of heaven!”

Fazzan frowned, looked at the monument again, said: "I heard my master Pohun said, eight hundred years ago Felkin did have a monument like this. But it was cutted in half by our Righteous ancestor. Why it remain in good condition today?"

Yanon suddenly spoke: "Look at the bottom of the stone, isn't that a crack?"

Her voice was soft, plus this was the first time Jadeons heard Yanon speak. They were a little surprised to hear her voice. They looked closely and saw a thin gap. It was right in the middle of the monument, splitted it in half. The stone at crack was dark red. If not look at it carefully, they will never see it.

Kevern nodded, said to Yanon: "Yan Shimei is careful."

Yanon smiled, lowered her head and remain quiet.

Kevern looked at the monument again, then turned to others, said: "This monument was already repaired. It is clear the Felkin Heretics are here doing some shameful business. We are right to come here."

Fazzan said: "Qi Shixiong is right. There are danger hide everywhere in this cave. We now have a difficult question. This fork, which road should we take?"

Kevern slightly pondered, said: "Fazzan Shixiong, you have said your master Pohan Divine Monk had mentioned about this place. Did he senior said about this fork?"

Fazzan nodded, said: "Master did mentioned it. But he alway learned this from the master of previous generation. At the battle between Good and Evil,

both forks end up with Felkin Heretics' lair. As for situation now, he does not know about it."

Everyone silence. After a while, Kevern looked at other three people from his faction, then turned to Fazzan, said: "What about this, we split in half. Us four from Jadeon will go to the left. Fazzan, Fashan Shixiong and the two Incense will go to the right. If meet Felkin Heretic, use a loud whistle to inform. How it is?"

Fazzan was quiet. Although he knew splitting is not a good thing, but the length of the dark road is unpredictable. If they go to the wrong path, it will waste couple of hours. They are all elite from each factions, they can save themselves most likely. He turned and looked at Li Su and Yanon, seeing they did not have disagreement, so he said: "Then let do what Qi Shixiong said. Must be cautious everyone."

Then, he looked at Shaw Danon again.

Shaw Danon felt that Fazzan Shixiong paid a lot of attention to him, but he only smiled in reply.

Kevern nodded and saluted to Fazzan and others, then lead Shaw Danon and other two to the left path. The light behind them slowly disappeared, seem like Fazzan entered the right road.

Kevern walked in the front, putted Union Mirror above his head and activated the spiritual power of it. Union Mirror's soft yellow aura covered the four people.

This road was getting more narrow. The rocks on the side were pointy. Shaw Danon almost got cutted. The only thing that remain the same was the eternal darkness. In here, it seem there were never brightness before.

The four Jadeons were not in a mood to talk. Especially Kevern, who was putting all his mind into preparing for unknown danger.

This walk, was also took a long time. Shaw Danon doubted even if they really meet some Felkin Heretic and let out a long whistle, can Fazzan Shixiong hear it is a problem.

At this moment, a sudden change happened. In the dead darkness, there were loud ghost cries. It was loud and shocking.

The four people were surprised. Kevern was about to remind them, his body was shocked. Different glows brightened in the darkness surrounding them, and attacked on Union Mirror's aura at the same time.

The power was so strong that Union Mirror shook. Kevern's body was shocked, he couldn't speak. He quickly focus and support the aura.

The ghost cries were getting louder, causing them to feel dizzy. Issa, Anan, and Shaw Danon protected Kevern in the center. The countless of lights were hitted back by Union Mirror. They turned and striked again. In there darkness, unknown numbers of enemies were hiding, controlling the espers.

Kevern's face was pale. His hands held the incanation mark tight. Although under the attacking of espers, the Union Mirror settled. The aura got brighter.

Just when the Jadeons were relieved, Shaw Danon suddenly felt the ground was shaking.

He hadn't react to it, Issa already shouted: "Careful, below the feet there are--"

He hadn't finished, a huge bang covered all the sound. They felt the ground was shaking, then a powerful force came out from the earth. The ground was destoried and the Jadeons fell to different directions. Union Mirror could protect the surrounding, but could not protect below the feet. The aura disappeared. The mirror flight back to Kevern.

The whistles of the esper's lights were like elated laugh, charged at the four seperated people.

Shaw Danon was standing a little bit front, so he fell forward when the force from the ground pushed his feet. But his long time cultivation in Jadeon allowed him to immediately let go of fire stick. The familiar coolness circulated through his body. "Fire stick" let out soft green light and faced the glows that were coming from behind.

A moment later, a dark red light was the first arrived. Shaw Danon could smell the blood stink. It was disgusting. He quickly held his breath and drive the fire stick. The green light brightened and stopped the dark red light. Under the glow of green light, the dark red light seem dimmed.

From unknown place in the darkness, there was suddenly an exclaim.

At the same time, one grey and one yellow light also striked at the fire stick.

With the light, Shaw Danon could see the dark red light was a dark red trident, covered with blood stain. The yellow light was a three feet long sword. The grey light was a weird, giant beast fang!

Shaw Danon's body was still in mid-air, but basically settled. But got hit by three espers at once, though there was "fire stick" blocking them for him, the strong force pushed him back. He couldn't control his body and landed heavily on the wall. Half of the body fell into the wall. The rocks flew everywhere.

Shaw Danon could see stars in his eyes. The pain in the back struck into his heart. But he understood it was a matter of life and death, he gritted his teeth and bared the pain. He fell onto the ground. The three deadly objects in the air turned around and struck at Shaw Danon again.

In the darkness, where were the people who are controlling the espers?

Shaw Danon held his incantation mark, and the fire stick crashed with the yellow sword and beast fang. They bounced back. Shaw Danon quickly fell forward and dodged. The dark red trident hit on the wall behind him, creating a large hole on the stone wall.

The grey fang returned again. Struck him from above. The cold tooth point was very noticeable in the darkness. Shaw Danon could not imagine the consequence if that weird esper hit on him.

Shaw Danon gritted his teeth. His both hands drew a line in mid-air. The fire stick followed his mind, and blocked the fang. A line of crack appeared on the fang.

From far away, there was a scream, seem like the owner of the esper was pained and surprised.

Shaw Danon had no time to taste that pityful enjoyment, for the yellow sword arrived in front of him just an instant. Shaw Danon could not react immediately. He shouted, floated up and fused into the green light of fire stick.

The yellow sword did not give him a break. It turned and attacked him from below his feet. Fang from above, sword from below. Shaw Danon slightly trembled. He curled himself and mumbled incanation. Fire stick's green light brighted and covered him.

The two loud bangs almost happened at the same time from above and below Shaw Danon. The two espers' of enemies returned to their owners. The fire stick shook in the air. Shaw Danon's heart almost stopped. He almost had the illusion thought that his fire stick was turned into pieces.

But fortunately, although his fire stick was ugly, the material of it was extreemly tough, it did not get a scratch. The sword and the fang on the other hand, their light dimmed, it seem like they were damaged. But fire stick received such hard hit, cause the light that protected Shaw Danon to disappear.

Just when Shaw Danon was about to retrieve back fire stick, suddenly a sharp pain from his shoulder. Half of his body weakened. His brain was empty. He lowered his head and saw a small trident stabbed through his shoulder. The blood kept coming out.

The dark red trident had sneak attacked him and injured him severely while Shaw Danon was off guard.

Shaw Danon saw the dark red color of the trident was bright, it was like the blood had awaken it. Shaw Danon groaned, he was originally planned to take out the trident. But as the blood stain got darker on the trident, a shadow rose from the trident, then attached tightly to Shaw Danon's back.

The owner of the trident lived inside of this esper.

Shaw Danon felt dizzy. He did not have the strength to shake off the heretic on his back. Beside pain, there was also paralyzing feeling from the wound. Trident was mostly poisonous. He could not see the heretic's face, but he could see the hands that grabbed his shoulders. They were dry, bony and stink.

From far, there was a wild laugh. And from behind him, a evil voice came: "Jadeon brat, you ask for it. Now give me your fresh blood!"

Shaw Danon did not have time to understand his word, but he could understand through his action. The heretic in the shadow opened his mouth and bitted on left side of Shaw Danon's neck, sucking the blood. At the same time, the dark red trident became brighter, it was seem also drinking blood.

Shaw Danon was extreamly terrified. All the blood were going toward to his throat. His body felt light. The strength of his body guadually disappeared. He could not even support the fire stick. The fire stick fell from mid-air.

This scene, it seem like he was back to previous time, that day in ancient valley.

That nightmare!

Fire stick fell from above his head and landed in front of him. Let out soft green glow, like summoning something. Shaw Danon grabbed it, and felt the coolness inside of the fire stick was raging, like anger.

His blood was kept flowing out, and was drunk by the heretic. Shaw Danon could no longer hear any sound. He used all his remaining strength, like a cornered beast, he stabbed at the heretic with his fire stick.

The fire stick was no sharp, but it stabbed through flesh like they were tofu.

The heretic shook, and stop sucking blood. He looked at Shaw Danon with an unbelievable look. Shaw Danon also looked at him.

It was like the cold laugh from devil of hell, but it was also like the heart beats of someone in the darkness. Shaw Danon's hand that was holding the fire stick could feel wave and wave of heart beat. Like the movement of blood, and also like the cheer of devil.

The dark red trident had darkened. Behind them, endless darkness came.

At the instant the darkness swallowed Shaw Danon and that heretic, half concious, Shaw Danon saw the scene that he will never forget in his entire life.

The heretic's originally wrinkled, but healthy face, had mummified, the flesh dried, lay on the bones.

Next moment, darkness surrounded him.

The lost had regain. Endless energy came from the fire stick, entered Shaw Danon's body.

Shaw Danon regain concious, but he was startled. His shoulder was still hurt, but the unknown power had clotted the blood. But this young men did not noticed it. There was only one idea in his mind:

What did I do? What did do?

Chapter 36 Strange Eye

From behind, the sound of battle linger in one's ears. It was clear the three Jadeons were fighting the other heretics. But Shaw Danon here entered an awkward silent.

Shaw Danon was lost. But the owners of the yellow sword and grey fang saw this scene with their own eyes. They were shocked and not know what to do next.

“Cynical, did I see that correctly? Jiang Lao San was sucking blood, but it seem like his own blood got drained?”

Other person said in a rough voice in the darkness: “Damn, Jadeon has a person that practice ‘Art of Vampire’. Can it be that he is our holy faction’s disciple?”

The first person cursed, but he could not say anything for a while, then he said angrily: “No, that guy is strange. Must ask him clearly!”

Two lights brightened in front of Shaw Danon, and two figures appeared. Shaw Danon was surprised, and threw away the distracting thought, prepared

for the enemies.

In the light, the yellow sword and the grey fang returned to their owners. The one on the left caught the sword. He was a tall and skinny man. A hook nose and small, aggressive, black eyes; the one standing next to was very weird looking. Shaw Danon was surprised by his look. He was also tall, but the face was extremely weird. Loosen eyelids, pointed nose, high ears, long tongue that often stuck out. He looked really like a dog. The grey fang returned to his hand. Shaw Danon immediately thought, is that a dog tooth?

The person named Cynical saw Shaw Danon was staring at him with surprise. He was mad and shouted: "Hey! Brat! Why staring at your Cynical Dialectian?"

"Cynical Dialectian?" Shaw Danon frowned, then realized the dog looking man was wearing a black Taoist robe. He seems like belong to the same religion as Jadeon. Perhaps they may have some relationship if trace back three thousands years ago.

Cynical Dialectian saw Shaw Danon was clearly scornful, he became more angry: "Brat, the dialectian is asking you how did you killed vampire?"

Shaw Danon startled: "Vampire?"

The tall men said angrily: "The one that on your back!"

Shaw Danon remembered that there was a dead body on his back. He felt chill from his neck. He was surprised and jumped away, threw off the dead body. The mummified guy fell on the ground. Shaw Danon felt sick and turned his head away.

Cynical Dialectian and the tall men looked at the mummy, then exchanged a look with each other. They could find the surrisement in opposite's eyes. Art of Vampire is cruel and secret, although powerful, but it severely damage self. After practice, they do not look like human nor ghost. Though they were all Felkin and alway respect this magic, but they only know a little about it.

The one that was dead on the floor was the Art of Vampire's only disciple, and he had all of his own blood drained out. Base on what they knew, this was far stronger than vampire Jiang Lao San, even the legendary Vampire Elder may not have such power. But no way this Jadeon kid in front of him had Vampire's strange look.

Cynical Dialectian looked at Shaw Danon, asked: "Are you Vampire Elder's..... disciple?"

Shaw Danon startled: "What Vampire Elder?"

Cynical Dialectian letted out his tongue and licked around his face. Shaw Danon recalled back the Big Yella on Jadeon's Bamboo Peak. Just when he was thinking, he heard a scream from behind. A men in the black fell out from the darkness, blood all over his face. He struggled for a moment, it seem like he could not live for long.

Shaw Danon immediately remembered his allies were fighting, but he was talking with those Felkin Heretics. It was foolish. He quickly rose and about to assist.

Cynical Dialectian and the tall men saw Shaw Danon suddenly moved. They were surprised and thought he suddenly revolted. They quickly prepared. But

right after Shaw Danon's body moved, he fell, half kneeling on the ground. He gasped, sweat came out from his forehead.

Shaw Danon was in a hurry and forgot the dark red trident was still stabbed at his shoulder. His body moved, then the heart piercing pain came. The clotted wound was teared by movement and the blood came out.

Seeing such great opportunity, how can Cynical Dialectian and the tall guy let it go. Their sword and fang were brighten up again.

At that moment, a clear howl came from behind. Among different color of lights in darkness, a dazzling blue light brightened, immediately covered other lights. Within the blue light, Aeolian Firmus unsheathed. Behind the sword, Anan stood in mid-air. Her clothes fluttered with the wind.

While Cynical Dialectian and the tall guy were shocked, Aeolian Firmus's blue light turned into a giant blue sword, and striked at the darkness. Many lights were trying to resist, but they were vanished when they touched the blue light. Then several screams, five or six men fell out from the darkness. The blue light hit the stone wall. The gravels flight wildly. Many people were wounded. At the same time, Kevern's Frozen Ice sword brightened, charged from the side and turned the Felkin followers into ice stick. Then Issa followed and crushed them with his sword.

Cynical Dialectian and the tall guy looked at each other. They gave up Shaw Danon and drove their yellow sword and grey fang to hold Kevern and Issa's attack.

It appeared two of them were stronger among the Felkin Heretics. They quickly stopped Kevern and others, but they suffered also.

Last night they saw the scene when Kevern and others were attacked by bats. So they put up a trap in the deep of the ancient cave, and suddenly destroyed the invulnerable like “Union Mirror”’s protection aura, then isolated the four Jadeon disciples. This plan was successful, but the Jadeon disciples’ cultivation was higher than they had expected, difficult to face.

This ambush was led by Cynical Dialectian, the tall man, and Vampire Jiang Lao San. They could see Shaw Danon was the weakest among the four, so they agreed to finish Shaw Danon together first, then take out the other three. But the event went weird, Shaw Danon was wounded, but Vampire Jiang Lao San was mysteriously got his blood drained and died.

They had held Kevern and Issa temporarily, but there was still a blue sword beautiful lady. The brat behind them was injured, but he was extremely weird. If both of them attack at once, the situation will not be good. After two rounds, Anan injured several other Felkin followers, just when she turned her attention to them, Cynical Dialectian shouted: “Run!”

The tall guy was thinking the same thing, and retrieved back the esper. Then, they turned into two light and escaped deeper into the cave. The Felkin followers saw this, they screamed and ran away in all directions.

Kevern decided quickly, shouted: “Chase that two people.” Then he flight with his sword and chased after them. Issa immediately followed. Anan’s blue light brightened, just when about to chase, she remembered something and turned back and saw Shaw Danon flight with his green light fire stick. Blood all over his shoulder, but the dark red trident was already pulled out.

Shaw Danon flight forward. Anan watched his figure, startled for a moment, then she followed.

The chase in the cave was a little similar to that day when Shaw Danon and Hidi chased after Ashh at Bamboo Peak's back hill. The road twisted around. Suddenly turned left, suddenly turned right, and suddenly rose, suddenly down. Then it was an other fork, but the four Jadeons did not worry about much. They were only chasing the yellow and grey light.

The cave's stones were extreemly sharp. He followed closely to his allies and focus on controlling the fire stick. Some places were so narrow that they only allow only one person to pass at one time. Shaw Danon did not got the time to worry. He passed it within a second. Six lights were racing in the darkness. The speed was surprising fast. Shaw Danon felt the the darkness and the fierce wind were tangling together.

This chase lasted for half hour. Cynical Dialectian and his friend gained advantage, for they were familar with the landscape. Though they could not get the four annoying guys off, but they at least did not let them get too close.

Suddenly, a beam of light appeared before them. Cynical Dialectian and the tall guy immediately used full power to fly toward to the light. Kevern and others were still chasing. Shaw Danon followed behind them. He could felt the pain on his shoulder slowly went away. He bared the pain and kept up with them, even himself was surprised. His shoulder was hurt, but there was endless energy within his channels inside of his body. When he recalled that scene, and remembered the word "vampire" Cynical Dialectian had said, his heart was colded, and frozen to the marrows.

The light was ahead. Getting closer and closer, brighter and brighter. The six people were like shooting arrows, rushed into the brightness.

※ ※ ※

The brightness was like the evil flower blossomed in the darkness, lightened their eyes. Shaw Danon follow others jumped into the light. What was in front of them surprised them.

The last place they were in was a wide and straight tunnel. At the outside of the tunnel, it was an amazingly large area. The top of the cave was about a thousand feet above their head while the ground was a hundred feet below their feet. Not far away on the ground ahead, there was large stone shined with strong light, brightened the entire place.

But the most surprising thing was not that stone, it was behind the stone. It was a huge abyss. The stone had brightened the top of the cave, but it could not light up the abyss for a little. Seeing it from mid-air, it was covered by darkness. Even the other side of the abyss could not be seen, only a dreadful, evil darkness.

There were three men standing in front of the large stone. One was a bearded huge men. Other one was a little beautiful young woman. The last one was a pale young men in white clothes. Cynical Dialectian and the tall guy landed beside them, stood before the large stone. Kevern saw everyone of their faces were weird. He did not dare to be careless. He instructed the disciples to land fifty feet away from the large stone.

Shaw Danon stood there and saw three large characters that were craved fancily on the large stone:

Forsaken Abyss!

The four Jadeons landed. The people in front of the large stone did not make a move. Only the bearded huge men frowned and said: "Cynical, Liu Gao, you two are too suck. Faced some Jadeon children, and you two became embarrassing like this, and lead them to here!"

Cynical Dialectian flushed, was about to argue, the middle age woman who was standing behind the huge men looked at them, then screamed: "Where is Jiang Lao San?"

Cynical looked toward the Jadeon, said: "Died under their hands."

"What?" The people were moved, seem like they did not expect the Jadeon people's cultivation can be strong enough to kill Jiang Lao San. The woman startled, shook her head, said: "We won't able to give him a good answer if Vampire Elder ask us about it!"

The bearded men pondered for a moment, then looked at the Jadeon, his mouth mumbled: "Then we capture those young Jadeon, and give them to Vampire Elder. That should work."

The others nodded. Kevern saw that they were so confident, he needed to be more careful. He whispered to the other three behind him: "It seem like those people are the bosses of Felkin. I am fear their cultivation are higher than the two we just fought. Everyone need to be careful."

Shaw Danon answered, then he turned and suddenly found that Anan's eyes

had swept across the wound on his shoulder. He startled a little. Anan turned her eyes away.

The large men stepped forth, said to the Jadeons: "I recommand all of you surrender now and avoid the bone crushing pain you are going to suffer when we fight."

Kevern snorted, before he said anything, Anan said coldly: "Felkin cowards, dare to be so savage, today is the date for you to die."

Kevern and Issa clapped their hands, said: "Nice one Lu Shimei, exactly!"

The large men face turned cold, said: "You ask for it!"

Then he glared at the four people. Shaw Danon was getting ready, and suddenly saw the right eye of the large men had enlarged, turned into red. The huge eye was horrifing and funny.

Just when he was curious, the large eyes of the men shot out a red beam. The Jadeons saw his weird look, they were already prepared. Kevern immediately summoned Frozen Ice and formed two layers of ice wall.

But the evil energy of the red beam hitted the ice wall and melted a hole and passed through just in a second. It dashed to them silently.

Kevern was surprised, he immediately held up Frozen Ice and blocked in front of everyone. The red beam hitted on the Frozen Ice sword and disappeared within the white light of the sword. But Kevern's body was shivered. He peered at his Frozen Ice sword. The originally snowy white sword had a small dot of

dark red.

The Frozen Ice sword was trembling, it seem like invaded by evil object. Kevern's heart was sad. As a cultivator, the esper was very important. But it did not allow Kevern to think too much. Just when the red beam was gone, the giant red eye shot out an other red beam. When hitted on the ice wall, it melted a hole, passed through silently and attacked the four people.

Kevern frowned. Frozen Ice sword blocked it again. The red beam disappeared but Frozen Ice sword had one more red mark.

The large men did not say anything. His giant red eye kept on shooting red beams like arrows in very fast speed. Kevern blocked them all, but the dark red mark was getting heavier. The white light of Frozen Ice also dimmed.

The other three noticed it was not going good. Issa was the first rushed out, and summoned his esper "Xuanyuan" and wanted to attack from the side. But the men just slightly turned his head and shot out a red beam at him with the giant red eye. Issa did not dodge fast enough. He used Xuanyuan sword to block the strange red beam.

In mid-air, Xuanyuan sword glowed with soft purple light. The red beam immediately disappeared. But on the sword, there was a red mark. Xuanyuan sword immediately trembled.

Issa could feel the evil energy that was coming from the sword and trying to invade his body. But fortunately he was standing far away, the power was not too strong. The righteous energy of Xuanyuan sword rose and covered the evil energy.

But he could no longer get farther. The large man was standing there, relaxed and only need to turn his head to let his giant red eye to send out red beam to keep Issa and Kevern at their original place. And as there were red marks more red marks, the two people could feel the evil energy was getting heavier. It used the swords as medium and slowly invaded their bodies.

Chapter 37 Forsaken Abyss

Shaw Danon saw the two were in trouble and immediately ran forth. The large men noticed it. He turned his head, and shot out a beam of red light at Shaw Danon.

There was no turning back for Shaw Danon. Though he saw what happened to Kevern and Issa, but he had no other way than to bite the bullet and block it with his fire stick.

In mid-air, the red beam hit on the fire stick glowed with soft green light. Shaw Danon could feel the strong force had shook his body, but that was it. He quickly looked at the fire stick. The black fire stick was like usual, no red mark.

Even though the fire stick was as ugly as usual, Shaw Danon was happy to notice that. He quickly took a step forward. The Felkins were surprised. The big men: "Huh?" then the giant red eye shot out another red beam.

Fire stick blocked it. The green and red light crushed together in mid-air. After a moment, the red light disappeared. The fire stick trembled, but it was still fine. Shaw Danon was relieved. His mind thought that his fire stick was ugly, but the saying humble people have tough life, this esper was mostly the same. The two Shixions' swords were fine and noble, but they were not as tough as this

humble fire stick.

Even with those disordered ideas in his mind, his feet did not stop, slowly getting closer the huge men. The relax (but because of the scary large eye, relax look disgusting) of the huge men was gone, he focus on the Shaw Danon who may look the weakest. He only shot one red beam at Kevern and Issa every while, to block their advance, while he shot rapidly at Shaw Danon.

It was obvious Shaw Danon was tired, but the black fire stick did not get harmed. The savage energy of the red beam seem ineffective to this young men. Under everyone's eyes, Shaw Danon was getting closer step by step.

The huge men already sweating on his forehead. In his heart, there was no way to figure out why the "Red Devil Eye" he had cultivated for three hundreds years was so well against Daoist's precious esper, why ineffective against a normal fire stick?

But how could he know, Red Devil Eye's power is strong indeed, using its savage, vicious energy could penetrate Kevern and others' swords. Then use the sword as a path to slowly introduce the evil energy into their bodies, allow him to be victorious fromt he very begining. But Shaw Danon's ugly fire stick was blood smelted by Shaw Danon with Felkin's most evil object "Sinister Orb" and the unknown black stick from the ancient valley behind Bamboo Peak. Compare in evil spirit, just "Sinister Orb" alone is many times stronger than Red Devil Eye, not to mention the nameless black stick.

The two greatest evil objects fused together and balance each other, covered the evil energy inside. With Shaw Danon inside it, only Shaw Danon could drive it. And that is also why it could conceal the Jadeon's elders, allow Shaw Danon to come back out from the gate of hell.

However, the red beam of Red Devil Eye was surely useless to the fire stick. But Shaw Danon was still young and ignorant. He did not know he was having a valuable esper. If it was the old Felkin leader Blackheart Elder from thousand years ago, with a Sinister Orb, he just need to swing around few times, then the men will get all his blood drained and flesh dried, leaving a Red Devil Eye rolling on his dead body.

But everyone here could never come up with that unimaginable idea. The huge men focus on Shaw Danon but still couldn't stop him from getting closer. The evil looking young men stood next to him who was quiet suddenly laughed coldly: "Nian Boss, your Red Devil Eye seem useless, can't even defeat a few Jadeon students. It is a shame that you scolded at Cynical. I think you should pass me the position of archlord."

The huge men and the young woman's faces changed. The young woman frowned and said: "Comrade Lin Fang, we are facing great enemies here, how can you say such thing?"

Lin Fang peered at the Jadeons and Anan, then he laughed coldly: "If those brats are great enemies, how are we Blood Forger able to stand up in Holy Faction, and talk about to restore the past glory accomplished by Elder Blackheart?"

Nian Boss shot another red beam at Shaw Danon, stopped him for a moment, then he turned back and shout angrily: "Beside talk with exaggeration what else can you do, why don't you come up and try?"

A evil smile rose on Lin Fang's pale face, said: "Okay, I will make you eat your word."

Then he took out a golden fan, and fanned at himself.

The Jadeons heard their conversation. They were all alerted to that evil looking young men. But after long while, all he did was calmly swinging the fan, standing there coolly and not doing anything. They were stunned.

Could it be that Lin Fang was only bragging?

Nian Boss was mad to half death by him, he said angrily: “Lin Fang, if you don’t have the skill then step aside. I can deal with those Jadeon youngsters. No need you to make sarcastic comments. Can’t you look at yourself and see do you have any skill?”

Lin Fang snorted, said: “I originally don’t want to team with you or else it will be an unhonorable victory. But seem like if I don’t show some skill, you will think I am lying is it?”

Then he tossed the golden fan into mid-air. The fan glowed with soft gold light, then it opened.

On the golden fan, there was a mountain, a river, and a condor drawings on the fan.

Wind blew, clouds surged, thunder howled, lighting flashed.

It was under the ground, inside of the ancient cave, there should never be such strange occurrences. But now in front of their eyes, these appeared. A

loud bang, then the fan shook a little, after a moment, the mountain from the fan came out. It became a thousand feet high, almost completely filled the entire room. Then the mountain fell on the four Jadeons.

Shaw Danon was frighten and turned pale. But he had no power to resist such great object. He flight backward. The mountain was about to land on him, but half of his body was still under there. When he was about to be crushed in half, someone pulled him and dragged him out.

Shaw Danon turned and found it was Kevern who saved him. His heart was bitter, but still he said quietly: "Thank you Qi Shixiong."

How could Kevern knew what Shaw Danon was thinking. He nodded solenmly. He was standing a bit back, so he got back faster. Then he saw Shaw Danon was next to him, so he pulled him.

The mountain was already made their head hurt. The mountain landed, the ground and wall shook at that instant, even the gravel from the top of the cave fell like rain. The power was shocking.

Issa also returned. His face filled with surprise, said: "Earthen Fan! This is Jieshi Mountain's Old Fengyue's esper. How did it get into this person's hand?"

They were surprised. Shaw Danon was ignorance, but Kevern got wide knowledge, he knew that Old Fengyue was a cultivator from the Jieshi Mountain of the east. He was deeply cultivated and quite famous. He normally does thing neutral between the Good and Evil. Never committed any bad thing. So both Good and Evil did not trouble this person. But they could not imagin Old Fengyue's esper was in the hand of the young men who was among those heretics.

When they were still in the state of shock, the mountain heartlessly rose up. There was no idea how strong the magic was needed to drive this large object.

Behind them it was stone wall. There was no escape. The stones were raining down. Lighting flashed and thunder roared. The Jadeons were anxious. Kevern gritted his teeth, was about to step forth and use Union Mirror to protect them and try to resist this mighty mountain, but then a blue figure flashed, Anan suddenly appeared before three of them. Suddenly blue light brightened, “Aeolian Firmus” unsheathed with the roar of dragon. The powerful energy rose.

The thunder was getting more hurry. The mountain fell with the invincible momentum, it was about to crush the four people into meat pie. Anan’s face was cold, her hair danced in the fierce wind, she was like a fairy from nine skies! “Aeolian Firmus” shook a little, answered its owner’s heart, then like an angry dragon, it rose, the blue light brightened the entire cave, and it striked at the mountain.

“Clang!”

The sands blew, the wind screamed. Under the eyes of everyone, the large air current rushed at all direction. Anan in mid-air, her face turned pale. The whole body was bounced back and hitted heavily on the wall.

But the mountain was being hitted by the large blue light pillar, it stopped. Then shook in the mid-air for a few times. After a loud noise, it shrinked and disappeared among the dust storm, reappeared on Earthen Fan.

The evil looking Lin Fang looked at Earthen Fan. His eyebrows immediately

frowned. On the drawing, the originally magnificent mountain had a large rift from the top to middle of the mountain. The fan was like having a broken face.

Aeolian Firmus flight back to the Jadeons, but Anan slid down from the wall. Her feet weakened, and almost fell on the ground. But fortunately other Jadeons already gathered there, Shaw Danon help supported her to stand up.

Anan was gasping. She wanted to push away Shaw Danon. But when her hand held out, blood came out from the corner of her lips.

The red blood passed her skin, leaving red mark above her white skin, like a soul touching beauty.

Shaw Danon startled, then he heard Lin Fang shouted angrily: "Stink woman, you dare to ruin my esper. You can't pay back even you die ten times!" The he rose into the air. The Earth Fan's gold light shined, completely not fit with his evil energy. But it still opened and closed in mid-air, coming toward them.

At far, Nian Boss already stopped shooting red beam. His "Red Devil Eye" returned normal. He stood still. The young woman stepped forth, looked at Jadeon Anan, she said quietly: "Did you see it?"

Nian Boss's face was solemn, said: "It's Aeolian Firmus!"

The young woman snorted: "Can't believe such divine item is in the hand of a

child!”

Nian Boss watched Lin Fang battle against the Jadeons, he said: “Aeolian Firmus is Nine Skies Weapon, our Bloodforger founder Elder Blackheart was defeated under this sword. Today we must take this sword no matter what!”

The young woman nodded: “That Lin Fang-”

Nian Boss laughed coldly: “This kid rely on the relative relationship with Old Fengyue and become so arrogant. If not because I am in need of men, I already don’t let him stay. Now let him fight in the van. You and I will seek a chance to take that sword.”

The young woman nodded, and focus on the field.

Everytime the Earth Fan fanned, storm would blew, and caused the small rocks to pierce Jadeons. But once they got near, Kevern and Issa would block them. When the mountain suddenly appeared, they were all surprised and did not know what to do. But now their outstanding cultivation was clearly shown.

Kevern with his Frozen Ice sword blocked wave after wave of fierce wind. Issa also shown his strength. This purple “Xuanyuan”, under the cover of Kevern, looked for a chance to strike and Lin Fang like a viper. Lin Fang almost injured by the purple light. The three people were draw. Difficult to get the result.

Shaw Danon stood behind them and supported Anan. His eyes stared at Kevern. The way he used the sword was cool and skilled. He knew himself could never match Kevern on the technique of esper. He couldn’t help but felt admire of him. For long time, he only practiced the basic of Pure Essence. Until before

he left the mountain, Surin hurried and passed him the actual useful incanation. Surely he could not compare to Kevern.

As he was attentively watching them, he suddenly felt his shoulder lightened. Anan had left his support after a while of rest.

Shaw Danon saw her jade white face had turned pale, he asked: "Are you alright, Shijie?"

Anan looked at him, then wiped away the blood on the corner of her lips. She shook her head and did not say anything.

From the time he met this icy beauty, he knew how her way does, so he did not bother to continue asking. Plue he was a bit fear of her, he turned and looked at the field.

But just when he had turned, he suddenly hear Anan screamed. He was surprised and saw a black rope came out from the stone wall behind him and Anan. It swiftly tied Anan's hands at the side of her body. A moment later a person came out from the stone wall, it was the young woman who was standing at far away a minute ago.

She giggled: "Little girl, you born to be so pretty, really causing me to envy. This "Celestial Rope" is sister specially prepared for you the Daoist."

Shaw Danon saw suffering rose on Anan's face. The "Celestial Rope" was already getting deep into the skin. It was obvious how much pain was that. But before he could react, Nian Boss dashed in and reached out his hand for the "Aeolian Firmus" behind Anan.

Shaw Danon would not let him do whatever he wanted. "Fire stick" rose up and went straight at Nian Boss. Nian Boss saw the extremely strange black stick again. His heart was a little afraid of this thing. He forced himself stopped and landed on the ground.

Kevern and Issa heard the noise. They turned and surprised. They were about to assist, but Lin Fang saw them, his mind thought: if I let you get away on your so easily, aren't I lose all of my face in front of Nian Boss. Then the Earth Fan summoned the wind and kept Kevern and Issa busy.

Shaw Danon temporary forced Nian Boss to stay back, then the fire stick striked at the young woman without hesitation. But the young woman just smiled, and swung the rope. Anan was involuntarily blocked in front for her.

Shaw Danon was surprised. He immediately stopped the fire stick. It stopped about three inches in front of Anan, and shined Anan's paled face to green.

Not wait for Shaw Danon to regain his breath, two whistles came from behind. Shaw Danon fell forward and embarrassingly dodged it. Then he looked back and saw Cynical Dialectian and the tall guy Liu Gao attacked him while he was in trouble. And Nian Boss was also eagered at taking the sword. He too attacked him.

Shaw Danon one versed three. He immediately fell into difficult struggle. If not because Nian Boss was a little fear the fire stick, and Cynical and Liu Gao saw the scene that fire stick draining blood in the darkness, they were afraid and not attacking too aggressively, Shaw Donon would already lost.

Even like that, after few rounds, under the combined strength of three esper,

Shaw Danon was already in very dangerous situation. There was still one more troubling thing. The young woman was like watching the fight, but everytime Shaw Danon tried to counter attack, she would toss Anan as a shield, then all Shaw Danon could do was to hold back. With all those problems, he was about to be injured by the three heretics.

Under Celestial Rope, no matter how hard Anan struggled was useless. The young woman smiled proudly behind her. Because Shaw Danon was fear to hurt herself and almost got killed, Anan became more pale and anxious. Then blood spewed out from her mouth, splitted on her dress.

Shaw Danon heard the sound and thought Anan was injured by the “Celestial Rope”. Under the surprise, he did not think much. Black gas rose from the fire stick, in the speed of lighting, it shot toward the young woman.

The young woman did not expect Shaw Danon to give up his own safety and attack her, so she wasn't prepared. Seeing the fire stick was in front of her, she immediately rose into the sky to escape.

But at the same time Shaw Danon's back shown a great opening. The red beam from Nian Boss's Red Devil Eye, and the Cynical Dialectian's grey fang, Liu Gao yellow sword hitted on Shaw Danon's back together.

Shaw Danon's eyes blackened and almost fainted. After the sharp pain over his body, he felt numb. He fell forward. While in mid-air, the blood in his mouth spewed out like spring.

Anan saw this. Her teeth bitted deeply into her lips. Then she suddenly felt the Celestial Rope was loosened. The young woman was distracted by Shaw Danon and forgot the control the Celestial Rope.

With some empty space, Anan's hands held together and formed orchid mark. "Aeolian Firmus" automatically came out from the sheathe. The blue light flited across the sky and widened the Celestial Rope. Under the godly edge of "Aeolian Firmus", though the "Celestial Rope" was uncommonly hard, but it was making weird sound.

The young woman feared the power of Aeolian Firmus, she immediately retrieved the Celestial Rope. Anan regained her freedom, even her body was still sorrowly painful, she rose into the air and caught Shaw Danon.

But, not waited for two of them to regain their breath, Nian Boss and others were already here.

Aeolian Firmus's blue light flashed, flight in front of Anan and protected its owner. But Anan's face was pale like paper, her body was faltering.

At that instant, suddenly a whistle sounded, then a scream. Lin Fang said angrily: "Jadeon kids, you dare to hurt me, watch this!"

"Bang!" It sounded cleared at every corner of the cave!

When everyone was surprised, Nian Boss stopped the attack, cried: "Brother Lin, can not-"

Before he could finish, everyone felt the ground was shaking. Then they

looked at the Earth Fan in Lin Fang's hand, the river disappeared.

Then follow a ear deafening bang, the flat ground cracked. a large water pillar gushed out from under ground. The strength was so strong that even the large stones were moved. Only the giant stone craved with the words "Forsaken Abyss" did not move.

The four Jadeons were washed to all direction. Anan's hand loosened. At that instant, she suddenly felt, her heart, was also sinked.

The blood stained body of Shaw Danon was floating to farther away. In front of him was the dark and secret abyss!

She stood in mid-air, at that instant, the scenes of the past reappeared in her heart:

At Mount Jadeon Peak of Widows, the boy who blushed when he saw her during the sortition;

at that contest, the suddenly softened eyes in the lighting storm;

and just moment ago, because of her blood, the person who came recused her recklessly!

A large rock fell. Anan gritted her teeth, used her last strength, pulled against the large rock and changed the direction, flight toward to Shaw Danon.

The rocks fell like rain. The water roared like dragon. But those are all seem to

be a far away. "Aeolian Firmus" glowed with blue light and follow its owner.

After dodging several falling stones, Anan reached to Shaw Danon, caught his hand, wanted to pull him back. But she felt the last of her strength was gone.

"She comes to save me?" Shaw Danon blurrily saw Anan, and said this in his heart. Then he suddenly discovered, Anan and him were already passed the stone craved with the word "Forsaken Abyss", and arrived at above the abyss.

Then, they slowly fell.

Anan seem unconscious. Her eyes were close. Her body turned to the other side. At this moment, there was happiness on her pale face.

Before Shaw Danon fell into the endless abyss filled with eternal darkness, when the last beam of light was still there, he heard a Buddhist saying, then golden light brightened.

At the next moment, he fell into the darkness.

In the endless darkness, was like eternity, he could not even see the girl who was so close to him.

But, at the moment before he fell unconscious, he still knew, that Anan and his hand, were still holding together, closely, closely.

He could even faintly feel that hand was so cold, so cool.

The endless darkness swallowed everything.

<<Zhu Xian>> Volume One-End

Chapter 38 Deep Abyss

In legend, the world was originally dark. After forty-eight thousands years, Pangu seperated the sky and earth, turned into mountains and rivers; then after an other forty-eight thousands years, Nuwa created men.

In the legend, the first beam of light of the world, was born from the deepest darkness.

Shaw Danon felt his body was freezing. This freezing chill was not only in his body, but also his heart. It felt like he was going to die.

But he did not afraid, without a slight of fear, he only felt the tireness that he had never felt before, not even have the strength to open his eyes. As his body was in extream exhaustion, his slowly regained his consciousness.

It was like, something surrounded him, very gentle, very careful, but also very cold, slowly absorbing his bodyheat, also brought him some special comfortable feeling and causing him to just wanted to fall asleep like this comfortably.

If not because in his right hand, a familiar coolness rose, like protecting its owner; If not because he suddenly felt in his left hand, he was still holding a

cold, soft hand.

In the exhaustion, he opened his eyes with great difficulty.

It was a light in the eternal darkness!

In the boundless darkness, a light appeared only before of his eyes. It was a mysterious, white light, floating up and down in the darkness, twined around Shaw Danon like the most gentle girl embracing her beloved lover.

It was also like a white smoke, kind of empty and misty. It gradually transformed into a beautiful and grief face next to Shaw Danon, then it was going to kiss at that young men's lips.

At her lips, there was a little fragrant, a little excitement, and the rest are coldness!

A coldness that could freeze one's heart!

Fire stick suddenly rose and the green light blocked in front of Shaw Danon. The beauty face of the white light appeared to fear the fire stick and floated backward. Shaw Danon got up, surprised, cried: "Nether spirit!"

From ancient folk, a person will born, age, and die, only the soul will not be disappear. The soul will leave the body then reincarnate. Life after life, the cycle continue. But in the world, there are evil spirit. Because of three poison: desire, resentment, fatuity, and three dread: timidity, aggression, fear, the spirits that looked back and loved the past, not willing to reincarnate were called "nether spirit".

Nether spirits are belong to Yin, so they naturally prefer moist places. Forsaken Abyss was dark and moist, not surprising to have such nether creatures. But Shaw Danon had never seen such thing before. When he was young he did heard the adult of Grasstemple Village talked about ghost, later he learned from Xavion at Bamboo Peak that they were called nether spirit. He was always a little afraid of them. Now he saw it, the chill was all over his body.

This call issued to far away in the darkness. In the darkness sounding him, his sound seem light. After long while, a faint echo issued back. Also because of this call, it seem surprised something. In the darkness sounding him, it silently brightened.

Shaw Danon could feel it was like his heart suddenly stopped beating. He held his breath, seeing the mysterious lights appeared in the darkness like that nether spirit.

Left, right, front, back were lightened, when he lifted his head, he could see even above his head, light appeared. Flashing the mysterious white light.

Countless of nether spirits were awoken from the long sleep. They felt the first appearance of human warmth for hundred years, and gathered here.

The white lights were like soft smoke, floating around. They transformed into different faces, males and females, old and young, pretty and ugly. And at that moment, there was only one feeling in Shaw Danon's eyes: Cold.

As he imagined the countless of nether spirits rushed to him all at once, he shivered. But fortunately, after the surprise passed, he found that the nether spirits seem afraid of the fire stick that was in front of him. They did not dare to

get close to the green light of the fire stick. But before Shaw Danon could relieve, some nether spirits discovered something and moved to Shaw Danon's left side.

Shaw Danon startled, then turned pale. The soft hand his left hand was holding had slowly turning cold. He quickly pulled Anan closer to him. With the light surrounding him, he could see Anan's face was completely pale, but her breathing was still normal. It seem like she did not got any outer injury. He relieved, looked around and checked the surrounding environment.

He and Anan were at a waterside. Because of darkness he could not see the size of the water. It could be a small pond, a large lake, or even a legendary underground sea. Shaw Danon did not know why he came up with this idea. In the water, he could feel the water was not quiet. Wave and wave of water gently went passed his body.

But, the water was really bone freezing!

Shaw Danon difficulty rose up, and not plan to stay there. Even if they did not get killed by nether spirits, they probably would freeze to death in the water. He straightened up, but then his head turned dizzy, his body faltered.

When they were up there, his back was injured by Nian Boss, Cynical Dialectian and Liu Gao. This injury was not light. At the same time, fire stick's green light dimmed. And also at that moment, the countless of nether spirits' mysterious light brightened. Endless of desire appeared on their faces.

Shaw Danon was surprised and immediately focus. The fire stick's glow brightened again and held off the nether spirits. He dragged Anan to the land with difficulty. The short distance seem to be very long.

Finally, they arrived on a hard ground. Shaw Danon sat on the ground, panting.

Around them, countless of nether spirits were wandering around the fire stick's green aura.

Shaw Danon stared at the wandering lights. He recalled the last memory before he was fainted. He remembered Anan came and grabbed his hand. He remembered they fell into endless dark abyss. He even faintly remembered, before he went unconscious, he heard a familiar Buddhist saying came from the platform.

Perhaps Fazzan Shixiong and others were arrived.

Shaw Danon thought in his mind. With the other four people's help, in addition to Kevern and Issa's cultivation, they shouldn't have any problem. If nothing happen to Qi Shixiong, then Ling'Er Shijie must not broken hearted right?

But, but, Shaw Danon also asked himself, if I die, will Ling'Er Shijie feel sad? Perhaps there may be a little grief. After all, they had lived together for years. He knew the tough, beautiful looking Shijie actually was also gentle and weak in the inside.

If she hear the childhood friend Shaw Danon Shidi unfortunately die, she must cry right? She will feel sad right? Even if they can't find his corpse, she will still makes a grave for him at Bamboo Peak right?

But how many times she will comes visit the grave in the furture?

If it was like that, will he be like the nether spirits, remembering her, not going to reincarnate, only guarding his grave and wait for the figure from his memory?

The young men sighed quietly, unknowingly in the silent darkness!

“Ah.”

She letted out a soft call, then slowly woke up, opened her eyes.

For thousands of years, there was a question from ancient time: If you wake up from a deep long sleep, the first person you want to see, who shall that be?

But no one know did Anan ever heard of this silly question before. At that moment, reflected in her eyes was Shaw Danon concern eyes within the white light.

A only warmth in the darkness!

Shaw Danon was gladed, said: “You wake up, Lu Shijie.”

Anan did not immediately reply. She seem a little lost in thought. But very quickly she returned to normal. From the original confuse back to her usual

coldness. She looked around, couldn't help but changed again.

“Nether spirit!” Like Shaw Danon, Anan cried out.

Shaw Danon nodded, comforted her: “Yes, but don't need to afraid. They seem a bit fear of my fire, fire stick. Nothing should happen for now.

Anan also discovered the countless of nether spirit did not attack them, they only wandered around. They appeared to be afraid of that black stick. She couldn't help but asked: “What is your esper called. How come it is so powerful?”

Shaw Danon blushed, said: “Call, call, I call it.....fire stick. Also, I don't know why it is so powerful.”

Anan was bewildered: “Fire stick?”

Shaw Danon looked at the girl in front of him, under the mysterious white light, she was pale but even more beautiful. He lowered his head, said: “Yes, I am the one who usually cook at Bamboo Peak, so I use it as fire stick.”

Anan couldn't say anything, and stared at the ugly black stick. After a while, she quietly said: “Fire stick! I have my master's teaching, experienced many hardships along cultivation, and also have Aeolian Firmus, but how I lose to a fire stick?”

Shaw Danon's heart suddenly jumped. He felt Anan's face got whiter, almost unable to see any sanguinity, couldn't help said: “Shijie, but you won that time. I heard if not because you used too many vigor when battled me, you probably

won't lose to Kevern Shixiong at final.....”

Then it became murmur, then from murmur became silent. It was because Anan was looking at him coldly, causing him unable to continue. The mysterious white light shined at two of them.

Anan lowered her head again, took a deep breath, then asked: “How did we manage to live?”

Shaw Danon startled, he was also puzzled, said: “I don't know.” Then he remembered something and pointed to the waterside, said; “But when I woke up, we were laying at the waterside. Maybe we fortunately fell into the water, then the tide washed us to shore?”

Anan looked at the direction he was pointing at. Among the white light of nether spirit, she could see there was water far away. She could also heard the faint sound of the tide. But herself on the other hand, most part of her clothes were already dried, but some part was still wet. It was freezingly cold. It was obvious if not because Shaw Danon had dragged her to the shore, she would probably freeze to death before she could awake.

“Thank you.” Anan suddenly said quietly.

Shaw Danon startled, waved his hand and smiled: “No problem, no.....”

Suddenly, both of them startled.

Between them, their hands, until now, they were still closely holding together.

It was like they were already part of the same body for many years, without any feeling. Like it suppose to be like that. Like they both had forgotten it.

Anan slowly took back her hand. Shaw Danon embarrassingly smiled. He did not know where to put his hand.

After a while, Anan asked: "Before you fell, you were hitted heavily by felkin heretics. How are you feeling now?"

Hearing this icy lady did not blame him, Shaw Danon quickly said: "Not too bad."

Anan said: "Can you still fly?"

Shaw Danon channeled his energy, then the pain inside his body was hurt like needles. He shook his head and smiled bitterly.

Anan looked at him, said: "I also can't. We should get up and search is there any way out. Otherwise if we keep waiting here, surround by these nether spirit, we will be drained to death sooner or later."

Shaw Danon gasped, nodded: "Right."

Anan stood up, checked around around and found no serious injury, only the inner energy was a little messy, body was weak, seem like the reaction force of Earthen Fan was too strong. Her most concern was the Aeolian Firmus which was now in the sheathe behind her back in fine condition.

She turned around and looked at Shaw Danon again. He rose up with difficulty, not very agile, appeared to be affected by the injuries. Additionally, dragging her out of the water used a lot of energy.

“What level are you in Pure Essence?” Anan suddenly asked.

Shaw Danon startled, did not say anything. Anan thought he purposely not answering. She turned away, said lightly: “It doesn’t matter if you don’t tell. But I heard my master said your cultivation was only at level four, it was all because of the power of that strange esper. I did not believe it. Today I saw it with my own eyes. If not because your cultivation is high and solid, you already fell under the hand of the heretics.”

Shaw Danon scratched his head, he couldn’t think of a way to reply because he himself was also uncertain of his own cultivation. But how could Anan know, if just talking about Pure Essence, Shaw Danon actually at level four, also at the stage when he could first drive esper, but inside of Shaw Danon, there was other Fuwa’s supreme incarnation “Fawin Wisdom”, and this was the key to the actual truth.

Fuwa incarnation was more focus on understanding of self than Dago’s. Shaw Danon had practiced Fawin Wisdom for five years, although it was still basic, his nerve control was solid. So practicing both Dagos and Fuwa’s incarnation days and nights, he was far stronger than the disciples at his level of practice. Also because of that, after he directly received the Felkin heretics’ attack, Pure Essence and Fawin Wisdom each gave him one layer of protection, so he was luckily survived.

When they rose up, Shaw Danon recalled the fire stick back to his hand. The

green light spread and surrounded them. Anan pondered for a moment, then she pointed to the opposite direction of the water. The two walked into the endless darkness.

This walk was like endless. After long time, the two was still walking on the wide, clear ground. In Forsaken Abyss, beside the surprising large area, there was no sign of living creature.

The only thing there was the nether spirits floating around them quietly, desired for the taste of flesh blood.

Shaw Danon and Anan was getting more worry as they continued to walk. At the same time, the Yin energy was getting heavier. Shaw Danon felt the blood was boiling. A dizziness struck his head. Though his foundation was solid, but after all his cultivation was not high, in addition to the injuries done by Nian Boss, Cynical Dialectian, and Liu Gao, it severely damaged his inner channels.

After a while, Anan discovered something was wrong with Shaw Danon, asked: "How are you?"

Shaw Danon forced a smile, said: "Nothing, let's continue."

Anan looked at him said: "What about we-"

Before she could say the word "rest", Shaw Danon's body swayed and fell on the ground. The fire stick in his hand also dimmed as he fell.

Anan was surprised, quickly supported him, and found he was already passed out. At that instant, even the most calm person within the faction was also

panic.

Then, she thought of a more terrifying question.

Fire stick was unable to do anything, what can defend the countless nether spirits?

Almost at the same time Anan thought of this question, the countless of nether spirits startled, then in front of them was two living bodies without slight of defense.

In the darkness, it was like countless of voices was laughing wildly, shouting madly. The countless of nether spirits froze in mid-air, then, like greedy beasts, they rushed to the two helpless people in the darkness.

Chapter 39 Meet Again

“Clang”

That was a clear and loud sound in the darkness!

Anan stood in front of Shaw Danon with her face cold, she drew out her sword.

Aeolian Firmus unsheathed!

Blue light rose, the pure and magnificent light had brighten the dark world.

The nether spirits' light was gone in front of the blue light. Even with that, the nether spirits had no sign of fear, coming in from all directions.

Anan gave a light shout. Sign of pain appeared on her pale face, but was soon replaced by the determination.

Under its owner's control, Aeolian Firmus' blue light brightened, sliced across the charging nether spirits.

At the second the nether spirits touched the blue light, immediately there was “zizi” like popping sound. The first couples of nether spirits were dispersed

That sound echoed in the darkness. It was terrifying.

Aeolian Firmus was sure extremely strong, but it could not intimidate the remaining nether spirits. At the moment when Anan made a move, several nether spirits came from behind and attacked at the unconscious Shaw Danon.

Anan saw it with the corner of her eyes. She quickly turned and used Aeolian Firmus swept above Shaw Danon’s body, dispersed the nether spirits.

But there was too nether spirits. There was no different between killing and not killing them. With her body already injured, Anan became exhausted after several rounds while the spirits flight around and threatened them. The blue light of Aeolian Firmus became weaker. Anan gritted her teeth, but still fell and sat next to Shaw Danon.

Complacent ghost cries faintly came from the scream of the nether spirits. The ghostly light brightened. The Yin energy thickened. Anan turned and looked at Shaw Danon.

Though this young men was still unconscious, his face shown suffering. Is he thinking of some heart hurting past?

Anan mumbled: “Can’t believe I will die with you together today!”

She straightened her body. Her face was colorless, but she still not give up. Her right hand formed orchid incanation mark. Aeolian Firmus stopped in mid-air, then pierced in the ground in front of Anan. The blue light appeared rose again. With the Aeolian Firmus as center, it formed a aura around Anan and Shaw Danon.

The surrounding nether spirits saw the tasty living bodies was right before their eyes, they went to them swiftly. But after a moment, the aura swelled and blue light rose. The blue light flashed and formed an arc above the two people's head, blocked the nether spirits.

But if smart people saw this, they could see the aura was too weak. There was no strength in it. Anan was just die trying.

Seeing the tasty food kept off from them again, the nether spirits was getting very angry. The cries of the ghost became louder. Countless of nether spirits strived to crush down the aura. Each time it hitted, Anan's body shook, her face became more pale, and the Aeolian Firmus' light dimmed a little. The originally two men high aura had downed to not even one man's size.

Anan's face was pale as paper, watching the hideous smile of the illusion face of nether spirits, watching they opened their ethereal mouths. Her whole body was like fallen into icehouse.

At that moment, she suddenly heard, inside the mouth of the unconscious Shaw Danon, a murmur came out.

Anan quickly turned. There no word that can be describe her feeling. When fighting alone against the nether spirit, suddenly hear the voice of an ally. There was a happiness that she had never experienced before rose in her heart.

But before she could see Shaw Danon's face clearly, a strange thing happened. The ground below them was originally hard, but a large hole appeared at the place where Shaw Danon was laying. He fell in.

Anan was shocked. The hole was completely dark, unable to assume the depth of the hole. But deep in the darkness, there were a pair of large, horrifying red eyes flashed!

At the next moment, without any hesitation, Aeolian Firmus' aura dispelled. Among the screams of the nether spirits, Anan grabbed Aeolian Firmus and fell into the dark hole!

After that, all the nether spirits followed them into the hole.

A thud sounded in the cave. Moment later, among the scream of the nether spirits, there was suddenly a sharp roar.

"Ooooink"

It sound like a raging roar of a wounded boar. Moment later, a large figure jumped out from the cave. Behind were countless of nether spirits, flight across the cave.

Under the ghostly light, Anan held Shaw Danon out from the ground with her left hand. Blood came out from the corner of her lip. Left side of her body was stained red, it was appeared she was injured.

Shaw Danon rely on Anan in order to stand, but his eyes were already opened. The fire stick had brightened again. Though weak, but it still glowed with green light like usual.

This young man and woman, in this world of darkness, supported each other, depended on each other.

Anan watched the nether spirits raged but not dare to came down. An indescribable gladness rose in her heart. Although they still did not escape from danger, it was good to have a person by her side.

Then, their eyes landed on the giant figure in front of them. They could sense the extreamly strong rancid odor, then, with the ghostly light of the nether spirits, they saw the shape of that yasho.

It was a giant yasho that was about two men high; pig head and dog body; sharp fangs; body was dark black all over; the hairs were spiky like needles; the eyes were red in the darkness, sort of like Felkin Heretic Nian Boss's Red Devil Eye. (Note 1)

That yasho was laying on the ground, breathing heavily. Under the black, dirty fur, the left forelimb was cutted open, appeared to be done by Anan. Its eyes stared at the two humen who wounded it. Hatred shot out from its eyes, wanted to just swallow them right away!

Nether spirits dancing in the air, when they passed by the yasho, they did not attack. It seem like they alway mind their own business like water of well never

come across with water of river.

Anan's body was hurt and tired, almost wanted to just fall and sleep, no longer need to think. But after few struggles, she still held out, whispered to Shaw Danon: "There are too many nether spirits and yasho here. We don't know what may come out after that. Let go away first."

Shaw Danon nodded and agreed. The two stepped back, but unfortunately, when they took a step, the nether spirits took a step, and the yasho also not let it go, it followed. Along the way of this walk, the nether spirits feared Shaw Danon's fire stick. The pid head yasho also feared the two, but not willing to give up.

Zhang and Lu were already wounded. In this dark and moist Forsaken Abyss, after several battles, they were already exhausted. If not because the nether spirits and the yasho was forcing them, the two would probably relaxed and fainted.

But at this moment they were facing the matter of life and death, unknown strength and courage came from their body, helped them to hold out to now.

This Forsaken Abyss was not known to the Path of Righteous. It was surprisingly large. They walked for long time, but it was still open ground. No shadow of wall. It was hard to imagin how they landed this far when they fell off?

There was no free time for them to think of this question. Everywhere in front of them were the hungry nether spirits and yasho. Life and death was only matter of a second. They could not do anything about it. Then suddenly, Shaw Danon felt his back hitted something hard.

They could not dare to lower their guard on the yasho and nether spirits, so they were walking backward. Shaw Danon was surprised they suddenly hit something. He quickly turned and unexpected to find out it was a large tree, more than three men wide.

Shaw Danon was relieved, and told Anan who was behind him: “Nothing, it was just a tree—”

Before he could finish, Shaw Danon felt a rope like object had tangled around his neck, then his entire body was carried into the air by strong force.

Anan surprised, turned around and screamed: “Tree spirit!” (Note 2)

A tree grew lonely in the open ground. All the quiet tree branches moved like man’s arms. The object that grabbed Shaw Danon was one of the thick tree branches. In the darkness, the moving figure of the tree spirit was like the devil of nine nethers.

Shaw Danon felt the twig on his neck was getting tighter. He couldn’t breathe. Anan wanted to help, but a earth shocking roar came. The yasho used this opportunity. It jumped and hit with its giant claws that flashed with green light, perhaps they were poisonous.

Anan left with no choice but to parry. With this obstacle, she tried several times to rescue Shaw Danon but unable, and got herself into danger.

Shaw Danon was caught by the tree spirit. His throat was extremely painful. The tree spirit issued a terrifying hiss, most likely out of pleasure. The twig

pulled him backward to the tree trunk. At the same time more blanches came and tied his body, leaving only the hands were able to move, other than that, he could not offer any resistance.

Shaw Danon was extremely anxious. He looked at Anan and found herself was also in trouble. He turned back and it shocked him even more. On the tree trunk, a large mouth opened slowly. Sharp, fishy, stink smell gushed out from the mouth. The twig was taking him to tree spirit's mouth.

Shaw Danon was trembling. He had never think of one day he would become a fertilizer for a tree. This way of dying was disgusting.

But now the arrow was on the string, he was getting closer and closer to the mouth. The stinky smell was getting heavier. The sweat on Shaw Danon's forehead was like raining.

He almost arrived at the mouth. He used his strength that came out from nowhere, and used his feet pushed against the trunk. But unfortunately the strength of the tree spirit was uncommonly strong. The twigs pulled several times, then Shaw Danon collapsed and arrived next to the mouth.

The heavy smell hit his face. Don't know how many life this tree spirit had killed. Shaw Danon at the last moment, struggling, swung his hand, using his only weapon the fire stick and stabbed at the tree spirit's mouth.

The fire stick, especially the orb, glowed with ghostly green light.

The originally dull fire stick was used by Shaw Danon and hit the tree spirit. It pierced through tree spirit's hard trunk like a divine edge. The blanches of the

tree spirit suddenly were all frozen.

Shaw Danon himself was also startled. At the same time, a fear emotion rose in his heart.

A familiar, cool feeling circled throughout his body. Then a refreshing energy came from the fire stick and entered Shaw Danon's body. It was just like the moment Shaw Danon fought against Jiang Lao San in Cave of Fangs.

Shaw Danon was stunned in mid-air!

He stared blankly at what happen in front of him. After the mighty, vicious tree spirit was stabbed by the ugly fire stick, the large body withered quickly. All the branches and leaves were like having their water drained. They dried, curled, and the leaves fallen. After the last roar of its life, the entire tree collapsed. Then, lost its life.

Shaw Danon landed on the ground, staring blankly. He did not need to channel his energy and he still knew the benefit of the energy came from the fire stick. It helped nourish his damaged channel.

He looked at the fire stick in his hand, the green light circling, like it a person who finish eating, the fire stick letted out a satisfied light. Especially on the fire stick, the blood vessels had brightened with red like it just fed on blood.

“Dang” The horrifying fire stick slipped off from Shaw Danon's hand and landed on the ground. Bounced twice then it stopped.

After it left Shaw Danon's palm, the black stick lost its parasitifer, all the light immediately disappeared, returned back to the normal and ugly black stick.

Shaw Danon breathed heavily, there was only one voice echo in his mind: What is this, what is this?

At this moment, Anan scream came. Shaw Danon was waken. He turned and said Anan was attacked by countless of nether spirits and the pig head yasho. She fell backward under the heavy hit, her clothes was stained red. This injury appeared to be severe.

Shaw Danon threw away the thoughts in his mind, picked up the fire stick and flight to Anan.

In mid-air, the fire stick seem smiling in his hand. The green light brighten up again, brighten his face.

At the path where Shaw Danon passed, countless of nether spirits fled. In the blink of the eye, Shaw Danon had caught up to Anan. But the pig head yasho did not fear the fire stick, it roared and attacked.

Under the pressure, Shaw Danon was worried about Anan. He did not stepped back, and also roared. Channeled the art that Surin had taught him before he left. Fire stick left his hand and like a shooting arrow, it charged at the pig head yasho.

The pig head yasho saw it was a small black stick. Its large claw swung, wanted to push away this trouble thing and feasted on the two hateful but tasty

humen.

But then as its palm swung, it felt something passed through its palm, then after a second, something passed its chest. The pig head yasho startled and looked down, saw there was a hole on its palm, and at the chest, there was a hole also. Its entire body was pierced through by the fire stick.

“Oink!”

The pig head yasho gave a heart piercing wild roar, the body swayed, then like a falling pillar, it landed heavily on the ground, stirred up a cloud of dust. It struggled a few times on the ground, black blood came out from its mouth, and finally it stopped moving.

Shaw Danon caught Anan and found her entire body was cold and already fainted. The fire stick had killed another life, flashed with green light and returned back to Shaw Danon’s hand.

Shaw Danon felt the spirit in his body had refilled, most of the injuries were already recovered. He checked Anan’s breathing and found it was getting more rapid. He lowered his head and saw the skin on her left shoulder had turned black, clearly was poisoned.

Shaw Danon was anxious, even the two monsters were dead, there were still countless of nether spirits. But as he turned, he discovered those nether spirits were already gone and returned to the darkness. Shaw Danon was surprised, but this was a good thing. He did not think much about it, he quickly turned back and taken care of Anan.

But Shaw Danon actually did not know it was all thanks to the “Sinister Orb” on his fire stick. Eight hundred years ago, Elder Blackheart expanded Felkin’s “Bloodforger” blanch, shocked the world, and set up a base for Bloodforger in Cave of Fangs’ underground maze.

Elder Blackheart was a cruel person. When he crafted this Sinister Orb he killed countless of life. Many of those spirits were gathered in Forsaken Abyss, unable to reincarnate.

They were all murdered by Sinister Orb. Even today, Sinister Orb had combined with a nameless stick, the shape was changed, the vicious energy had covered. But when Shaw Danon channeled magic, the vicious energy of Sinister Orb was shown. The nether spirits were scared away and thought Elder Blackheart had revived.

Shaw Danon slowly put Anan back to the ground. Hesitated for a moment, looked at the wound that already turned black, he sighed.

It seems like the eternal darkness had become quiet, returned to the dead silence.

Shaw Danon felt a little dizzy, but looked at the bound wound no longer having black gas over Anan’s face, he was relieved.

He quietly sat, protecting the unconscious girl.

The ghostly green light of the fire stick covered them.

Everywhere was quiet!

Quiet!

There was not even sound of the insects. In Forsaken Abyss, beside nether spirits and yasho, there were no living creatures.

But, at that moment, Shaw Danon suddenly heard foot step coming.

The foot step in the darkness was soft and harmonious, but to Shaw Danon, it was like spring thunder. He stood up and turned to the direction where the foot step came from, and held his fire stick tight.

In the darkness, there was a light moving. Then, a girl appeared in the light. She wore green dress; pair of thin eyebrows and pretty eyes; jade white skin that was whiter than snow and frost. With the spirit like gorgeousness of the darkness, she had a soul touching, awkward beauty.

Shaw Danon opened his mouth wide, startled and could not say anything. That girl was the green dress young lady he met in Sunstream City's Shanhai Yuan.

Note 1: "Shenmo Ziyi-Yasho" Red Eyes Pig Devil - pig head dog body, large size, black fur, hard spikes, red eyes, able to see in the dark. Prefer to eat rotten food, prefer live in dark moist place.

Note 2: "Shenmo Ziyi-Spirit" Tree Spirit - Thousands years old tree, legend said it absorbed spirit from heaven and earth, and the strength of spirit from nether, so it became a spirit. Large tree shape, eat living creatures, rumor said they could walk freely.

Chapter 40 Abyssal Viper

That young lady also saw Shaw Danon and the unconscious Anan. She did not expect there would be living human down here, she was surprised, too.

Then, she recognized Shaw Danon. She startled, after amazement flashed on her face, she smiled.

“It is such a small world that we meet again!” She was like the bloomed lily in the darkness, gracefully walked to them.

Shaw Danon rose and stood in front of Anan. After all, a person who come to Forsaken Abyss where the nether spirits and yashos live is not a normal human.

The young lady got closer. Shaw Danon saw a white flower between her fingers of right hand. It glowed with faint white light, lighted the ground around her. It might be some rare species.

But Shaw Danon had no spare time to care about the flower. Though he was alert to that strange girl, but however, seeing her in the lonely, dark Forsaken Abyss, he felt a little friendly.

“Hello.” Shaw Danon wanted to say some greeting words, but only this word came out at the end.

The young girl looked at him, smiled: “Isn’t that Jadeon’s Shaw Danon Zhang adventurer? Why you come to his ghostly place? This is not the place that you guys should go.”

Shaw Danon startled, said: “How do you know I am from Jadeon?”

That young girl smiled and not answer him.

Shaw Danon frowned, felt that girl was not usual. When he was pondering, that girl laughed softly: “May I ask Zhang adventurer, how long you have been here, find “Blooddrop Cave” yet?”

Shaw Danon startled, said: “What Blooddrop Cave?”

The girl snorted, the smile on her face was gone, but her tone was still remain calm: “Zhang adventurer, you are pretend to be silly. Your so-called Good people, if not because of the item inside of Blooddrop Cave, why come to this dark, dirty place?”

Shaw Danon was puzzled. But he understood that there was a Blooddrop Cave, and probably important thing was in there. But he did not hear his Master and Head Shibo mentioned it. But what he was thinking was not this, it was he understood the meaning of this girl’s words, he said in low tone: “You said our Path of Righteous is hypocrit, who are you?”

The girl flicked her green dress, then drew an arc in air with her flower. The

white light lasted for a while in the darkness before it slowly dissipated.

“I, aren’t your most hated felkin heretic?” She smiled evilly.

Shaw Danon’s heart stinked, suddenly a feeling of disappointment. But that idea was only a flash, left no track in his heart. He snorted, then on guard.

When he entered Jadeon, he was taught by all his elders of how Felkin heretics trouble people, cruel and lawless. Jadeon’s rule was forbidden them to have any relationship with Felkin. They were irreconcilable enemy.

But that girl seem did not hate them, had no meaning to fight. Her eyes peered behind Shaw Danon, then suddenly smiled: “Is that elder sister waking up?”

Shaw Danon turned and saw Anan moved a little. Her lips moved and her eyes slowly opened. Shaw Danon was glad, said: “You wake up!”

But anxiousness was on Anan’s face, struggled to say: “Careful—”

Shaw Danon hadn’t react, he already smelled fragrance surrounded him. White light flashed, a white flower appeared in front of his eyes.

In the darkness, under Forsaken Abyss, where can you find a flower? Shaw Danon was surprised, stepped back. The flower floated in the air, like smiling and nodding to him. Just in that moment, the flower fell apart. The clean white petals glowed with ghostly green light and flight toward him.

Even did not know this girl has Felkin background, just by looking at the flower itself could sense something wrong. Shaw Danon was attacked unexpectedly. He was in a rush. He took few steps back, held up his fire stick and defend. Most petals were parried when they touched the green light of fire stick, but some flight pass through and almost wounded Shaw Danon.

Shaw Danon cursed the cunning of the Felkin heretic in his heart. The words of his Master, Shi niang, Shixions were right, without any mistake. But when he looked back, he saw the girl was flying toward to Anan.

Shaw Danon was surprised. After Anan was severely injured, she had no strength to fight back. And he himself the distance was farther away. He quickly waved his hand, drove the first stick, and charged at the green dress girl.

Hearing the piercing of the wind, the green dress girl smiled, waved her right hand. Like lighting, all the petals flight back and gathered at the bud. The flower glowed with faint white light went forth. The white light touched the green light of fire stick. They locked in mid-air, after a while, seem like neither side win, they flight back to their owner.

In the darkness, there was suddenly a cry out of surprise.

With this opportunity, Shaw Danon caught the fire stick and quickly went to Anan's side, stood in front of her, not going to allow the Felkin heretic to use anymore trick.

But that "cunning" heretic suddenly stopped, not advancing, and let Shaw Danon went back to Anan's side. She looked at Shaw Danon with surprise in her eyes.

She was originally thinking that the “Heartending” Flower in her hand was enough to stop Shaw Danon. But unexpectedly, when “Heartending Flower” against the fire stick in mid-air, originally it could use the fire stick as a route to palazye Shaw Danon with its fragrance, but the fragrance was blocked, and backfire a little on her, caused her to surprise.

Shaw Danon stood in front of Anan, helped her to rise up, he asked quietly: “You alright! Lu Shijie?”

Anan shook her head. Shaw Danon was relieved, he turned his head and said angrily: “Shameless heretic, only know how to sneak up on people!”

The surprise in that girl immediately gone and was replaced by anger. She snorted, said: “Fine, then I will let you see the power of the heretic!”

While she was speaking, she was preparing to make a move. Shaw Danon quickly be on guard. But Anan was leaning on him weakly, clearly she was heavily injured, most likely because of the poison. The Felkin heretic in front of him was unpredictable, if they fight, he will be hard to help Lu Shijie.

Unfortunately the events of this world can not alway occur like what people desire. When Shaw Danon’s mind was racing, he suddenly discovered thing was getting worse.

In the darkness, an other light appeared. But this light was different than the green dress girl’s. Even though it is bright, the color was dark. Almost cause people to think it is a black light. Within the light, a ghostly figure walked

toward them, stopped next to the green dress girl. She was a tall woman, dressed in black clothes, masked with soft veil. She was the one who travel together with that girl in Shanhai Yuan that day.

After that, in the surprised eyes of Shaw Danon, several lights brightened in the darkness. Five people in yellow clothes appeared. They were the attendants of that young girl in Shanhai Yuan. Now they were all here.

Shaw Danon felt his throat was dried. Under the eyes of so many people, his body could not help but shivered. At that moment, he suddenly heard the soft and weak voice of Anan: “You hurry get out of here. These people’s cultivation is not below you and I, can not fight them!”

Shaw Danon turned his head and found that pale but beautiful face next to him had no sign of worry and fear, only speaking the most common sense. Shaw Danon startled, shook his head and bitted his lip, then turned his head back and faced the mysterious Felkin followers.

“Bilu, be careful.” The masked woman looked at the two, then her eyes landed on the fire stick in Shaw Danon’s hand, whispered: “This black stick is a little weird.”

Bilu, also the green dress girl, said: “Aunt Negar, what did you find out?”

The masked woman, who is called Aunt Negar, did not show any expression through the mask, but there was puzzle in her words: “It seem like—it is so similar to that evil energy. But how a person from Path of Righteous has such object. They don’t know how to control the orb. And that, that short stick, what is it?”

Bilu snorted, said: "I want to see how powerful that thing is!" Then she took a step forward. The men in yellow behind her also stepped forth. Shaw Danon saw it was not right. Though he wanted to fight, but he knew the gap of the strength was too wide. So he could only helped Anan walked backward.

The masked woman was filled with heavily ghostly energy. Her body floated forward in the darkness, followed Bilu like a spirit. She spoke in the voice that only they could hear: "That boy's short stick has extreamly heavy evil power, do you feel it?"

Bilu looked at the nervous Shaw Danon, nodded.

The masked woman paused, then said: "Though it is like that, but I feel that the evil power of the short stick has not completely release, seem to be seal by something. From what I think, this short stick might has some relationship to our Holy Faction. This boy's identity is suspicious. You must think twice before you act."

Bilu frowned, said: "Aunt Negar, what do you want to do?"

The masked woman's tone returned to normal, said: "Capture them and bring them to your father. Archlord know everything of this world, he must know what that is!"

Bilu thought for a moment, then said: "That's fine."

While they were talking, they kept on walking forward. Without their instruction, the yellow clothing people next to them would not attack. They walked for quite a distance as they talk.

Shaw Danon supported Anan, his heart was getting more and more nervous. Then the sound of water next to his ears. It appeared they returned to the shore of where they started.

Bilu startled, then turned to the masked woman, said: "Aunt Negar, is this 'Heartless Sea'?"

The masked woman pondered for a moment, then suddenly sighed, said: "Infatuation is only for heartless pain! Yes, this is the most mysterious 'Heartless Sea' of the five seas."

"Ah!" Perhaps she was still young, Bilu did not notice the masked woman's sorrow in her words. She was excited, said: "Since young, I heard father said, in the bottom of the Heartless Sea, it is the Sea of Nine Nethers. He said Blooddrop Cave is located near Heartless Sea under Forsaken Abyss. Seem like we finally find it after these three days.

But the masked woman entered silent, did not reply to her.

Bilu was a little puzzled, but did not mind it. She turned her head and said: "Well, I will capture you first, then search for Blooddrop Cave."

She waved her hand. The five yellow clothing men stepped forth and ready to fight. Behind Shaw Danon was the dark and endless Heartless Sea. Before him was surrounded by the Felkin followers. There way no way forward and backward. He was in a dead end.

Anan could feel the chill wind came from the Heartless Sea behind her. Herself was powerless, also a little dizzy and disgust feeling, probably cause by poison.

No need to consider much, she knew if Shaw Danon stay here can take care of her, both of them will die.

She turned for head, looked at Shaw Danon. That young man was nervous, the muscle was tightened, and the arm that use for supporting Anan was having too much force due to nervousness. Even in his eyes, there was a desire for live, and fear for death.

But, there was no sign of drawing back.

“Zhang Shidi.” She softly called. Shaw Danon heard it, his shoulder also moved, like he was about to turned his head. But for some reason, he did not look at her.

“Lu Shijie, on the platform, even not long ago, you had saved me. I-I-am not leaving.” Shaw Danon wanted to say some powerful words, but they were all gone when he spoke, and ended up with the “not leaving”.

Anan did not say anything.

Shaw Danon suddenly felt a little uneasy: did my words offended her? But for some reason, since the first time he saw Anan, he was fear of his icy lady.

The freezing wind of the Heartless Sea blew the silence lady's hairs, softly swept across his face.

The water of Heartless Sea suddenly became violent.

The darkness, was like a sigh of someone. The wind, was like the hideous smile of Heartless Sea, laughing at the world.

Bilu smiled, leading the five yellow clothes men surrounded them.

Shaw Danon took a step back, then he felt his foot stepped into the bone freezing water.

At that instant, the Heartless Sea slowly increase in violent, suddenly, a huge wave hitted. The sound of the wave was ear shocking. It was about a thirty feet high. No one on the land did not surprised, they barely able to stand.

The masked woman who was standing in behind called quickly: "Bilu, retreat!"

Bilu was surprised. She knew Aunt Negar was experienced and knowledgeable, even her father respect her. She did not doubt and quickly went back.

Once she moved, the five yellow clothes men also followed her went back. Only Shaw Danon and Anan, who were standing closest to the sea, was unprepared and hitted by the large wave. Their bodies were wet and the bone freezing coldness was hard to bear.

After that, everyone looked at the changing Heartless Sea. Above the dark sea, two lanterns glowed with green light slowly brightened. But those lanterns were weird. They were not normal circle, but vertical and thin. Between them were two dark and thin opening, letting out the cold, vicious intention.

“It is this thing.” The masked woman shook, said: “That animal still haven’t die!”

Bilu surprised, asked: “Animal? Aunt Negar, what is this thing?”

The masked woman looked at the two lights that was getting closer and closer to them above the raging Heartless Sea, there was fear in her voice: “It is ‘Abyssal Viper’.”

Bilu was shocked, almost unable to believe, asked: “Didn’t that demon already slain by the holy beast Golden Bird of the west great swamp thousands years ago?”

The masked woman said in a hurry: “The rumor is like that, but today it appear here. I don’t know, Bilu. That Abyssal Viper is ancient demon. Very deadly. Other than its natural enemy Gold Bird, nothing can kill it. We need to run.”

Bilu went back several steps, then suddenly turned around said: “But that boy —”

The masked woman shook her head, said: “Can’t worry about that much right now, hurry.”

Bilu was still in hesitation. But Shaw Danon and Anan, who were still standing next to the sea, after the blink of the eye, they held their breath.

They could see it clearly. The two lanterns that were almost two men high was a pair of large eyes. Since he entered Cave of Fangs, Shaw Danon kept seeing large and strange eyes. From Nian Boss's Red Devil Eye to the pig head yasho's eyes, but they couldn't compare to this pair of eyes in front of them. It was like a seed compare to the universe.

The wind of the sea was not salty, but an air covering smell of blood.

The large black snake slowly appeared before them. Its lower body was soak in the sea water. No one here was anywhere near half of this snake's body thickness. The upper body and the head was already more than thirty feet away from the ground. The snake eyes were glowed with green light. At this moment, it was looking at the humen that were like ants to it. (note 1)

Shaw Danon never knew there could be such large creature in this world. He thought the Jadeon Peak of Widows' Master Spirit Water Kirin was already the largest in the world. But now compare to the Abyss Viper, Water Kirin's size was no different than a little puppy.

Not only him, also Anan, and the Felkin's Bilu and others had never see such giant beast. They were all shocked on the ground, unable to speak.

Note 1: <<Collection of Mountain and Sea - Wild South>>: South of Black Water, has ancient snake, feed on deers. At Wu mountain, west has Golden

Bird. Emperor's Elixir, eight fasts. Golden Bird at Wu mountain, enemy of this ancient snake.

<<Shenmo Ziyi - Yasho>> Abyss Snake: Giant snake. Black body, white stomach, green eyes, forty feet wide, thousand feet long. Ate immortal pill and gain longevity. Ten thousands years old. Live at western great swamp, rumor said it also live in the sea.

Chapter 41 Dead End

The wave of the Heartless Sea had gradually become calm, but the fear in everyone's heart had not lightened. Abyssal Viper's giant body sat in front of them like a demon from ancient time.

The giant object slightly swung its head, it seem like it did not expect there will be living human under Forsaken Abyss. It looked at them, did not make a move.

The calm Anan was the first putted herself together. She turned her head and saw Shaw Danon was still sharing at the Abyssal Viper. She pulled his sleeve. Shaw Danon shook, then turned his head. Anan whispered: "We step back first."

Shaw Danon immediately understood, nodded his head, supported Anan walked back. Bilu who was next to Negar, saw them moving, she cried: "Don't move-"

Shaw Danon and Anan startled. But just in the blink of the eye, the green light in Abyssal Viper's eyes glared, alarmed, and let out a heaven shocking roar. Everyone here covered their ears, but they could still feel their ears ringing.

While Shaw Danon was still in the state of shock, Abyssal Viper's body moved and the tail that was soaked in the water swept. Immediately a forty feet high, several hundreds feet wide wall of water mightily crushed upon them. Among the water, there was a black tail of the snake struck at them.

While the water was still several yards away, the gale already hit their faces, almost knocking them down. If really get hit by this tide of water wall and the black tail, they will be crushed into thousands of pieces. Shaw Danon did not put much into consideration. His right arm carried Anan, summoned fire stick and flight back with all his strength.

But the wall of water was fast as wind, faster than any movement. Shaw Danon hadn't made ten feet, the wall of water already caught up to him. The roar of water was next to ears. Shaw Danon's body tightened. There was almost no additional thought in his brain. At this fate deciding moment, Shaw Danon shouted and flight upward. But when he was only a little more than ten feet above the ground, he felt the water surrounded him.

"Boom"!

He unwillingly drew into the giant tide, his body was wet all over. Then he heard Anan scream, his arm loosened, under the unstoppable strong force, he and Anan were separated.

Shaw Danon was pale with surprise. He struggled to get to Anan, but the strength of the billow was so strong, at the next moment, the two people were already several yards away from each other.

Seeing the raging tide roared wildly, Anan who was next to him a moment ago had disappeared in the darkness. Shaw Danon trembled, his brain was in chaos,

his entire body was pushed forward by the giant wave.

When Shaw Danon felt every part of his body was about to be rend apart by the strong pressure, he suddenly peered and saw, among the water, where the sound came from, a black figure flashed. Abyssal Viper's giant black tail struck toward him.

Spray and rocks were everywhere when the black tail passed. The momentum was unstoppable. Shaw Danon did not think he can be alive if he get hit by this giant tail.

At this critical moment, the strength came out of nowhere again from Shaw Danon. In the water, green light glowed again, surrounded Shaw Danon, escaped and flight upward to the sky at more than ten feet above the giant wave.

Just when Shaw Danon overjoyed, an unstoppable great force swept at his lower body. Instantly, his entire body shook. Though it was just the left over force, his vision turned black, almost knocked out. If not because he knew it was matter of life and death, and forced himself to remain conscious, he will probably die here.

Though it was like that, the strength of Abyssal Viper's tail was so strong. Shaw Danon's body shocked with bone crushing pain. It was like his entire body was going to split apart. And in this giant tide, he also did not have any remaining strength, he was hit by too strong force too far away.

He was unwillingly flight to the endless darkness. When his body turned over, he saw giant tide and tail quickly swallowed Bilu and other people. The yellow clothes men escaped to all direction, but soon they were hit down by the

giant wave.

The green dress girl rose up. Both hands made a gesture. White glow lighted up, the white flower rose. Just in a moment, it turned into six flowers, circling the flower in the middle. Every flowers had beam of pure white light connected with each others, formed a white wheel.

Bilu was pale, but she wasn't in panic. Once the white wheel was formed, it began to spin rapidly. The bright white light blocked the giant wave. Just a second, the water of the wave accumulated. The force was terrifying.

With this moment of opportunity, Bilu lifted up. But just at that moment, the sound of the wave became heavier. It was the giant black tail, swept across.

The white wheel demolished instantly, could not block just a little force of the tail. The beautiful girl was about to get hit by the giant snake tail, suddenly within the water, the masked woman reappeared. A soft, yellow round object flashed in the air, then swiftly pushed Bilu away before the giant tail could get her.

Bilu barely escaped from the deadly object, but she was still hit by the force, then she fell into the darkness. At the next moment, the figure of the masked woman also disappeared in the mighty wave.

The strength of the Abyssal Viper's tail was unpredictable. Shaw Danon could only hear the sound of wind next to his ears while his entire body flew backward.

If he hit on something, like hard stone wall, all of his bones were going to

crushed. But knowing is still knowing. Shaw Danon had no control of his body. His life was depend on fate.

But the Forsaken Abyss was so large. Flew for a while, he still hadn't hit on anything. Shaw Danon then felt the speed slowed down, and slowly descending. Seem like the force was began to lighten.

Fell on the ground surely does not feel good, but it was still better than hitted on the wall. Just when Shaw Danon was relieved, he suddenly felt the darkness in front of him had turned into solid, and crushed upon him.

It was like a precipice lay before him. Shaw Danon curled up and covered head, and hitted on it.

“Bang!”

The stones scattered; the stars flying. The whole body of Shaw Danon was shocked, then mouth full of blood spew out. At that instant, he felt it was like his body was fallen apart. If not because he had both Fuwa and Dagos incanation protected him, he could be dead.

Though it protected him, it still not felt good. His entire body stopped at the wall, and fell down weakly. On the way he felt, he hitted on the hard wall several times. Among the crushing sound, shape pain all over his body. He did not know how many bones were broken, he think not a single part of his body was complete anyway.

After an other hit, Shaw Danon almost gave up all his hope, but then with the weak green light of the fire stick in front of his chest, he blurryly saw a black shadow below him, it seem like an old tree grow on cliff.

At this critical moment, although he did not imagin that there could be a tree grow on a cliff wall under place like Forsaken Abyss, he naturally held out his hand and grabbed that old tree.

The speed he fell was faster, but at this spark of instant, he managed to grabbed the old tree.

As he caught it, it did not feel cold like the wall, but a bit of warm. But the force of falling was too strong, and the old tree did not well rooted. Though Shaw Danon grabbed the tree trunk, but the tree shook severely. After several swings, the tree and Shaw Danon fell.

At the moment he fell, Shaw Danon's heart sunk. The heart was like fall into bottomless abyss. His body was still falling, but due to that pause, the speed was slowed down. After a loud bang, he fell on the ground and past out.

After long while, Shaw Danon slowly woke up. Before he could open his eyes, he felt shape pain all over his body, like fallen apart. But since he could feel pain, it appeared he's still alive. His heart wasn't feeling all bad.

He opened his eyes, what he saw startled him.

At this moment, he was at a sealed and moist place, most likely a cave. It was about two men high, but only ten feet wide, very narrow. The side was all cold and hard stones. It was almost the same as the cliff. If this is not inside of the

cliff, it must be near cliff.

But the stone in the cave seem having some kind of glowing stuff. Not large but a lot of them. They letted out beams of gentle light, brighten the cave.

Shaw Danon looked closely at the cave. One end was a pile of rocks, blocked the road tightly. An other end extended farther, but then there was a turn, he couldn't see what it is leading to.

He startled on the ground, then he decided to get up. But when his body moved, his left hand pushed against the ground, all the instant his entire body was filled with severe pain. He cried: "Ah!" His body trembled, his left hand was especially painful.

"Hmph!" A cold snort suddenly came out from deeper in of the cave. Shaw Danon was surprised, he turned his head and a lady came out from the turning. Green dress and a pretty face, isn't that the young Felkin heretic?

They were in confrontation not long ago. Now Shaw Danon suddenly saw there was person from Felkin, he held up fire stick and alarmed. He forgot the pain in his body.

Bilu glared at him, but she had no intention to fight. She appeared to be loss, like she had no spirit. She impatiently said: "Okay, okay, look at your silly face, several of your bones are already broken, you still in such high spirit!"

Shaw Danon frowned, but seeing Bilu had no intention to fight, though it was awkward, but he slowly lowered his fire stick. Once he relaxed, immediately the pain came back. He couldn't help but cried out again.

Bilu looked at this righteous young men's weird look, she couldn't hold her chuckle. The surrounding feeling was softened, but after the laughter, she gave a long sigh with sorrow.

Shaw Danon snorted. He was laughed by a young girl and embarrassed, he said angrily: "What are you laughing at?"

Bilu looked at him, said: "I am laughing at you."

Shaw Danon noticed that she spoke so directly, like a little shameless. The anger rose inside him, he said: "What so funny, let see if you crushed on it?"

Bilu's face changed and was about to teach this ignorant brat a lesson, but then she held back, sighed: "We won't able to live for long, what is the use to argue with you?"

Shaw Danon was alarmed, but after he heard what the girl said, he startled and asked: "What did you said?"

Bilu looked at him, said: "This is a cave, can't you see?"

Shaw Danon said: "Yeah! Then what?"

Bilu snorted, the pointed to the pile of rocks: "This is the only exit, now it got buried by those rocks. Go and try break through it!"

Shaw Danon's mouth dropped. He looked at the rocks, seeing it was blocked

tightly, without single gap. He knew his own strength. If it was fighting enemy, his fire stick and his cultivation could still have some use, but if digging the mountain like Yu Gong (Note 1), it was not his strength.

Startled for a moment, then he suddenly thought of an important question. He quickly turned his head and asked: “I remember I fell on the ground after I hit on the wall of the cliff. How did I end up here in the cave?”

Bilu said lightly: “I dragged you here.”

“What?” Shaw Danon was mad again.

Bilu looked at him, said: “I landed not far away from where you fainted and saw you. The Abyssal Viper was chasing after us. I raised my head and saw the place where you pulled the old tree off was a cave. There was light came out from it. The cave was not large, so I hid in there. Before I left, I felt pity for you so I took you in, dummy!”

Shaw Danon frowned: “Why the entrance was blocked?”

Bilu shrugged, with an unfortunate look on her face, said: “The Abyssal Viper could not enter. Out of anger, its tail hit on the wall, then half of the mountain collapsed, buried this place, buried us.”

Shaw Danon looked at her for a while, then doubtfully said: “Really?”

Anger rose on Bilu’s face, then she picked up a large rock and threw it at him, said: “Am I lying to you? I should have let you die!”

Shaw Danon was not fast enough to dodge it, so he used his arm to protect his head. Unexpectedly, the rock hit his left arm, the pain pierced into his heart. His vision blacked, almost fainted again.

Bilu saw Shaw Danon's face immediately pale and held his left arm with a painful look. Her heart jumped, then said coldly: "Don't play dead, I have seen people like you a lot of time."

Shaw Danon had no strength to argue with her about "play dead", he himself was about to pass out. His entire arm already turned numb due to the pain.

Bilu watched for a while, seeing that he does not seem faking. She walked to Shaw Danon, did not care about Shaw Danon's look, she squeezed Shaw Danon's arm several times.

Shaw Danon was sweating in pain, said furiously: "What are you doing?"

Bilu did not get mad, instead she had a little apology, said: "Your arm bone is broken."

Shaw Danon snorted, but he was stubborn, said: "It was broken because of Abyssal Viper, it got nothing to do with you. Go away."

Bilu looked at him again, snorted, then did not say anything, walked away and

stood at the side, watched at him coldly like there will be a show.

The pain was extremely painful, but Shaw Danon did not lose face in front of the heretic no matter what. He forced himself to stand up. Looked around, the injuries were mostly scratches and outer injuries, only the left arm was broken. It was fortune in misfortune.

But the broken bone pain was still difficult to bear. After few movements, the pain caused the sweat came out again.

Shaw Danon gritted his teeth. He had learned some healing technique when he was in Bamboo Peak. He wanted to fix his arm. But he looked around, they were all strange rocks, not a single that was straight enough like a wood stick to fix his arm. He couldn't help but became anxious.

Bilu suddenly said at the side: "Your stick."

Shaw Danon startled, then he realized fire stick was a foot long, just right for he need. He looked at that young girl and wanted to thank her. But seeing her despise face, the words were swallowed back, he said: "I already thought of it, you don't need to tell me."

Bilu curled her lips: "Then what were you looking for?"

Shaw Danon said angrily: "Can't I looking for an exit? Am I going to stuck in here forever if I can't find the exit?" Then, he suddenly thought of something and shocked. He turned and asked Bilu: "Right, did you saw my Shijie?"

Bilu was startled by his sudden anxiety, then she shook her head: "That time

was the matter between life and death, who have the time to care about other people?”

Shaw Danon was quiet while his heart was very worry. Anan was poisoned, now facing this disaster, her life is in danger. He sighed and lowered his head.

Bilu’s face softened, watching this young man lowered his head and fixed his arm on the ugly fire stick, she asked: “Are you in good relationship with your Shijie?”

Shaw Danon startled, shook his head: “No, but she is still my— why I need to tell you!” Snorted, then Shaw Danon ignored her. He tore off a piece of his clothes, used his mouth and right hand to tie up his left arm. Then he looked at the large pile of rocks again, at the end he sighed, and turned, walked into the cave.

Seeing Shaw Danon walking further into the cave, Bilu asked: “Where are you going?”

Shaw Danon said while walking: “I am buried in here alive, at least need to see what it is in there!”

Bilu snorted. But still in this lifeless cave, she still followed him. Seem like there would be no fear if two people walk together.

After the turn, a long corridor appeared before Shaw Danon. It was similar to where he was, but a little wider. The stones from both sides were also glowing, brightened this place. But the dust on the ground was very thick, leaving clear footprints.

There were footprints on the road, they seem to be left by Bilu when she first arrived here.

After a while, they reached the end of the long corridor. There was an other turning, at the same time there was faint sound of water.

Bilu suddenly said behind him: "Shaw Danon."

"What?" Shaw Danon answered, but immediately turned, said: "How do you know my name?"

Bilu chuckled: "You told me in Sunstream City!"

Shaw Danon recalled it. He turned his head away embarrassingly, and said: "Why there is water sound?"

Bilu said impatiently: "This is the end of the tunnel. There is a screen of water, other than that there is no exit. Alas! Can't believe that I will die in this place."

Shaw Danon ignore her and continue walking. After a while, the sound of water was getting louder gradually. Soon, he saw at the end of the tunnel, there was a screen of water hanging from the top of the cave. The water splash was crystal clear and beautiful. The water landed on a small pond. If not because they were in a dead end, it was a good scenery.

But at this moment, no one would have the motive to appreciate such scenery. Shaw Danon went in front of the waterfall, he closely examined it for a

moment, then his heart was frozen.

Behind the waterfall was a hard stone wall, not difference than the stones on the side. The small pond's bottom could clearly saw. There was no exit for the water, probably sink into the earth. And for the above, there were stones with water dropping. Where can be a exit?

Shaw Danon turned his head, met Bilu's eyes. They looked at each other for a moment and remain silence.

This cave became dead quiet.

Shaw Danon's thought was distraught. Facing this situation, also worry about Anan who went missing, and additionally the injury of his left arm. The pain coming from there was hard to bear.

Bilu looked at him, her heart couldn't bear it, she said quietly: "Sit down and rest for a while! We will patiently work our way out of this place."

In this dead end, Shaw Danon's hostility toward her was lightened. If they were in outside, he naturally irreconcilable with this Felkin heretic. But now they were going to die in here soon, how would they care about factions difference?

Shaw Danon quietly sat down, looked at the surrounding blankly. Then he stared at the stone wall near the water, his mind thought: Can't believe the first time leave the mountain I have to so many obstacle, now I am in a dead end. If master find out, he will probably scold this dishonor disciple! If Ling'Er Shijie find out, don't know if she will— Bilu looked at him, saw Shaw Danon was a

little strange, she asked: “What are you thinking?”

Shaw Danon woke up, his face blushed, but how he would willing to tell the truth. His eyes peered and changed the topic: “There are so many strange things in Forsaken Abyss, look at the few red places on the stone wall. When water flow pass it, they look just like blood—”

Bilu suddenly jumped up, eyes widened, her face was nervous, quickly asked: “What did you say?”

Note 1: There was a legend in China about an old men name Yu Gong (Foolish Old men). He one day decided to remove all earth from the two mountains so his children don't need to travel across the mountain everytime they need to go to the city. His action drew the Jade Emperor's attention (Lord of Heaven). Jade Emperor then sent two of his men and removed the mountains in one night and helped Yu Gong.

Chapter 42 Blooddrop Cave

Shaw Danon did not expect Bilu would have such great reaction. He was surprised by her. He pointed to the top of the cave, said: “There are a few red stone.....”

Bilu immediately walked to it and looked carefully at the top. Through the water drops, there were total of seven red stones that were about the size of half of the palm. The texture was same as other stones, just the color were difference.

Shaw Danon saw Bilu was excitedly and absorbedly looking at the stones, he himself couldn't help but curious. He rose up and walked to it. The seven red stones scatteredly located on the top, formed a weird shape like a hook.

Especially the color, even they were washed by the water for so many years, they were remain blood red. Even when those crystal drops flew pass the red stones, they turned into the color of fresh blood, then slowly dropping, like blood dropped from the top of the cave. But once the water drops was away from the red stones, they returned to its normal, clear color.

As he was watching, Bilu was murmuring: “Blooddrop Cave, Blooddrop Cave, Blooddrop.....ha!” Bilu was overjoyed and smacked Shaw Danon with her right

hand. The strength was not weak, Shaw Danon's face paled instantly.

Shaw Danon was flamed in anger. Just when he was about to shout back at her, he saw that she was smiling, completely not care about what she just did. She was filled with excitement, said: "You Blackheart old men, built Blooddrip Cave in such place, no wonder why we can't find it for eight hundreds years." Shaw Danon was surprised, but then after a thought, he remembered Bilu had interrogated him about "Blooddrip Cave". Now he understood, he snorted, said: "Evil's teaching!" Bilu's mood was great, she did not get mad. She smiled and said: "I am evil, so what? I still need to be grateful for your help of finding this place!" Shaw Danon was not happy about it. Especially seeing the beautiful smile of Bilu, there was a flame rose in his heart. He felt since he helped the Felkin heretic, if his master and elders know it, they are probably going to punish him.

But as he thought about that, he reminded that he couldn't even leave this place now, what's the use of thinking the future. He immediately disheartened, sat down angrily.

Bilu was so happy at that moment, she did not notice Shaw Danon's action. Felkin was the most ancient. There were many factions, rise and fall was very common.

Eight hundreds years ago, when Elder Blackheart was in Bloodforger, they were the leader of the Felkin. Their strength was unyielding, possessed with many talented people. Elder Blackheart was elder of cultivation. But as time pass, and also several conflicts with the side of Good, Bloodforger weakened and replaced by other factions.

Today, there were four main Felkin main factions. They were Lupin, Venom, Longevity, and Vim. But if compare their power, none can match the glorious

Bloodforger of the past.

Within the Felkin, through out eight hundreds years, there was a rumor said that after the battle between Good and Evil, though the leaders of Bloodforger were all slain, there were many secret espers stored in “Blooddrop Cave” of Bloodforger’s base “Cave of Fangs”.

For eight hundreds years, Felkin secretly sent their men to Cave of Fangs many time, even the Forsaken Abyss was searched, they were all returned with empty hand.

Though Bilu was still young, she was already an important person of one of the four main Felkin faction: “Vim”. This trip to the extremely dangerous “Forsaken Abyss”, she was greatly trusted by the Vim Archlord. Now the place that couldn’t find by the countless of ancestors for eight hundreds had appeared before her, how could she not happy. She even forgot that she was in a hopeless situation.

Bilu stared at the top of the cave, then rose up, carefully touched those red stones. They were cold and nothing different than the other stones. She softly hitted those red stones, but nothing happen. Beside excitment, there was also nervousness on her face.

Then she pulled, knocked, lifted, smacked, pushed each of those red stones. But everything stayed the same, nothing happened.

Shaw Danon watched her from below, joy passed through his heart. He couldn’t help but laughed: “I think this is not Blooddrop Cave, you guessed wrong!” Bilu couldn’t do anything. She sat down and glared at Shaw Danon. But she was uncertained: Did I really guessed it wrong?

For the following four hours, Shaw Danon sat on the ground, watched this green dress girl Bilu walked around, frowned and pondered, and often used new idea to hit those red stones, but none worked.

After a while of watching, Shaw Danon felt his stomach rumbled. He was hungry. He putted his hand into clothes and wanted to take out some food. But it was empty, probably lost it when he fell into the water. Now he is hungry, there are no food inside the cave, and the pond is so clear that there are not a single fish.

The hunger in his stomach was getting heavier, more and more difficult to bare. Shaw Danon couldn't do anything but drank the water from the pond. It was helplessness.

He sighed grievously. He is probably going to starve to death in here.

Bilu showed no sign of hunger. All of her mind were into the seven red stones. She had bothered with it for entire day, but still got nothing. She sat down, but her eyes still stared on those red stones.

Shaw Danon looked at her, couldn't help but reminded her: "What is the use of looking at it. If we don't think of a way out, we would probably going to starve to death in here." Bilu's body moved a little, seem like she remembered there was still a disciple from the side of Good next to her. She turned at looked at him, suddenly asked: "You are hungry?" But Shaw Danon could not lose his face in front of her no matter what. He immediately shook his head, said: "No." But then his stomach was going against him. It rumbled after his said that.

Bilu couldn't hold her chuckle. Shaw Danon blushed and really wanted to hide

into the ground.

Bilu laughed, but took out a bag of food and handed to Shaw Danon, said seriously: "I say you better help me think of a way to open Blooddrop Cave!" Shaw Danon snorted, he turned away, ignored the food, and said certainly: "You think one bag of food can bribe me, don't think about it!"

Bilu startled, rolled her eyes, then smiled: "You are wrong. I am saying we are now in a dead end, if there is no way out, we are certain to die in here. But before us, there is a Blooddrop Cave. If we can find it, there is probably an exit in there!" Shaw Danon agreed it was logical. For survive, it is not bad idea to find the Blooddrop Cave since there could be an exit, otherwise they are certainly going to die.

But his stubborn temper ignored the food Bilu handed to him. He rose up and looked at those red stones again. Bilu was not mad. She looked at his back and smiled, and then also looked at the top of the cave.

The seven red stones lined up in a shape of a hook on the wall of the top. Beside the red color, there was no difference than other stones. Shaw Danon looked at it for a while and couldn't get anything out of it. He planned to hit those stones. But then he remembered Bilu had tried everything, so he gave up.

First, the two lifted their heads and observed, but later, they were tired and sat on the ground. Finally, Shaw Danon did not care anything about manner, that's what a person who is about to die do. He lay on the ground and watched the top of the cave. After a while, without himself notice, he had drowsily fell asleep.

This sleep lasted a while. When Shaw Danon woke up and opened his eyes, he found Bilu was still staring at the seven red stones with her bright eyes.

Shaw Danon was quite admire this girl in his heart. He sat up, but unexpectedly his stomach suddenly rumbled again. Seem like very hungry, completely not care about its master's face.

The cave originally was quiet except for the sound of the water. The rumble sound issued and immediately caught by Bilu's ears. She turned at looked at him.

Shaw Danon was ashamed. A person can die, but the face can never lose. He immediately turned his head away and not looked at Bilu. But he could feel his face was burning. He laughed hollowly, then walked to the pond, wanted to drink some water to lighten the hunger.

The water from the pond was most likely the spring coming from the underground. Beside the icy coolness, it was also a little sweet. But after Shaw Danon drank it, the hunger in his stomach became stronger.

But water can not substitute food. Shaw Danon sighed and stared at the water blankly. The water dropped from the top of the cave, hitted on the water and created waves of ripple. Under the water, it reflected his languish face, with a little bit red.....

A little bit red?

Shaw Danon suddenly surprised why there the water reflection had redness.

He forced and saw there was several red dots on his reflection. But that was not right. He looked closely, then looked at the stone wall. It was the red stones' reflection on the water and combined with his own reflection.

Shaw Danon relieved. But at that moment, something came into his mind. He took a step back, stared at the water. He saw the reflection of the seven red stones slowly appeared on the pond among the ripple. Because they were reflection, their lining was no longer look like a weird hook, but more like a palm.

Shaw Danon stood there and couldn't say anything. At that instant, he was suddenly in a hesitation. Like he stood at the crossing, but where to go?

After that feeling passed, he turned: "Hey!" Bilu was still looking at the stone wall above her. She said unconcernedly: "I am not hey. That's what you said when we first met." Shaw Danon paused, the words that were about to come out were swallowed back. But for some reason, he had an unusual patient toward this arrogant girl. He said: "Then who are you?" Bilu turned and smiled, said: "I am Bilu."

Shaw Danon repeated it twice in his heart, then shook his head, said: "Come here and take a look!" Bilu was a little puzzled, rose up and walked to him said: "What?"

Shaw Danon pointed to the water. Bilu bended down and looked. She saw the waves of the water, but then after she focused, she could see the seven red stones' palm like reflection.

Bilu was shocked, she quickly turned, said: "This is....." Shaw Danon shook his head: "I accidentally saw it, it maybe not but maybe....."

Before he finish, Bilu already said: “No matter what, we need to try it.” Then she did not say anymore useless thing and stepped into the water.

Shaw Danon was surprised. Just within a second, the water wet her dress, but she did not mind it, only quietly waiting.

The scattered water due to she stepped into the water was gradually settled down. Bilu quietly waited for the seven stones’ reflection appeared on the water again. Shaw Danon watched her from the ground. The pearl like water drops landed on this beautiful girl’s hair, shoulders, landed on her face, dress.

The clear drop slipped down from her black hair, slowly flew pass her snow white skin. It was like even her beauty was like the clear water.

Shaw Danon suddenly enchanted. The original sound of water in the cave suddenly went to far away. In his eyes, there was only a girl who stood in the water like a lotus with her soul touching beauty blew against his face.

The seven stones’ reflection slowly appeared, like a hand quietly lay under water. Bilu focus at those stones’ positions, then letted out her right hand, and pressed on the hand.

Her hand passed through the gentle water. The red stones’ reflection fluttered. The lighted reflected on this beautiful girl’s face, caused her face shined softly.

The pond was very shallow. Soon, Bilu's hand reached the bottom. There was thin layer of sand lay on the bottom. She could feel there was there were five places that were slightly pointed up right under her fingers. She was delighted. She softly brushed the bottom. Under the sand, there were five small stones embed on the ground, glowed with red light.

Bilu didn't hesitate, she pressed them with five fingers, then she raised her head.

No single movement.

The happiness on Bilu's face froze. Her eyes met with Shaw Danon's, then she turned away again.

Shaw Danon was about to say something to comfort her, suddenly Bilu thought of something. She searched carefully at the position of the reflection of the two remaining red stones, then she found two more stones. This time she seem more nervous. She carefully putted her left hand on it, then pressed the seven stones all at once.

At that instant, Shaw Danon and Bilu thought they fail again. The cave was quiet, there was no sound other than the water.

And then, after the long moment they had waited, a sharp but heavy "tica" sounded in the cave.

Bilu and Shaw Danon looked at it. Behind the screen of water, the stone wall that was once flawless, hard, had sank in. Although slow, it finally showed a new cave entrance.

Shaw Danon stared at the secret open. His heart was excited, scared, but in deep of his heart, like he was not willing to admit, he was curious.

The important place of Felkin for eight hundreds years, what is in there?

Bilu slowly walked back to the ground and stood next to him. Her eyes were filled with smile. Shaw Danon peered at her. Seeing her elegant beauty, and with the water drop softly silpped off from her face and fell down, almost like hitted into his heart.

His body shock, turned away and not look at her. He said quietly: "Congrats."

Bilu seem startled a little, but the smile stayed in her eyes, her voice was also gentle, said: "It is thank to your carefulness." But Shaw Danon, for some reason, his mouth was dry, his face was heated. He took a step away, and subconsciously get away from this girl, said: "Why don't you go in then?" Bilu looked at him, suddenly smiled: "You seem like fear me?"

Shaw Danon immediately shook his head hard, said: "No, no....."

Bilu looked at him for a while, then nodded, smile was still on her face, she said: "Let us go in together!"

Shaw Danon was surprised, hesitated, then said: "No, don't. This is your Felkin place, you can go in yourself....." Bilu snorted, said: "If there is an exit in there, are you still not going in?"

Shaw Danon startled, scratched his head, said: “That’s right, let, let us go then!”

Bilu smiled and nodded. She stepped into the water again, walked pass the water screen and entered the cave. Shaw Danon hesitated for a moment, then followed.

It was a ghostly tunnel. The glowing objects on the wall were much less in number than outside. Although they could still manage to see, it was very dark.

Shaw Danon and Bilu were very caustious as they walked. This was the first time anyone been here for the past eight hundred years. Who knows did those old monster of Bloodforger left some powerful seal.

But the way was peaceful. There was no accident. The path was winding, dark and long, and also slowly going upward. Shaw Danon roughly calculated, he and Bilu were probably at the center of the mountain.

While he was thinking, Bilu who was walking in front of him, suddenly stopped, said quietly: “We are there.”

Shaw Danon’s heart jumped. He went forth and saw at the end of the tunnel, there was bright beam of light shined in. He could see it was a large stone chamber. They looked at each other. Bilu began to walk toward there.

As they got closer, they could clearly see the detail of the stone chamber. The stone chamber was in circle form. In the other side of the chamber, there was a tunnel, it appeared this is not the end.

At the left side of the stone chamber, there was two large stone statues. One was kind, and smiling. Its dress was like fluttered by the wind. Kind of like Buddhist's Avalokitesvara.

Other was totally different. Aggressive appearance. Black face and horn. Eight hands and four heads. There was blood next to his mouth. Cause anyone who looked at it to shiver.

In front of the two statues, there was a stone table with a censer on it. Couple bags of incense lay next to it. They were all covered with dust. Probably it never had incense for eight hundreds years.

On the other end of the stone chamber, there were several futon lay on the floor randomly. Other than that, there was nothing.

Shaw Danon was puzzled by what he saw. But Bilu's face was serious. She took a futon. After she cleaned up the dust, she putted it in front of the statues. Then she picked up the incense from the table, and used the flint she carried and lighted it up, putted it in the censer. After that, she returned to the futon, and kneel down.

In the stone chamber, there was only light smoke rose and her kneel on the ground.

Shaw Danon stood behind her, listened to her voice echo in the stone chamber.

"Nether mother, Heaven vidyaraja, Holy faction's forty-third disciple Bilu sincerity praying. Holy faction faced tragedy and had weakened for long time.

Many followers had sacrificed one after another to rebuild the Holy faction. Wish mother and vidyaraaja can pity the world, grant my wish, rebuild the Holy faction, save the people, together we shall reach the realm of longevity, immortal, bliss, and happiness!”

Shaw Danon realized those two statues probably were the evil gods that the Felkin worships. He couldn’t help but laughed coldly, he turned away and not look at it anymore.

Chapter 43 Libruis

Bilu kowtowed three times seriously and sincerely, then she rose up and peered at Shaw Danon, and saw him was looking away and standing still. She frowned, but did not say much, and said lightly: “Let’s go!”

When they were walking into this tunnel at beginning, Shaw Danon had positive feeling about this girl. However, as he saw these two evil statues, it reminded him of faction difference and the teaching of elders. His face colded, slightly nodded, said: “Okay.”

Bilu looked at him, then walked deeper into the the tunnel. Shaw Danon followed behind her. This time didn’t take long. They soon arrived in a spacious area, but it did not docorated like the stone chamber. It was a cave filled with limestones. The limestones were all strange and colorful. Before the two of them, there was a large stone tablet. Ten characters were flamboyantly carved: 天地不仁，以万物为刍狗！

Each of the characters were about half a man size. The writing was ancient, with powerful strength, and flew across the tablet like a dragon, like it was raging the wind and coming out alive.

At first it was nothing, but after Shaw Danon stared at it for a moment, he

suddenly felt dizzy. He couldn't help but took a step back.

He was surprised, and quickly pulled himself together. The characters were still on the tablet, did not move, but the spirit was surprising.

While Shaw Danon was still in surprise, Bilu already walked past the stone tablet and went deeper into the cave, so he followed. Passed the stone tablet, behind it, all kinds of limestones were everywhere. They walked among the stone forest for a while, Bilu suddenly stopped and gasped.

At the same moment, Shaw Danon discovered the fire stick, which was used to fix his arm, had glowed with strange light. Especially the orb on the fire stick, it glowed with an abnormal green light. But this time it was soft, like meeting an old friend that hadn't meet for long time, with endless of thought and nostalgia.

Shaw Danon curiously looked ahead. His eyes passed Bilu and saw what surprised Bilu: there was a smooth stone wall. On both sides of the wall, there was a tunnel leading to unknown place. Before the wall, there was a bluestone platform with skeleton peacefully sat on it.

The orb on the fire stick glowed gentle green light to that skeleton.

Bilu was in front of him. She did not notice Shaw Danon's strange expression and the change of the fire stick. After the surprise, she quickly calmed down.

She was a Felkin after all, how would she fear a skeleton. She stepped forth, looked at it careful, but did not find anything surprising. She turned and smiled at Shaw Danon: "Maybe this is the world shocking Elder Blackheart eight hundreds years ago!"

Shaw Danon naturally had no positive feeling toward Felkin people. He snorted and said: “Shouldn’t we hurry and look for a way out?”

Bilu peered at him. She curled her lips, said: “Go find it yourself!”

Shaw Danon startled. He snorted, though he was a bit unwilling, but he still turned and entered the left tunnel.

After few steps, he shook his head, thinking why he ran out of patient toward this Felkin girl so easily. Just a little thing he would have such great reaction. Probably in her eyes, she was laughing at him.

But thinking was still thinking after all. Since he took that step then it was impossible to return. After several steps, he did hear anything behind him. It was appeared that Bilu did not follow. Shaw Danon was disappointed somehow, but then he scolded himself “Useless”. He pulled himself together, then carefully walked deeper into the tunnel. The tunnel was no different than other ones, just darker and more ghostly. It was almost totally dark at deeper in. The road was also longer. He couldn’t understand how the Bloodforger was able to begin such great project.

After walking for a while, Shaw Danon suddenly found the tunnel ahead slowly brightened. He hurried his pace. The soft light at the end of the road was particularly clear, like a gentle hand tempted the people.

Shaw Danon took a deep breath and stepped into the light.

Bilu watched Shaw Danon’s figure disappeared into the tunnel. She startled.

Her face darkened. Her father was a high position and influence person within the Felkin. Since young, she was like a princess, no one dare to disobey her.

But now in such hopeless situation, she met a not old, not good temper guy from the side of Righteous. No way she will not be mad.

However, when Shaw Danon was still at Mount Jadeon, he was a friendly young man. But for the reason why he always in conflict with Bilu, beside faction difference, he couldn't find any other reason.

Surely Bilu knew nothing about it, but she did see Shaw Danon against her several times. Her heart was not happy about that. But they both were in hopeless situation, it was not nice to teach this brat, so she snorted, marked this in her heart. But need Bilu to force herself to follow Shaw Danon, it was impossible.

She did not ponder, and turned, walked into the tunnel at right hand side.

Just couple of steps, Bilu could felt this road was not much different than other tunnel, but the glowing objects on sides of the wall were less in number, caused the tunnel to be darker.

Fortunately, this road wasn't long. Bilu soon reached the end, and stepped into a stone chamber.

It was a medium size stone chamber. One side, there were a lot of shelves. On the other side, there was a pile of trashes. Most were weapons like blade, sword, spear and et cetera. They were all broken. There was an axe lay on the top. Rust all over. A bit large. It seem still intact. Look like the entire axe was made from

steel.

Bilu had no interest in it, then walked to the shelves. After a quick look, exultation appeared on her face, but then it turned into disappointment

There were tags for each cases on the selves. Though some characters already turned blurry and some were barely readable, but it was hard to resist the excitement as she read it. They were like: “Five Mountains Halberd”, “Lunar Rope”, “Men Piercer” and others.

Bilu grew up in Felkin, her father was a genius who had knowledge from past to now, she surely knew those espers where best of the best within Felkin. Why she not happy? But unfortunately there were only tags but no items on the selves, just left her the disappointment.

She sighed, but she still had hope and looked through the selves, but they were all empty. Perhaps the heaven would not disappoint the one who keep their hopes, she found there was still a small steel box at the last case. But there was no label on the selve, so she did not know what is in there.

Bilu was delighted, carefully picked up the box. It was quiet heavy. She shook it softly, but there was no sound came out.

Bilu pondered for a moment, then putted the box on the ground. She took a deep breath, taken precautions, then she waved her hand. A white light appeared in the stone chamber. A jade like flower appeared in air, letted faint fragrance.

Bilu's right hand turned over. The little flower that was standing in mid-air brightened and flew to above the steel box. The white light covered the entire steel box.

After that, Bilu carefully opened the small box. As her hand touched the box's cover, she could feel the box did not locked. She frowned, the alert in her eyes got higher. She bit her teeth and opened the box with determination.

She heard a soft "ka" sound. Before she could see clearly what was in there, a black gas came out.

Like she got an electric shock, Bilu fell back. The white flower above the steel box immediately flew down. The black gas was captured by the white light. Could not get out even after several attempt. After a while, the black gas shrunk, and the jade like white flower turned black, absorbed the black gas.

Until the black gas was completely gone, Bilu walked back after a while of waiting. She looked at her little flower. Her father had putted a lot of effort in crafting this esper "Heartending Flower". Now the jade white petals had turned into dark purple, look a bit evil.

Bilu said quietly: "'Ancient Corpse Poison'! That Elder Blackheart really got a black heart to practice such a thing!"

She cursed the Felkin's Elder Blackheart as looked into the steel box.

It was simple inside. There was only one thing inside of the small steel box: A golden, well intact small bell.

Bilu startled. She did not expected the rare poison “Ancient Corpse Poison” was only protecting such small bell. She couldn’t find anything strange. Pondered for a while, then she slowly picked up the small bell.

“Ding dong”.

A clear ring, like ringing inside of the heart, rang in the stone chamber that had been quiet for eight hundred years.

Bilu held up that bell. It was exquisitely detailed. A thin steel line tied the bell. A slight movement, the clapper softly hit the side, issued ringing sound again.

“Ding.....ding dong”.

Bilu’s girl nature was very pleased by it. The disappointment was also lightened. After an other careful examine, there was nothing strange about it. It was like a skillfully made normal bell.

But Elder Blackheart kept this so secret and careful. This bell must has some uncommon feature, should ask father about when got a chance.

Bilu’s heart settled. She was more and more pleased by the little bell. She tied it to her waist. As she turned, the bell letted out series of clear rings. It was very pleasant. Bilu was delighted and nodded.

After that, she carefully checked the stone chamber again, but there was

nothing. She even checked the pile of trashes. There was nothing worth to look at, not to mention about a way out.

After finished, Bilu slowly rose up. It was the time to check on that silly boy's situation.

Before she left the stone chamber, she turned her head and looked for the last time. The stone chamber was still messy. But after the pile of trashes was searched through by her, it was in chaos. All kind of weapons lay on the ground. The large axe was also threw to the corner.

Then, she left the stone chamber.

The tunnel on the left hand side which Shaw Danon entered was much longer than the one Bilu entered on the right hand side. Bilu finally saw light after long while of walk, but still couldn't see the detail. There was no sound of movement coming out. She became a little worry. This place had a lot of strange and cruel stuff, difficult to predict. Is he.....

Bilu speed up her pace and entered the chamber. Her heart assured as she looked. Shaw Danon stood inside of the stone chamber, stared at the stone wall.

Bilu relieved, then she looked around in the chamber. This chamber was larger than the one she went, however, it was empty, nothing here. But on the stone wall, there were writing densely carved on the wall. Shaw Danon was reading it with his eye brows frowned together.

Bilu frowned, went forth and took a look at it. Delight appeared on her face.

On the beginning of the stone carved writing, there were two large characters.

Libruis!

“Libruis, this is Libruis!” Bilu couldn’t help but cheered.

Shaw Danon shocked, then realized Bilu had arrived next to him, but his focus was only on her word: “Libruis? You know what Libruis is?”

Bilu glared at him, said: “How would I don’t know, this ‘Libruis’ is the holy script of our Holy faction. From past to now, all Holy faction disciples’ divine incarnations were all understood from this Libruis.”

Shaw Danon shocked again. He was puzzled, then stared at the carved writing on the wall. After a while, he said quietly: “No way, impossible!”

Bilu’s face darkened, said: “This Holy faction’s holy script. It is our secret. Didn’t you say we are evil heretic? Why look at it?”

It was like Shaw Danon did not hear it. There were only the writing of the wall in his eyes.

“Libruis - Volume One”

The changes of the world begin with mixed together, no difference between good and bad. Sun and moon shine together. World in between. Shape begin to form, good and bad begin to form.

Reason why the world can last for long time because they did not created themselves. So they can never die. But the things of the world have their own shape. Men are blinded by illusion, so they created selfishness, perference, desire, karma. Because of those, it created three poisons, three fear, three terror. Can not last long.

Heaven has no judgement, principle has no name. So if achieve selfless, no perference, no desire, no karma, then it is righteous. Holding righteousness, inside is self nature, world is the center.

So everything are within the world, watch by the world.

So there is no good or bad.

So world is always here, can not be created.

So matter can not last, then it can not fulfill the desire!

..... (Note 1)

Bilu snorted. She wanted to rage, but after a thought, she did not say anything, then looked at the wall. After reading a few sentences, she felt her brain became dizzy. She couldn't help but admired how Shaw Danon able to read those boring writings.

When she looked at Shaw Danon, she was surprised to find his face was filled with pain and perplex. He was trembling with an undescibable strange feeling.

No one on this world could match Shaw Danon's excitement right now. The Felkin's holy script "Liburis"'s summary, each words of it pierced into Shaw Danon's heart deeply like a knife. The shock it gave him was hundred times greater than the moment he discovered Jadeon's Dagos cultivating incanation and Pozhi's Fuwa "Fawin Wisdom" incanation were totally opposite.

From these writing, he discovered the different Dagos and Fuwa incanations had common. This surprise was still acceptable. But as he read on, his face was getting more pale, because he had discovered a large secret from this Felkin holy script "Liburis".

Felkin's magic was cruel and awkward. But it was from "Liburis". Dagos require harness nature, Fuwa focus on understanding the self. And in Liburis, there was Dagos' idea and also Fuwa's incanation.

Other people like Bilu wouldn't have much thought about it. They will think this is just the divine art left by their ancestor. But to Shaw Danon who knew Dagos and Fuwa incanation, this discovery was terrifying.

A thought was harassing him.

Which one is right?

He read on. His face was pale. His mind was excited, with strange and burning curiosity and desire. He could feel there was an important secret before him, but he couldn't touch it, couldn't see it. But it was telling him to run to that destination.

But in his heart, there was also fear. Should he do that?

Bilu looked at Shaw Danon for a while. He was staring at the wall, face weird, seem like completely forgot she was standing next to him. Fire rage from her heart for no reason. She snorted. But Shaw Danon ignored it, did not do anything.

Bilu curled her lips. She was very angry, but did not know why, she just doesn't want to teach this person a lesson. She turned around and left while stamping the ground loudly with her feet. Sadly that silly boy still had no reaction.

Bilu left the stone chamber angrily and returned to limestones cave, sulk at the skeleton. It used to be nothing, but that brat was just annoying. The more she thought the more angry she felt. Then she looked at her "Heartending Flower" which used to be beautiful but now black all over, she immediately putted all her anger at the blackheart old men.

She pointed at the skeleton, said: "You damn old men, died for eight hundreds years and still harm me. Caused my jade flower become.....become....."

She couldn't continue, the fire in Bilu became larger. Without saying much, she waved. "Heartending Flower" circled the skeleton then returned. After a second, sharp bones breaking sound issued. With the "ka ka" sound, the skeleton had fallen apart.

After this, Bilu's anger was settled. She also felt regret, did not know where she had such anger. But when she turned, she was surprised. There were few lines of writing on the wall where the skeleton covered. She quickly went there and looked. There were four lines written on the wall.

Bell cries, flower dies,

figure turn thin white like frost.

Deep love pain, life is pain,

infatuation only for heartless pain.

Note one: They are from “Book of Way and Virtue”, “Diamond Sutra”, “Altar Sutra”, “Book of Jin”, and “Book of Changes”.

Chapter 44 Golden Bell

Bilu startled, then read it closely again. The writing of the four lines were meticulous, very difference than the Liburis in the stone chamber. It appeared to be a work of someone else.

From the meaning of those writing, it seem like a bitter word from a infatuated woman. It was strange of how such thing appeared in Felkin's sacred ground "Blooddrop Cave".

She thought for long time but couldn't find the answer. She shook her head, gave up. When she turned around, she was surprised to see Shaw Danon had already came out of the stone chamber sliently, standing behind her. His expression was weird. Like grieve, like surprised, and also like perplexed. His frowned tightly, muscle twisted, a little hideous.

Bilu was surprised and letted out a scream "Ah", stepped back. The delicate bell softly shook at her waist, letted out clear and pleasant ding-dong sound, echo in the cave.

Shaw Danon heard the bell. His body shocked, it was like he suddenly woke up. His emotion was relaxed, but replaced by puzzle.

He was pondering at the Liburis monument inside the stone chamber, then the fire stick glowed like woke up from sleep. The icy coldness feeling spread through his body. After that, he walked out here subconsciously, until he finally saw the crushed skeleton.

Shaw Danon looked at the fire stick that tied to his left arm. It was still glowing with soft green light to the fallen sketeton, like feeling sorry for an old friend.

Shaw Danon did not know why he will have that thought, but looking at that skeleton, there was also sadness in his heart. Although he clearly knew the person who died here must be a important person of Felkin Bloodforger, probably the Elder Blackheart like Bilu said, he felt friendly to that skeleton.

The light of the fire stick dimmed, returned to the ugly black. Shaw Danon still looked at that skeleton, then, under the eyes of Bilu, he slowly walked to it.

Bilu snorted, then stood before him, smiled coldly: "Although I don't like that blackheart old man, and also different branch. But we are all Holy faction's disciple, we all made an oath before Nether Mother and Heaven Vidyaraja. If you want to do anything impolite to his dead body, I will not allow it."

Shaw Danon looked at her, said: "He is now crushed in pieces, it is all thank to you!"

Bilu flushed, but her word did not step back, said determinedly: "I will repent to mother and vidyaraja, but I will never let you do anything to it!"

Shaw Danon looked at her, suddenly said: "I have no intend to."

Bilu startled, seeing he was calm, no sign of hatred. She felt that Jadeon youngster was much different than the Righteous people who loaded with justice and virtue. At that moment of hesitation, Shaw Danon walked past her. She paused for a moment, then turned and looked at him.

Shaw Danon walked in front of the skeleton. Long time had passed, the pale bones had glowed with light green color. Due to the heavy hit from Bilu, the bones below the chest were all fallen apart, only the skull remain fine. It landed on top of the bones. The hollow eyes was looking at Shaw Danon.

Shaw Danon shivered. He felt the soul was still in there, looking at him. But he still went to it, and slowly drew the scattered bones into a pile. The chill came out from the bone, he did not feel scare.

It was like an old friend!

Shaw Danon was relieved, like he did what he should do and able to relax. It was weird, but he really had that feeling. He thought: This fire stick was too weird. If I get out alive, I have to ask master about it.

He finished. As he was about to rose up, he noticed at place where skeleton was sitting, because he removed bones, there were writing on there. He letted out a “huh”.

Bilu was coldly watching Shaw Danon doing weird thing. She suddenly heard Shaw Danon discovered something. She was curious, so she went there and took a look. There were also several of lines written there.

Her heart suffered, hard to return,

regret too late, can't be together.

Sinister misunderstand golden bell,

whole life always.....

At the fourth line, the writing became powerless, especially at the third character “always”, it was illegible, almost unreadable. At the end, it was just a line, stopped. Appeared the person had collapsed and no longer able to continue.

In the cave, Shaw Danon and Bilu were in silent. They could feel there was a sad story within the two writings. A lady with a broken heart and dying man's regret.

Shaw Danon was lost in thought. Though he never see the unknown lovers, he felt a little sorrow after seeing writings from thousand years ago.

On the other hand, Bilu frowned tightly. Her eyes stared at the lines, mouth mumbled: “Sinister misunderstand golden bell, sinister misunderstand golden bell.....golden bell? Ah! Right, Jingling!”

She thought of something and cheered. Shaw Danon was surprised. He asked: “What golden bell?”

Bilu was excited, and filled with joy, said: “It is Lady Jingling! You don't

know?”

Shaw Danon shook his head confusingly. Bilu snorted, glared at him, then happily said: “Lady Jingling is a important figure of our Holy faction thousand years ago. She was extermely intelligent, highly cultivated, and fully understood our holy script Liburis. She found “Lupin” alone in the Holy faction. She is the top female figure in our faction!”

Shaw Danon lost interest in it. According to her, it seem like Lady Jingling was a very power person thousand years ago in Felkin. But when he heard that she found a branch call “Lupin”, he knew that old woman wasn’t a good person. Bilu seem really admired that Lady Jingling.

Shaw Danon snorted, did not reply to her. Then he turned back and fixed the skeleton because they ruined it to read the writing. There was a strange idea appeared in his mind: Seem like you are also a infatuated person, probably died for that woman!

Of’course the dead did not answer him. It was just Shaw Danon’s thinking. He felt more friendly to the skeleton.

Bilu was happily talking to herself: “Can believe Lady Jingling had love toward that damn Elder Blackheart. Hmph, must be blackheart old man betrayed her. Heartless man, should be killed by thunder! Best to die!”

“Nonsense!” Shaw Danon suddenly shouted.

Bilu was stunned. After a while of staring at him, she said curiously: “What did you said?”

Shaw Danon realized it was not right. He was from the Righteous, but help defend a savage Felkin killer from eight hundreds years ago. If the Jadeon masters hear it, it will result in harsh punishment. But he did not know why he would let that out from his mouth. Now he was asked by Bilu, he couldn't find an answer.

Bilu looked at him strangely, then she suddenly thought of one thing and forgot about Shaw Danon. She picked up the golden bell tied to her waist, very excited, she laughed loudly: "Ah! Isn't this Lady Jingling's 'Lupin Bell'!" Then she quickly turned the golden bell and looked inside. There were three small characters.

Lupin Bell!

Shaw Danon saw Bilu was so happy and almost going get killed by laughter, it appeared she had obtained a powerful esper by chance. He wasn't comfortable. He said coldly: "You find the exit yet?"

There was only the little bell in her eyes, she answered casually: "Nope!"

Shaw Danon turned his head away, lightly said: "Then you better die with this golden bell in this cave."

Bilu startled, then realized the most important thing now was to look for an exit, hurried asked: "You find it?"

Shaw Danon shook his head silently. They look at each other. Bilu took away her smile, said solemnly: "Then we should find the way first!"

With death in front of them, Shaw Danon quietly nodded. They searched the tunnels and caves together. Closely examined every single wall, every single rift. Shaw Danon ignored Bilu's strong objection, he even examined the two statues of Nether Mother and Heaven Vidyaraja, but still couldn't find anything.

When they regroup in front of the crashed skeleton, seeing other's depressed look, their faces dimmed.

Bilu said sadly: "Are we going to die here?"

Shaw Danon lowered his head, couldn't see his face. Bilu was also silence. Suddenly, the shadow of death engulfed the two young life.

After a long while, in the silent as two of them did not say anything, Shaw Danon suddenly jumped up and went away. Bilu was surprised, said: "What are you doing?"

Shaw Danon gritted his teeth, said: "I am going to search one more time. There must be a way out. We are not going to die here!"

In his heart, there was still a sentence he did not say and sounding inside him: I must see Ling'Er Shijie again, even if I die, I need to bury at Bamboo Peak!

Bilu did not do anything, just sat on the platform, watching Shaw Danon continue searching with his strong desire of wanting to live.

One time.

Two times.

Three times.

Four times.

Bilu could not remember how many time Shaw Danon had went through the stone chambers and caves. Each time he returned with nothing. But he still did not give up. Maybe it was his stubborn nature, or maybe it was his strong desire to live, he kept continuing searching for a way out, continuing, continuing.....

Until his feet began to shake, until he ran out of strength, until he went next to Bilu, swung to the side and fell. He landed heavily on the ground and passed out.

Bilu gazed at him. Hesitated for a moment, then walked to him and turned his body over. It seem nothing serious, just over exhausted plus hunger and thirst, so he fainted. She gave a sigh of relieved.

Then she startled, asked herself in deep of her heart: “Why I relieve, he is fine why I need to sigh?”

That idea flashed through her mind like lighting.

She deeply looked at him. On that young man’s face, it was languish due to

injuries and hunger. His lips were cracked from dryness.

Bilu softly putted him down. Gazed at him for a moment, then said: "Since we are meant to die here together, I don't want to be alone too soon. It is better to have someone with me."

She went outside and back to the cave entrance to take some water from the pond. Then she took some food and tried to feed Shaw Danon.

Perhaps because Shaw Danon was unconscious, he could not eat any food, only drank some water from Bilu's water bag. He still hadn't wake up.

After a day of work, Bilu was also tired. Shaw Danon's situation seem fine. She closed her eys and fell asleep.

After a while of sleep, Bilu woke up. Her first action was immediately looked at Shaw Danon. Shaw Danon was peacefully laying there, not moving. He was sleeping. She relieved, couldn't help but scolded quietly: "Why sleep like a dead pig!"

As she spoke, she herself smiled. It was like watching this young man, her mood got better, she even forgot the death in near future.

She suddenly realized that although Shaw Danon was sleeping, his face flushed with redness. A bit not right. She quickly reach out her hand and checked. His forehead was burning hot. She was surprised, did not expected Shaw Danon to have a high fever at this critical moment.

Normally, cultivators had strong body, hardly get ill for hundreds years. But

Shaw Danon was heavily injured for the past several days, mentally and physically exhausted, the body was damaged badly. At the end, without caring his body condition, he used all his strength to search for an exit in Blooddrip Cave. After passed out, he had a high fever.

This sickness was not light, after long time his fever did not get lower (in the cave, Bilu did not know how many days). Bilu couldn't do anything. She could only help him get some water to lower his temperature, but it was useless.

Later, Shaw Danon's fever was still not gone, he began to say random stuff. Bilu was extremely worried and anxious. When she thought of she need to wait for death in this cave alone, she was terrified. So even something Shaw Danon said, even a gasp, it was like heaven compared to the horrible days later.

No matter what Bilu tried, she could only bring some water. In the cave, there was no doctor or herbs. How could she help. Shaw Danon's sickness was getting worse day by day. The random words was getting more frequent.

That day, Bilu stayed anxiously next to the unconscious Shaw Danon. He suddenly turned over and curled up, cried: "Ghost, ghost, ghost....." Then suddenly said angrily: "You killed my parents, killed all villagers, I am going to kill you!"

Bilu was surprised, quickly held him, kept saying: "No, no! There is no ghost here!"

Perhaps her words worked, Shaw Danon calmed down. The fear on his face was also settled, but then it changed to a sad expression.

His eyes were close, said quietly: “Shijie, shijie, don’t abandon me, I, I want to.....don’t abandon me.....”

Bilu startled, sorrow passed through her heart, but courage came out from her, she gently said: “Never! Your Shijie is here, she won’t abandon you.”

Smile immediately appeared on Shaw Danon’s face, it was like this was Shaw Danon happiest moment. His mouth kept mumbling: “Shijie, shijie.....”

Bilu saw his peace within the suffer face, the was pain sliced through her heart.

The girl who he care so much about, the shijie that he still remember even when he is unconscious, how is she like?

She remembered that day under Forsaken Abyss, the Jadeon female disciple with blue sword that Shaw Danon tried hard to protect. Can it be, her?

Bilu frowned. She could remember that lady had a extremely beautiful face. Even saying she could enchant the entire country was not too over. No wonder Shaw Danon would fall for her! But no matter how smart Bilu is, she would not know the one that Shaw Danon obsessed with was Hidi who was still at Mount Jadeon Bamboo Peak.

For the following days, Bilu always stayed next to Shaw Danon. She learned more about Shaw Danon from his sleep talk. She found out he borned in the place call “Grasstemple Village”; she found out that village’s tragic event; she also found out the lady he obsessed with was his Shijie at Bamboo Peak, but she could not be sure is that Shijie the one who held blue sword that day.

Only, from these days of taking care of Shaw Danon, Bilu could feel she had a strange feeling toward that young man. Every day gazed at his depressed face seem to be the only way to spend the boring time.

She often stared at him like that for long time, long time. But she never thought of, at the stone chamber next to him, the Felkin's holy script "Liburis".

Sometime, when Shaw Danon settled, she would slowly walked to the writing left by Lady Jingling. Gazed at it for a moment, then softly said: "Lady, you had left a warning that, all men of this world are heartless. But you can see, this Shaw Danon is very infatuated!"

But there was no one answered her in this empty cave. Only when she turned, the little golden bell letted out a clear pleasing ring, at her side, in this cave, softly echo, seem like saying something.

Like there was a pair of gentle eyes, and a lingering soul, watching them, surrounding them.

Chapter 45 Sadness

After these series of sleep talking, maybe Shaw Danon's body was strong, or maybe Bilu's comfort had effect, the continuing high fever was slowly lowered. Shaw Danon also slowly regaining consciousness. Because the sickness was not light, he was still laying and rest.

That day, Bilu got nothing to do and walked around in the cave, but at the end, she still ended up in front of Lady Jingling's writing. After reading it, she sighed. Shaw Danon sat on the side, asked: "What are you sighing for?"

Bilu snorted, said: "I am sighing for lady. With her intellect and beauty, she was betrayed by a stinky man like you, suffer for entire life. It is really not worth it."

Shaw Danon couldn't find anything to reply.

Bilu read through these writing again, then she suddenly issued a "huh?". She found a weird thing. The last character "苦" on the last sentence, the "口" part was deeply sunk in, very different than other characters. She rolled her eyes, then immediately realized and picked up the Lupin Bell from her waist to compare. The size was exactly same. She letted out a cheer.

Shaw Danon asked curiously from behind: “What it is?”

Bilu turned around and smiled: “Perhaps it may save us!”

Shaw Danon was surprised, immediately filled with energy, said happily: “Really?”

Bilu inserted the bell in. There was no reaction. She turned it left and right. After a moment, “ka ka” was sounded in the cave. The stone wall was shaking. Bilu was surprised, took out the golden bell and stepped back. After a boom, the smooth layer of stone wall fell off, showed the inter layer. There were writing like the Libruis’s room.

Shaw Danon was first delighted, but then after a look at the stone wall, his face dimmed. Seem like this trap was for hiding Lady Jingling’s writing. There was no exit. Now he was very disappointed.

But Bilu was staring at the writing on the wall. This was left by Lady Jingling, and secured so secretly. It must be uncommon thing. After long while, there was no happiness or sadness, but an exclaim look, said quietly: “So this is ‘Inflatuation’.”

Shaw Danon was impatient. He took at look at it, the first few sentences were:

Spirit of Nether, Deities of Heaven,

Use my body, as sacrifice.

For eternity, fall into Yama,

Because of love, never regret.

.....

He immediately concluded these were the Evil's vicious curse. But Bilu was quite happy on the other hand. He snorted, said: "Are there hint for where the exit is?"

Bilu startled, said: "No."

Shaw Danon said lightly: "What's the use for you to learn it then?"

Bilu was silent, and said after a while: "Do you know that Inflatuation's incantation was passed down from our Holy faction since ancient time, but no one ever used it?"

Shaw Danon was curious, asked: "What?"

Bilu sighed, said: "That incantation was invented out of the <<Libruis>> by a intelligent female master, but it could only be practiced by female. It require all blood from a woman, then transfer it into a powerful spell....."

Before she finish, Shaw Danon already cutted in, his eyes were filled with disdain, said: "Then name it 'bloody jinx", call it Inflatuation is just evil way of making it sound good!"

Bilu's face changed, but then startled, and said quietly: "You are right. That is why even Lady Jingling did not use it in the end."

Shaw Danon ignored her.

※ ※ ※

The two were staying in there for several days again. Shaw Danon went to read the <<Libruis>> as past time while Bilu often stared at the writing of the <<Inflatuation>> on the wall.

Within <<Libruis>>'s first volume, there was no actual cultivation practice. They were all deep writing and call be called the summary. But Shaw Danon knew both Fuwa and Dagos cultivation, he could manage to understand those writing. But it was only understood it. For the Fuwa and Dagos combined stage of what <<Libruis>> stated, Shaw Danon still couldn't get what it mean. Is it saying that cast "Pure Essence" and "Fawin Wisdom" at the same time?

Even though he knew there was little chance of survive, there was still a little desire in his heart. Shaw Danon quickly follow the way of practice that <<Libruis>> had stated. But to channel both incantation at once, it was not easy. After a moment, his blood began to boil, so he was forced to stop. For the following days, there was no improvement.

But then, there was a more difficult question laying before them—out of food.

Though cultivators can go anywhere they want, but they are still mortal

bodies. Legend said the high cultivation elders can go without eating and drinking, but no one ever saw that. After entered this cave, Shaw Danon lost all his food already. Although fortunately there was water in the cave, only Bilu had food, how is that enough? Even they had tried to save the food, they soon finished them all.

Then after a while in the cave, probably only two days, Shaw Danon and Bilu were staring blankly at the empty food bag.

“Alas!” Bilu sat on the platform, next to her it was the skeleton, but she did not seem to be uncomfortable. Seem like Felkin was really different than normal human. But now, her face was still depressed.

Shaw Danon’s illness had recovered quickly. The fever was almost gone. Beside the body was a little out of strength, there was no other thing. At this moment he heard Bilu sighed, he turned and looked at that Felkin lady. In his eyes, it was a girl in watery green dress sitting on the platform. Her feet were swinging in the air. And the Lupin Bell on her waist was ringing with “ding ding dong dong”. If not because he knew who she is, Shaw Danon would probably think she was a naive little girl.

Bilu look much more depressed than when Shaw Danon first met her. Because she is a girl, everyday she would go to the little water fall and have a wash, so her look was neat without any dirt. But through these days, she was clearly got skinny. Thought about that, it reminded Shaw Danon that his master and shixions had taught him all Felkins were selfish and cruel. But now in this cave and hopeless situation, why, that Felkin girl would give him the remaining half of the food?

Shaw Danon was in his own world thinking about that, did not noticed Bilu had looked at him. Seeing Shaw Danon was staring at herself blankly, she

blushed, scolded him: "What are you looking at?"

Shaw Danon was surprised, then quickly turned his head away, said: "Not, nothing."

Bilu stood behind him, did not scolded him fiercely like he had imagined. After long time, it was a sigh, said: "We are stuck in this cave, not far away from death, you don't need to care about so much."

Shaw Danon startled, slowly turned around, looked at Bilu. On her thin but still beautiful face, there was a helpless smile. He couldn't help but said: "When I was sick, you don't need to give me most of the food, then you can live for few days longer, maybe you can....."

"Maybe what?" Bilu suddenly stopped him.

Shaw Danon startled, then shook his head, said quietly: "Maybe you can be saved."

Bilu shook her head, showed a smile, said: "I don't want to die, but I am more not willing to die in a lonely cave, facing a skeleton and a decaying corpse and wait for death. If it is like that, I probably going to go mad before people rescue me."

Shaw Danon couldn't help but shivered when he heard how Bilu discribe it. It was really not a place for living.

Bilu looked at him, said lightly: "What, you scare too?"

Shaw Danon immediately straightened his back, said loudly: "No way!"

Bilu showed a small smile, a little of gentle in her eyes. She said softly: "Promise me one thing, okay?"

Shaw Danon frowned, asked: "What?"

Bilu smiled faintly, said: "We had finished all of our food. Except for water, there is nothing to eat. Within seven days, we are going to starve to death."

Shaw Danon was silent.

Bilu was calm, but the next thing she said would turned Shaw Danon pale like he met a ghost: "After few days, if you see me unable to keep on, then kill me first."

Shaw Danon's mouth wide opened, pointed his finger at her and couldn't say anything. But he did not expect Bilu would said such awkward, surprising words so calmly: "After I die, my body will still here. If you want to survive, then eat my flesh, probably able to live for period of time."

Shaw Danon almost fell on the floor.

After long while, he pulled himself back together from this great shock, he told himself: "The Felkins are really animals, they can do such thing!" But

looking at Bilu's eyes, they were all calm. His heart was chilled, and stepped back, his hand was shaking, pointing at Bilu, said: "What did you-you said?"

Bilu looked at him, the gentleness in her eyes was getting heavier. But in Shaw Danon's eyes, it was more deadly than all poisons in this world.

"Don't you want to go back to Mount Jadeon Bamboo Peak to see your Ling'Er Shijie, there are still several of your allies in this Cave of Fangs, they must be searching for you, if you can live longer, their chance of finding you is greater isn't it?" Bilu lowered her head, but her voice was still calm.

But at this moment, how would Shaw Danon care about Bilu's tone, he did not even noticed how Bilu knew about Hidi. He only pointed at Bilu, said angrily: "You-you tell me to eat-eat-eat.....you Felkin heretics are so insane! Shameless, disgusting, I-I....you-you....."

He was getting more angry but his tongue did not work properly. He said "I I I" and "You you you" for long time, but still couldn't say anything. His reaction was within Bilu's prediction, so she was not angry or ridicule. She only watched him, waited until Shaw Danon regain his breath, she slowly said: "Eat me or not, it is your choice, but you must kill me first!"

"Again." The fire in Shaw Danon burned again: "Do you think I will make evil deal with the you Felkin. You gave me the food, I can repay you with my body. If you want to get me into this, never!"

Bilu slowly shook her head, said: "No, I am scared."

Shaw Danon continued his normal answer: "Lie, I will not fall into your

trick.....eh, what did you say?"

It was like at this life and death moment, Bilu's heart had some unusual change. It was like she had fallen into some kind of memory. There was terror appeared on her face that Shaw Danon never saw before. Then, she shook her head, like she wanted to shake away some thought.

"Do you know how it is feel to wait for death alone?" She said quietly.

Shaw Danon startled. He noticed she seem hiding some secret. He was curious and asked: "What?"

The muscles next to Bilu's eyes twitched. At this dire time, facing the only young man who was next to her before death, she could not control her feeling, even her voice was blurry and hollow: "When I was six, mom bought me to 'Fox Hill Six Foxes Cave' to visit my grandma. But your Righteous attacked us, and the monk Pufan of 'Skysong' used 'Pagoda Alms Bowl' (Note 1) destroyed the entire Six Foxes Cave, buried me, mother, and grandma alive."

Shaw Danon suddenly shivered. He had a bad feeling about this. There was a chill coming from his heart and spread through his body.

Bilu had completely entered the painful memory. Her eyes stared forward hollowly, just like her voice was calm and hollow, with the deepest pain: "That time, I cried loudly from the terror. I was very scared. This was a small cave, because there was several large stones to support it, we lived. But grandma's injury was too serious, soon she died. Mother and I cried hard in the darkness, then buried grandma.

“We were buried very deep in the earth, beside the few water dropped from the rocks, it was all hard, cold rocks. I was really scared, but mother kept telling me: Lil Yao, don’t be afraid, dad will save us.”

Shaw Danon held his breath, listened carefully, with undiscrivable awkwardness and fear. He could feel there is something about to happen.

“But, it was always darkness. Dad did not come. I was very scared in the dark cave. And I was hungry, kept on crying. I can still remember my mother sighed sadly next to me. She cuddled me tightly, kept telling me: Lil Yao don’t be afraid, Lil Yao don’t be afraid, mother will not let anything happen to you. Your dad will come save us!”

Bilu became more and more pale, but she still continued: “But dad still did not come and I was already starving, kept on crying to mother for food. Mother search through the cave over and over again, but still couldn’t find anything. At the end, I was so hungry that I did not have the strength to cry, only laying at my mother. Suddenly one day, mother found a piece of flesh!.....”

Shaw Danon could see Bilu shivered as she said this.

“I was too hungry, did not care about much, so I ate it, then slept comfortably. It seem like at that moment, mother smiled in the darkness. So mother gave me a piece of flesh every once in a while. That is how I lived. But mother’s voice was getting weaker and weaker. Until one day, when I called her, she did not answer. After that, I was in the darkness, waiting for death alone.”

Bilu slowly turned, looked at Shaw Danon. Shaw Danon was caught by her eyes, he could feel the chill, “Do you know how it feel when waiting for death

alone? Do you know the smell of the decaying corpse of mother? Do you know how is the fear of forever living in the place that you can never see in the darkness?”

Each time she asked, Shaw Danon shivered.

Bilu was silent. Shaw Danon did not dare to take a breath. Finally, he was like awoken from a dream, but it was not totally awoken. She continued: “Finally one day, the cave entrance was becoming larger. I heard dad calling me and mother’s names. Then, I saw dad jumped down in front of me.

“He did not see me at first, but my mother. I only looked at above and forgot to look at mother when there was finally light. When I recalled it, dad already blocked my sight. I could not see mother’s corpse. But I could clearly see dad was shocked. It was like he had turned to stone. Then, uncle Meri Koon, uncle White Tiger, and uncle Sinwu, they were all stunned and rooted on the ground.

“I suddenly felt scared, even more than when I was waiting for death in the darkness. I quietly called: Dad. The three uncles lined up behind him, covered mother’s dead body. I still couldn’t see mother. I whispered: Dad, how is mother?”

Shaw Danon could see it clearly. Each word Bilu said had made him shivered. It was like that little girl was actually before them.

“Dad did not say anything. But his look was terrifying. Although I was still young, I knew, I knew, that at that time, he was really wanted to kill me, wanted to kill his own daughter! But at the end, he did not. He saved me. Carried me away from this dark cave. Before I left, I peered from dad’s shoulder and saw mother’s dead body was already buried by the three uncles. Only an arm

showed up, but for some reason that arm-that arm-that arm.....”

Bilu suddenly became quiet. Shaw Danon was surprised and looked at her. Bilu was completely pale. Her eyes were closed. Then she fell, seem like passed out. Shaw Danon immediately caught her. She was very cold, almost does not seem like a living person.

His illness was just recovered. His body was weak, so he spent a lot of effort to lay Bilu down on the platform. Watching her pale face, Shaw Danon discovered he was already sweating all over his body.

That night (Actually did not know is it night or morning, Shaw Danon’s instinct thought it was night), Bilu was unconscious, but she kept crying “Mother” “Dad” and things like that. Their position had changed, this time was Shaw Danon’s turn to take care of Bilu.

But it seem like there was a extremely painful past in deep of Bilu’s heart. When she was unconcsious, she kept screaming. Shaw Danon could not do anything about it. At the end, Bilu swung her arm and accidentally grabbed Shaw Danon’s shoulder and cuddled on him, like she got something to rely on. Then she calmed down and quietly slept. But her hands grabbed tightly on Shaw Danon’s clothes. Her nails digged deeply into Shaw Danon’s skin, cause Shaw Danon’s face twisted in pain. But as he watched Bilus’s pale face, he could not leave her, so he beared it, letted her to cuddled on him, sleep peacefully.

Note 1: Esper Anan’s secret

Chapter 46 Escape

The Bilu's past was a very deep wound for her. She had buried it in her heart over the years. At this crisis, she recalled the memory and her mind was overwhelm. And additionally, the food was getting less and less these days, her body was weakened, therefore she passed out.

Shaw Danon was watching the Felkin girl who is still grabbed him tightly. He smiled bitterly. Not long ago, he thought himself was a sick person who just came out from visiting the hell, unexpectedly, this time was Bilu's turn to get sick. The two collapsed one after another, it was really hard not to die in here.

After a while, Shaw Danon was getting sleepy, but he forced himself to straighten up because Bilu was still laying in his arms. Seeing her depressed and painful look, Shaw Danon could not have the heart to leave her.

But sitting like this was not easy. He sat on the platform, one leg hanging in the air while one leg on the ground. His back was slanted and remained straight, but there was nothing behind him for him to lie on. Just after a moment, his body was aching, especially at the place where Bilu grabbed him. Her fingers were powerful, even when she was sleeping, the strength remained strong. It was pain into the marrow. But Shaw Danon was a perseverant person and bore it. If it was someone else, they probably jumped away already.

Even with that, this suffering was not easy. Shaw Danon was complaining in his

heart. But at the end, he did not left. As time passed, the tiredness had caught up to him, then began to fall asleep within the numbed pain and ache.

※ ※ ※

“Ah.....”

Shaw Danon woke up and stretched, then he could feel his entire body was aching. When he sighed, he discovered himself was lying on the platform, and Bilu was gone.

Shaw Danon was surprised. He rose up and looked around, but still couldn't see Bilu. The entire cave was empty and there was no sound. Chill rose in Shaw Danon's heart. It was like he was stunned in the graveyard. He frowned, then began to search for Bilu.

He had searched the Libruis stone chamber and also the treasure room, there was no sign of Bilu. Shaw Danon thought for a moment, then went outside. After a while, he saw Bilu in the stone chamber that worship the two Felkin's evil gods.

Before the kind looking Nether Mother and the hideous looking Heaven Vidyaraja, Bilu kneeled on the ground. Her shoulders were shaking, although she was trying to hold it, but she was still letting quiet sobs.

She was crying.

Shaw Danon was stunned, he could not expect the Felkin girl who was always tough and competitive would secretly crying in front of the statues. He was

rooted on the ground, could not think of what to do. But at the end he walked to her slowly, said uncertainly: “You, um, you, what is it in you.....stopping crying!”

If he remained quiet it would be better, but as she heard his words, the sadness that was trying hard to bear had bursted out. Her voice raised. The sobing became very loud. Crystal like tears were also hanging on her face.

Shaw Danon was stunned. But he was still young, how could he understand girl’s mind. He was immediately threw into flurry, it was like he made Bilu to cry, even his words had turned stammered: “You-you don’t be like that-that.....I-I, no, you, no, I mean I was saying that I.....”

Bilu watched Shaw Danon fussed around with her misty eyes. She shook her head, but the sadness couldn’t be beared. The tears that had held for ten years were all bursted today.

“It was me, it was me who killed mother!” The girl who fell into the painful past, said sadly with wretchedness.

Shaw Danon immediately shook his head, watching her weak and lonely figure, his heart was like seeing the lonely figure of himself many years ago: “No.” He stepped forth, said quietly, gently: “You mother care about you the most. That time you was still small, didn’t know anything, how will you able to harm anyone?”

Bilu choked: “But-but dad always hate me, I know he senior must want me to die, he blame me for mother’s death!”

Shaw Danon said quietly: “No, don’t think too much. Did he not blame you, did he came saved you, for these years, did he treated you badly?”

Bilu’s body shook, her face became more pale. From where Shaw Danon looked at her, it was like pear blossom in the rain, the scenery of sadness was soul touching.

She lifted her head. Behind the tear, the eye sight of her, Shaw Danon did not have the courage to look at it directly. He moved his eyes away.

After a long while.

“You are very nice.” Suddenly, she said quietly.

In the deep of Shaw Danon’s heart, his heart jumped, then he forced himself to calm down. He smiled: “No, I see we are going to die in here together soon, so comfort you before death, it was nothing.”

Bilu stopped crying and wiped away the tears from her eyes, sighed: “Yeah, we are going to die together.” Then she thought of something, asked Shaw Danon: “You and I die in here, do your heart ever regret?”

Shaw Danon was startled. Countless of scenes flashed in his memory. It was like at this moment, he was back to Mount Jadeon, Bamboo Peak, “Of’course I regret.”

He said quietly.

Bilu heard it, her face dimmed, said: “Hmph, in the Holy faction, there are many of them who wish to be able to die with me, but you are not taking a proper measure of yourself!”

Rage rose in Shaw Danon’s heart, but when he looked at Bilu, the rage was disappeared. He sighed, shook his head: Maybe. If only I can be buried on Bamboo Peak, then I will have no regret when I die.”

Bilu’s face darkened, stared at him. After a while of silence, she suddenly spoke: “You are doing this for your Ling’Er Shijie right?”

Shaw Danon jumped, pointed at her, surprised and asked: “How do you-you know?”

Bilu turned her head away, said: “You said this while you were sleep talking at the time you fell ill.”

Shaw Danon was stunned. When he was about to scold her, he remembered they are about to die here. After that, he will never able to see Shijie, even if he becomes a nether spirit after he die, he will still not able to see Bamboo Peak’s sceneries!

But, will Shijie remember me?

When he thought of that, at that moment, his heart was dead. He sighed and hard to pull himself out of the grief, then turned around and left the cave. Bilu on the other hand, was staring his back blankly.

After a while, she slowly turned around, looked at the two statues, and bow

to it: “Mother goddess, may you pity the world, protect him. Vidyaraja majesty, wish you use your sky piercing power, save.....”

Then she voice stopped. She lie on the ground, motionless. The surrounding was silent. But in her mind, there was a raging tide of ocean, and a beam of light shining among the waves. But it could only appear faintly, she tried to catch it, remember it.

She slowly lifted her head, and carefully looked at Heaven Vidyaraja again and again. There was an idea in her heart shouted: “Not right, not right, this statue is missing something.....”

She looked at it over and over again, and held her breath. Finally, her eyes landed on that empty right hand of the statue.

She jumped up, happily called: “Genesis Axe, right, where is Genesis Axe?”

In Felkin legend, Nether Mother was the spirit that watch over the life, and Heaven Vidyaraja was the hideous god that created the world and handling judgement, which was differ from Pangu legend. Heaven Vidyaraja held “Genesis Axe”, so it is a must to have an axe along with the statue. But the statue before her, its right hand was empty. Bilu knew in Felkin, Heaven Vidyaraja was one of the greatest gods, no one will dare to disrespect it. The one that built this Blooddrop Cave was Bloodforger, which was also Felkin. There must be a reason for the axe to be missing.

Shaw Danon returned to the limestone cave and sat on the platform silently. When he was thinking of Bamboo Peak, Bilu rushed with happiness on her face. Seeing he was sitting there, she called: “If you wish to live, then hurry come with me.”

“What?” Shaw Danon was surprised. Bilu rushed into the treasure room like wind. He hesitated for a moment, but he couldn’t resist his desire to live and followed her. Then he heard Bilu cheered. Bilu was struggled to drag out a large steel axe from the pile of trashes. She looked extremely difficult, it seem like this axe was quite heavy.

Shaw Danon ran to her and helped her to hold the large axe. That axe was really heavy. Even two of them together it was still difficult. He asked: “What are you doing?”

Bilu didn’t say much. She said directly: “If you want to live, then help me bring this axe to the statues.”

Shaw Danon gasped, asked with surprise: “What are you-you doing?”

Bilu did not say anything and began to drag the axe. Her body was weakened after few steps and breathing heavily. Shaw Danon shook his head, sighed, but still went to her. The two together, with tremendous effort, they finally dragged the axe to the stone chamber where the statues are. Then Shaw Danon rolled his eyes, unwillingly to hear Bilu said that they need to locate this thing into the evil god’s hand.

Shaw Danon was very suspicious of it. Now he had heard that he need to do thing for the Felkin’s evil god, he lost the will to do it. But Bilu was even more stubborn than him. Seeing her trying hard alone, his heart softened and thought that it was all right to grant her that wish before death. Then he stepped forth and helped.

That axe was very large, and now to actually carry it, its weight was incredibly heavy, plus they had no food for long time. At the end, they finished the impossible mission and located the axe into Heaven Vidyaraja's right hand, and then Shaw Danon sat on the ground, breathing heavily: "You, *gasp*, you, if you can't find the exit, *gasp*, originally we could live for three days, now we only get three hours left."

Bilu was also gasping for air, but the excitement in her eyes could not be hidden. After a little resting, Bilu returned to the statue, carefully observed for a while. After the large axe was added into Vidyaraja statue's hand, it looked much more mighty. Then she respectfully saluted to the Heaven Vidyaraja, she said: "Vidyaraja majesty, please forgive disciple's rude action."

Then, she grabbed the large axe and shook it. Nothing happened. That large axe was putted into the hand by her, if there is something, it should already happened. Shaw Danon sat on the ground, shook his head as he watched Bilu's strange action.

Bilu frowned, murmured: "Why is that, it should be here....."

She was in hurry and putted more power into her arm, so as she moved the large axe, Heaven Vidyaraja's right hand was also moved. Suddenly, there was a heavy noise sounded in the cave.

Shaw Danon hopped up, Bilu was beamed with joy. They looked at each other. Shaw Danon ran to Bilu and help raised the giant axe. Heaven Vidyaraja's lowered right hand was raised to mid-air. After a moment, a large ear deafing boom roared in the cave.

They were surprised, it was like thunder roaring next to their ears. They quickly covered their ears. After a while, their ears were still ringing, but behind the statues, the giant, hard stone wall slid to the sides, showed a path. There was a stone stair went upward into the unknown darkness.

Then, the stone chamber was fiercely shaking. The rocks were falling from the above. They did not say anything and ran into the stone stair at the same time, entered the darkness.

Actually at eight hundreds years ago, when the Felkin Bloodforger built this Blooddrop Cave, they had considered if they are weakened and was attacked by enemy, therefore they built a path secretly inside the mountain. If enemy attack, they will use this route to escape, after a moment the entire Blooddrop Cave will be collapsed, bury the enemy and countless secrets of Bloodforger together.

Shaw Danon and Bilu ran as fast as they could. The loud noise kept on coming from behind, stones scattered in the air. If they run a little slow, they will probably die. They needed to bring out their last bit of strength and ran forward. There was only darkness in front of them. In this narrow and dark secret passage, they couldn't count how many times they had fell on the ground, hitted on the wall. They could only hear the loud noising roaring and the stones scattering. It was like the entire Kongsang mountain was in rage. But finally with the desire to survive, they saw the light appeared in front of them.

The secret passage's entrance located under a cliff west of the mountain. This place was heavily wooded and very well hidden, no wonder no one ever find it for eight hundreds years. Probably even the Bloodforger today did not even know about this place.

Shaw Danon and Bilu stumblingly rushed out and almost at the moment when

they landed on the ground, after a loud “boom” noise, thousands pounds of stones fell, stirred up a cloud of dust and blocked the entrance tightly. From now on, no one will ever able to see the secret inside the mountain.

※ ※ ※

Lying on the ground, Shaw Danon was breathing heavily. His hand clutched the wetting green grass. This experience of running from the edge of death was really losing one’s breath. After a while, his mind slowly relaxed. He lifted his head , looked to the side and saw Bilu was next to her. Her white face had thin layer of dust, like she had felt Shaw Danon’s eyes, she turned and looked at him.

The happiness after escape from the misfortune slowly appeared on their faces. Bilu’s lips moved, there was water flowing in her eyes, misty but like crystal. She cheered with sob. A feeling of escaped from infinitely large amount of pressure and not think of other things. Only feel that the sky is very blue, mountain is very high. Waves of soft wind, green covered mountain, green figure whirling, the trees spring, everywhere of this world was filled with soul touching beautiful sceneries.

“We-we lived!” She cheered to the green mountain and blue sky.

Shaw Danon laughed loudly next to her, watching her opened her arms and shined the most beautiful smile of the world.

Within the flicking sound, fire swallowed the firewood, raised wave of soft smoke. Bilu sat next to the fire, watching Shaw Danon cleaned a hare that he just caught, and roasted it above the fire with a thick tree branch stucked through. As the fire grilling, the hare gradually turned to golden yellow. The

grease formed into drops and fell off.

In the woods, such delicious smell spreaded far and wide in the air. Since Bilu was already hungry due to the cave, she couldn't hold her slobbering. But Shaw Danon was not in a hurry. He took a look, then putted his hand on his waist as usual, he suddenly startled, then beamed with joy.

Bilu asked: "What?"

Shaw Danon happily took out a small bag at his waist, smiled: "Can not imagine that the foods are lost, but this thing is still here. I did not notice it on the past few days."

Bilu looked toward at the small bag. Shaw Danon carefully opened the bag. There were several little bottles. She was curious and took them out, smelled them. She was stunned, then looked at Shaw Danon, almost couldn't say anything: "These-these are salt and condiment....."

Shaw Danon was filled with smile, said: 'Yeah, I bought those with me when I left the mountain, fear if we need to camp at outside, I can make something good. I can not expect they really become useful today.'

Bilu looked at Shaw Danon from top to bottom, she couldn't say anything, but watching him carefully shed some of the spice or salt on the rabbit, then slowly turned the rabbit with stick. The delicious smell in the air was getting heavier. She had never seen a Righteous cultivator would keep condiment with them. He looked more like a cook rather than a famous faction's disciple.

After a while, Shaw Danon leaned forth and took a sniff, then happily said: “Okay, you can eat now.”

Bilu was already getting impatient from the waiting. The delicious smell was like entered into every pores of her body. After a sniff, her body was like floating and became very light. As for her mouth, there was not much need to describe it. If not because she was carefulling hiding it, probably even the rumbling of her stomach could be hear by that kid.

When she heard Shaw Danon finally gave mercy and said it was done, with the golden, delicious rabbit in front of her, her saliva almost fell out. She stretched out her hand, but she was uncareful. When she touched it, she scream “Ah!”, then took her hand back. She was burned.

Shaw Danon smelled: “Don’t rush!” Then he moved away the fire with the tree stick, then waited for the grease to fall off. When the rabbit got cooler, he carefully teared off a rabbit leg, handed to Bilu, smiled: “Here.”

Bilu immediately held out her hand and took the rabbit. Just when she opened her mouth, she saw Shaw Danon’s kind smile, The sunlight shined through the leave and landed on his face, it was hearty.

Her face suddenly blushed, turned away with her back facing Shaw Danon, then she began to eat. Shaw Danon startled, but did not mind it. He was also starving, so he teared off an other rabbit leg and munched on it.

When he was eating, he suddenly saw Bilu already turned back and looked at him. He asked: “What is it, right, is it delicious?”

There was a faint redness on Bilu's face. The soft wind from the woods gently fluttered her soft hair, touched her white face.

"Very delicious, er....."

Shaw Danon: "What is it?"

Bilu: ".....I finished."

Her face had a little bit of gentle, a little bit of embarrassment. Shaw Danon's mouth opened, he was enchanted.

Bilu lowered her head. There was a sudden silent between them. After a while, Shaw Danon suddenly woke up: "Ah!"

His forehead was sweating, his tongue was tied, unable to make a sentence: "I-I didn't see, no, you see I.....ah, no, ah, here."

Then he closed his eyes and handed his rabbit leg to her, but he did not have the courage to open his eyes.

But after a long while, Bilu still made no movement. Shaw Danon summoned his courage, slowly opened his eyes. Bilu was looking at him, her face was like smiling, her eyes were gentle. With a gentle and lovely expressions, she said quietly, with a little bit of smile: "Are you giving me this to eat?"

Shaw Danon was confused and looked toward to his hand. His face

immediately turned all red, and there was no place for him to hide his face. His right hand had handed Bilu his half eaten rabbit leg. The rest of the rabbit was in his left hand next to him.

“No-no-no.....” Shaw Danon was very embarrassed. He swiftly took back his rabbit leg, then embarrassingly handed her the rest of the rabbit, his mouth was murmuring: “I was-was.....”

“I know.” Bilu took the rabbit, then teared off part of the flesh, putted into her mouth, softly chewing, “Very delicious, the most delicious thing I have ever eaten in my life is this rabbit you roasted.”

Shaw Danon’s heart jumped. Bilu’s pretty and graceful face said with smile and solemn. His heart swung, then not look at her anymore and putted all his attention on eating the remaining rabbit leg.

That rabbit was soon eliminated completely by the two hungry people. Eating the first meal since the day of the cave was really a great thing. Bilu found a stream. The two took a wash, then they began to get tire. Their minds were very depressed in the cave and now they had got away from the edge of the death, they could finally relaxed, and the tirenes also caught up to them.

Bilu was first to collaspe and slept on a small green lawn next to the stream. Shaw Danon also felt exhausted and lay next to her. The sunlight gently landed on them. Shaw Danon turned and looked at Bilu. After washing, although Bilu’s hair was still a little messy, but her face had returned back to thin snowy white. She was closing her eyes, quietly lying there. Soft wind came and fluttered her hair. Under the sunlight, it beamed with gentle glow.

Suddenly, when Bilu was dreaming, it was like she noticed something. She

raised her eyebrows, and her right hand grabbed Shaw Danon and lay on his side like it was her habit. On her lips, there was a soft smile. Then she slept peacefully.

Shaw Danon startled, but looking at Bilu's languish but still beautiful face, he did not have the courage to remove her hand, so he lay still there. Slowly, the sleepiness caught up to him. He closed his eyes and forgot about it like it was very normal, then he fell asleep.

The wind of the woods was still softly whistling, whistled pass the branches, whistled pass the leave, whistled pass the quietly flowing stream and raised small ripple, finally blew across the two young people.

Just a side note....don't make any comment about they are eating rabbit please....

Chapter 47 Scholar A

Shaw Danon woke up, but the sky was dark. They had probably slept for five or six hours (In China, one hour actually equal to two hours, there are total twelve hours, each hours was named after the twelve Zodiacs). Bilu was still hadn't wake up. Both of her hands grabbed his clothes tightly. She looked really like a terrified little child, who could imagine she is actually a important person within Felkin!

Shaw Danon putted his hand under his head, listening the woods danced in the wind. Suddenly, he thought of Mount Jadeon Bamboo Peak, does the bamboo forest also make this kind of sound, too?

I was missing in the Cave of Fangs these days. This news probably already bought back to Bamboo Peak. Will Ling'Er Shijie feel sad after she hear this? But, if I suddenly appear before her, surely she will be happy, and surely, she will hold my hand, very excited, laughed: Stinking brat, I know you can not die so easily!

On his face, under the dark night, a smile appeared. His eyes were so bright even in the night. But he did not notice, next to him, there was an other pair of bright eyes, watching him.



It was morning again. The pleasant song of the birds ringing among the mountains.

Shaw Danon went to the stream, then used his hands held up the water and splash on his face. The coolness feeling pass through into his heart. He took a look at his left arm, took off the bandage, the broken bone was almost recovered. He happily putted the fire stick at his waist, then exercise the left arm, there was no problem.

“Your arm recovered?” Bilu came out from behind, looked at him, then kneeled down and washed her face with the water.

“Yeah.” Shaw Danon happily said, “There is no problem, it is not swell nor hurt.”

Bilu used her sleeve to softly wipe away the water from her face, said: “But don’t do too much, it is better to rest for longer period.”

“Understood.” Shaw Danon answered casually, then he turned to Bilu, hesitated for a moment, then said: “Miss Bilu, we are fortunate enough to escape from the mountain alive, you and I may-may called friend, but we are still walking on different paths, we shall part here today.”

Bilu kneeled next to the water, did not rise up, but her body shook. Shaw Danon could not see her face, after a while, he heard she said in a lowered voice: “Oh, different paths?”

Shaw Danon nodded: “Yes, I am Righteous and you are Felkins. Since young, my elder taught me Good and Evil can not coexist. Next time we meet, we are probably not friend but enemy. You saved me inside the mountain, I really appreciate it. This gratitude, in future if fate allow, I will repay you.”

Bilu stared at the blurry reflection on the clear water, quietly murmured: “Repay me?”

Shaw Danon answered: “Yes, our favor and hatred shall be view separately. If not because you saved me, I will never survived. In future, if there is anything need me, I will help.” Then he suddenly thought it was inappropriate, so he quickly added: “But you can not make me do things that betray my faction and morality.”

Bilu suddenly rose up, turned to him and said: “I can see that you have talent. What about join our Holy faction. I will recommend you to father. He senior always like talented people. He will put you in high position, better than being a nameless cook at Bamboo Peak.”

Shaw Danon’s face dimmed, said: “Miss Bilu, don’t be silly. I am from the Righteous and will never fall into Felkin even threaten by death. From what I think, being a little cook at Bamboo Peak is far better than being powerful in Felkin.”

Bilu showed a cold smile, her tone had turned biting and cold: “Righteous? The sins that your Righteous people did are no less than us the Felkin. During that battle between Good and Evil, weren’t your celestial ancestors killed every they saw, even the old and young!”

“Nonsense!” Anger rose in Shaw Danon, “Those deeds are what you Felkin

did. Do you think I don't know. You people murdered others lawlessly, destroying lives.....”

Bilu said angrily: “Did you saw that happen with your own eyes? Those are what your elders told you. For their own selfish sake, how would they tell you the truth?”

Shaw Danon laughed coldly: “And did yourself saw that with your own eyes? You are telling me Righteous are evil, Felkin are good, but isn't that also your elder's pretty words to dress for your ancestors!”

Bilu startled, couldn't say anything. Shaw Danon looked at her, remembered the days when they went through the difficult time together, his heart softened, lowered his voice, said softly: “Miss Bilu, no matter what they did, let's not bother with it. But our Jadeon has strict rules, forbidden disciples to contact Felkins. I am Jadeon, I can not disobey. Today we say farewell here. When fate allow us to meet again, if you can repent, discard the dark and join the justice, I Shaw Danon will use my life to ensure that you can join the Righteous.....” He spoke plausibly, but then he paused, Bilu laughed coldly with disdain:

“Your trash Righteous, I will not go there even if you invite me, and tell me to discard the dark and join the justice. I gave you a bright path and you refuse, then you go be your Righteous. In future if we meet again, I will be the first to take your head.”

Shaw Danon was surprised by speed of how that woman changed her attitude was faster than flipping a book. But he had no heart to argue, especially to Bilu, he always felt he owe her. He saluted, said: “Take care.” Then he turned, walked away without looking back.

Bilu watching him walk away without even turning his head back once. After he disappeared in the woods, all that sudden, her heart had become empty, like she had lost something important. Her spirit was drained, and she slowly sat down. Her eyes unwittingly landed on the ashes from Shaw Danon's roast rabbit last night. She was rooted on the ground, unknowingly, tears came out.

She was sitting there like this, staring at the ashes, until she suddenly discovered the pleasant singing of birds in the woods had become silent. It was like they felt strong hatred smell and caused them unable to make sound.

Then, she saw a shadow, slowly came out behind her and enveloped her.

Although it was still morning, the sky had turned dark.

Bilu quickly turned her head, stared at the person who was standing behind her. After a moment, she cried sadly: "Dad!....." And fall into that person's arms.

That dark figure was also startled, did not expect Bilu would have such reaction. But he was glad to see his daughter escaped from the misfortune, this happiness could not hide.

※ ※ ※

Shaw Danon finally left Kongsang Mountain after a day of walking in the woods. If he fly, he can leave much faster. But because he worried about the wound of his left arm, he was willing to walk instead. But Kongsang Mountain

sparsely populated, he couldn't see anyone on his way.

After one night of sleeping in open, Shaw Danon entered the main road. The road was wide and there were more people. He asked the traveler about the direction, then began walking to north.

That day at noon was hot, Shaw Danon had traveled for the whole day, his mouth was quite thirsty. He saw there was a small tea stall located the tree's shadow. There were already five to six people sitting. He went there and brought a cup of tea, and took a rest.

The tea of the small tea stall helped him cool down and quench his thirst. Shaw Danon felt relaxed after drinking a cup of tea. It felt like the day wasn't that hot anymore. He was thinking, since the injury of his arm almost recovered, at afternoon, he should find a secluded place and begin to fly. That way will be faster, and he will see his master sooner.

While he was thinking, he surely knew he can soon see his Shijie Hidi again, his heart burned with excitement. Then, he heard a moderate voice came from the road side: "Keeper, serve me a cup of tea please."

The rare soft wind of noon flew by, swinging the tree's branches, letting the sunlight scattered on the ground. The fifty years old looking shop keeper answered and poured the tea. Shaw Danon unwittingly turned his eyes, then he couldn't move it back.

It was a middle aged scholar, with thin eyebrows and square face. His eyebrows were cultured, but his eyes were bright and his forehead was plump, there was might within the elegance. He wore a scholar robe. A light purple jade ornament on his waist, exquisitely carved, with soft auspicious energy. This

ornament was not a common item.

Shaw Danon stared at him for a while, then discovered he was attracted this middle aged scholar's temperament. Once he entered the stall, including Shaw Danon himself, other customers turned into silent, and were suppressed by the might of this person.

Shaw Danon took back his eyes. His heart was amazed, and very admiring this middle aged scholar's temperament. Although this person was not handsome, the temperament coming from the inside was uncommon.

The scholar entered the tea stall and took over the tea from the keeper, then sat down, slowly began to taste the tea. The customers that were talking now turned to silent. In the tea stall, the sudden silent was a little awkward. Only that middle aged scholar was calm and collected, did not notice anything, drinking tea and resting alone.

After a while, other customers left one by one after resting enough or finished the tea. The keeper came and cleaned up. Under the tree, only Shaw Danon and the middle aged scholar remain.

Shaw Danon didn't feel uncomfortable, but after sitting a while, he felt that he had rested enough. When he was about to pay the money and leave, suddenly he heard a voice called behind him:

"Young mister."

Shaw Danon startled. The voice was gentle and familiar. He turned and saw the scholar was smiling at him kindly. Shaw Danon asked: "Sir, are you calling

me?”

The scholar nodded with a smile: “Correct.” Then he rose up, slowly walking to him. Shaw Danon also rose up, when he came close, he folded his hands: “What can I do for you sir?”

The middle aged scholar examined Shaw Danon, said: “Nothing, just a bit bored from the trip, and quite interested in young mister, so come by and have a chat. I hope young mister doesn’t mind”

Shaw Danon quickly shook his head: “No, please sit down sir.”

The scholar nodded with a smile, said: “Here, young mister please sit also.”

They sat down, the scholar looked at Shaw Danon, said: “May I ask, what is young mister’s honorable name?”

Shaw Danon grew up at Grasstemple Village, then was adopted by Jadeon. Beside Mount Jadeon Bamboo Peak’s disciples, he nearly never talked to outsider. Of course, the days he was trapped in the Forsaken Abyss with Bilu didn’t count. When he talked to the scholar, he respected him without reason. He respectfully replied: “It is Shaw Danon, what is mister’s name?”

That scholar mumbled: “Shaw Danon,” then nodded, smiled, “My surname is Wan, plain name Ren Wang.”

“Wan Ren Wang!” Shaw Danon spoke it in his heart. This name was simple, but it had a heroic type of feeling. Shaw Danon glanced at him. Wan Ren Wang’s face was gentle, but prestige between his eyebrows were like

something he born with. With his name, there was a meaning of leadership (Wan Ren Wang in Chinese is Thousands people forward).

Wan Ren Wang examined Shaw Danon, then smiled: “Forgive me for asking, is mister Zhang a cultivator?”

Shaw Danon was surprised. When he, Kevern and others left the mountain, they had changed their Jadeon clothes into normal clothes. They looked no different than normal people. How did that middle aged man see through it.

When Shaw Danon wanted to ask how he know it, that middle aged man pointed to the north, smiled: “Mister Zhang, are you belong to largest righteous faction Jadeon?”

Shaw Danon was more surprised, he rose up, looked at Wan Ren Wang, asked: “Mister Wan, how do you-you know?”

Wan Ren Wang waved his hand with a smile: “Sit sit.”

After Shaw Danon slowly sat down, Wan Ren Wang smiled: “I noticed young mister Zhang is filled with spirit, having no sign of tireness. Though you may look young, but far superior than many adults. Today world, cultivation becomes popular, sir must be a highly cultivated person.”

Shaw Danon thank modestly, but then asked: “As for my faction, how does mister find out?”

Wan Ren Wang smiled: “Nothing really, I see young mister has traveled a long way, keep looking at the north, eyes filled with thought, seem like in a hurry to return. And at north of here, there is a famous faction, Jadeon. It was just a wild guess, caused young mister Zhang laughed at me.”

Shaw Danon quickly said: “No, no, sir has such great insight. You and I never met before, but able to see through it clearly. I admire.” This came out from his true heart.

Wan Ren Wang gave a faint smile: “Jadeon is the most famous cultivation faction for ages. Their deep mytical magic admired by the world. Young mister can join such famous faction at this young age, your future is bright and beyond measure!”

When Shaw Danon heard the word “beyong measure”, it reminded him of Kevern from Dragon Head Peak, and then image of Baye flashed. He shook his head: “Sir overpraised me, Jadeon has many hidden talented disciples, I am just a piece of rotten wood, useless.”

Wan Ren Wang startled, then laughed: “Can not expect young mister Zhang like to tell joke.”

Shaw Danon was not willing to argue with him on this topic, he said: “Mister Wan is seem like traveling to somewhere, may I ask where?”

Wan Ren Wang stood up, both hands putted behind him, looked at the sky said: “The large world is boundless, I travel around the world, mountains or ancient swamps, I go anywhere.”

“Ah!” Shaw Danon exclaimed: “I see.”

Wan Ren Wang turned around and glance at Shaw Danon, a strange smile appeared on his face, said: “Since young mister Zhang is Jadeon, you must be highly cultivated.”

Shaw Danon quickly shook his head: “No, no, I am just an useless person in Jadeon, no where near highly cultivated.”

Wan Ren Wang smiled a little: “Young mister Zhang is too polite. I have a presumptuous request, wish young mister Zhang can help.”

Shaw Danon startled, said: “Mister Wan, please say it.”

Wan Ren Wang said: “I admire cultivators since young, but unfortunately fate does not allow me to join. I often dream to see the cultivators using esper to fly up above the nine skies. For decades, I wished to see a cultivator’s esper. Young mister Zhang is a famous faction’s disciple, may you help me to realize my wish?” Then, he bend over and gave a bow.

Shaw Danon was stunned. Seeing Wan Ren Wang bowed to him, he was more flustered. He quickly held him. It was very difficult for him, he hesitated for a moment and still saw Wan Ren Wang expectantly looking at him. He sighed: “Mister Wan please don’t laugh at me, it is not that I don’t want to show it to mister Wan, it is just-just the esper itself looks bad. I am afraid.....”

Wan Ren Wang immediately said: “There is no such thing a cultivator’s esper looks bad.”

Shaw Danon's face blushed a little, he still couldn't put away the embarrassment. He took out the fire stick from his waist, then handed to him. Seeing what he handed to him, there was surprise flashed in Wan Ren Wang's eyes, then it disappeared, he solemnly took the fire stick.

Shaw Danon noticed his surprisement, he smiled bitterly: "I am not just saying you, even people from my faction often laugh at me for that." But then Shaw Danon was surprised that himself was a little weird today. He seem like willing to tell anything to a stranger that he never met.

Wan Ren Wang did not noticed Shaw Danon. His eyes were on the fire stick, at first, his face was solemn but his eyes were casual. Then, he saw something, not only his face darkened, his eyes were staring at the ugly black stick.

Shaw Danon felt Wan Ren Wang had deep curiosity. He carefully examined the fire stick, his right hand held it while his left hand softly stroking and hitting the stick with five of his long fingers, very careful. Shaw Danon couldn't help but asked: "Mister Wan, may I ask what's wrong?"

Wan Ren Wang seem awaken from dream. Hesitated for a moment, he handed the fire stick back to Shaw Danon, said: "Young mister Zhang, because I admire cultivation, I had read some books about it. There is something that need to ask young mister Zhang."

Shaw Danon said: "Please ask."

Wan Ren Wang glanced at the fire stick, said: "Young mister Zhang, on this esper, does it contain your blood?"

Shaw Danon was surprised, the terrible scene at the Bamboo Peak's ancient valley flashed in his mind. He immediately rose up, pointed at Wan Ren Wang: "What did you-you said?"

Wan Ren Wang looked at Shaw Danon, slowly said: "Young mister Zhang, is this esper a combination of two objects?"

One of the deepest secrets of Shaw Danon's heart was pointed out by this person. This surprise was not easy. He could only felt his brain was ringing, couldn't say anything.

Wan Ren Wang noticed Shaw Danon's stunned expression, he knew his guess was correct. He lowered his head, seem like remembered something, he sighed: "You do not know this right. The orb on this stick was once a holy object of Felkin."

Shaw Danon became more terrified, his breath almost stopped. But there was a voice in his heart, laughed coldly: "You knew this already, you knew this already. The evil surge of energy from this stick, of'course it is evil object of Felkin."

"What did you-you said?" Shaw Danon was taking heavy breath, staring at him.

"This orb was the relict of Felkin founder Elder Blackheart eight hundreds years ago." Wan Ren Wang's words was like nail, each were nailed on Shaw Danon's heart deeply, "It is called 'Sinister Orb'."

Shaw Danon was stunned. He held his breath. Although there were thousands of ideas raging in his mind, but there was one image that remain there still. The skeleton in the cave inside Kongsang Mountain!

Wan Ren Wang looked at his shocked face, paused for a moment, then lightly said: “Young mister Zhang, you now know where this orb came from. Would you also like to learn the history of this black stick?”

Shaw Danon was shocked, couldn't said anything but to stare at Wan Ren Wang.

Chapter 48 Small Town

Shaw Danon deeply looked at the middle aged scholar named “Wan Ren Wang”. Bad feeling rose in his heart, but in his heart, there was an other energy, caused him to ask: “Mister please tell me.”

Wan Ren Wang looked at him with deep meaning, slowly said: “The vicious enery of this staff is very dense. Its surface is black and the energy is restrained. If normal person get near, before getting within three yards, the blood of the entire body will forced to rush into the heart by the evil energy and kill the person.”

Shaw Danon’s heart moved, said: “Correct, when I met this thing, I felt my body was heavy, wanted to vomit, and almost fainted.”

Wan Ren Wang softly sighed: “Correct, that’s right.” Then he frowned, sighed quietly, “You did not die, that’s weird.”

Shaw Danon did not hear him clearly, asked: “What?”

Wan Ren Wang smiled, did not answer him, he pointed to fire stick: “This short black stick is an extremely wild object, name “Death Wand”, but it does

not belong to Felkin. It was not known by the world for thousands years, only some ancient books had recorded it. Young mister Zhang is very fortunately to have the two most precious objects of the world.”

“Death Wand!” Shaw Danon was stunned, mumbled.

“Correct.” Wan Ren Wang returned to normal, said, “In ancient book <<Ten Volumes of Rare Treasures>>, strange metal from the sky, landed in Nine Nethers, crafted with nether ghost fire and nether spirit’s soul. Thousand years it was smelted into metal; thousand years it formed a shape; thousand years it absorbed the spirits of the ghost; thousand years obtained the ability to suck out soul. Such wild object is not a normal person can handle, but can not expect young mister Zhang.....”

“Dong.....” A clear sound. The black fire stick fell out from Shaw Danon’s hand, landed on the ground. Shaw Danon’s limbs were weakened. He felt his chest was tightened, and fell back several steps. He stared at the fire stick that had stayed with him for these years, he couldn’t say anything.

Wan Ren Wang noticed his shocked look, a cold smile flashed across his face: “Young mister Zhang, what is up to you?”

Shaw Danon shook his head hard, even his words seem pained him, he murmured: “Why-why will this happen? I am adopted under Jadeon, why I will use such evil object?” Then he remembered when he was in Forsaken Abyss, no wonder why the nether spirits would fear his fire stick, most likely due to “Death Wand”.

Wan Ren Wang saw his reaction, realized he grew up in Jadeon and never see the world before. Now he is facing such great change, he doesn’t know what to

do. But Wan Ren Wang had no intention to comfort him, he said: “Evil object? What is an evil object to you?”

Shaw Danon was a bit distracted, he pointed at the fire stick woodenly, said: “This-this thing had harmed many lives, and is it still not a evil object?”

Wan Ren Wang laughed coldly: “So if it killed a lot of people, then it is evil?”

Shaw Danon answered without thinking: “Yes.”

Wan Ren Wang’s face was filled with disdain, the prestige between his eyebrows began to show, he look totally like a different person. But Shaw Danon’s mind was in chaos, didn’t notice it. Wan Ren Wang continued: “Then may I ask mister, male pigs and female pigs, black pigs and white pigs, are they all pigs?”

Shaw Danon did not expect Wan Ren Wang would say such. He was startled, then said: “Of’course.”

And Wan Ren Wang said: “Then lions and goats, tigers and rabbits, killing each other, are they lifes also? Are the different between good and evil?”

Shaw Danon could feel where Wan Ren Wang is going, but he still did not understand, so he could only say: “Yes.”

Wan Ren Wang snorted: “Then ask mister again, your so called Good and Evil, are they all human?”

Shaw Danon startled, he wanted to refute, but the words did not come out, he could only say again: “Yes.”

Wan Ren Wang’s face was solemn, looking at him deeply, until Shaw Danon felt creepy, then he slowly said: “Young mister Zhang, your Jadeon has a world famous esper that is well known for ages—Ancient Sword Regenesi s. Do you know about it?”

Shaw Danon’s emotion was completely controlled by this Wan Ren Wang, he nodded unwillingly: “Yes.”

Wan Ren Wang’s face darkened, said harshly: “Then do you know, Regenesi s had killed how many livings, destroyed how many lifes during the Good and Evil and battle thousand years ago? If comparing all espers of the world, the one that actually killed the most people, had the most evil energy, will probably be your deity like Ancient Sword Regenesi s!”

Huge bang exploded in Shaw Danon’s head. He took a step back, it was like he was punched by someone at the face. He felt, in the deep of this heart, there was something, something holy that could not violate, after a soft and clear echo, the first crack appeared.

※ ※ ※

The sunlight shining down through the thick leaves of the lare tree, broken down in to pieces of light, landed on the ground. As the leaves swinging along the wind, the pieces of sunlight on the ground jumped like naughty children.

Sometimes the light will land on the young man.

Shaw Danon kneeled on the ground, looking at the fire stick laying on the ground quietly. In the shadow, it appeared to be more ugly than ever. What Wan Ren Wang have said was pretty much the same as what Bilu said that day at Kongsang Mountain. But coming from his mouth, it gave a very different feeling for Shaw Danon. Inside of Shaw Danon's heart, it was like there was a shadow, quietly laughing cruelly: He is right, he is right.

Wan Ren Wang was calmly sitting there, drinking the tea that had already turned cold. At far away, the tea stall keeper looked at them, then moved his eyes away, completely not knowing the raging ocean of anger in this young man's heart!

After a long while, Shaw Danon calmed himself from the worry, struggle, and pain. He slowly picked up the fire stick, stood up and facing Wan Ren Wang, coldly said: "Who are you exactly?"

Wan Ren Wang returned to his casual tone, the prestige between his eyebrows was gone. He smiled faintly: "Me? I am Wan Ren Wang, just a normal mortal person who travel around the world."

Shaw Danon glared at him, holding his fire stick tightly, said: "How can a normal mortal person know so much? Are you a heretic from Felkin?"

Wan Ren Wang did not react, only looking at him, said lightly: "Is the difference between Good and Evil mean a lot to you?"

Shaw Danon took a deep breath, said heavily: "Yes!"

Wan Ren Wang suddenly gave a cold laugh: “Then why are you still using the Felkin’s evil object.”

Shaw Danon’s body trembled, but his face was determined, said: “This fire stick perhaps is an evil item, but I use this to destroy the evils, it is righteous, I have no guilt in my heart, just like what you said about our Ancient Sword Regenesi.”

Wan Ren Wang startled, then slowly rose up, examined Shaw Danon with his eyes, it was like he met a complete new person. Smile appeared on his lips: “You can think this far, rare, rare. With just this intention, you are far better than your Jadeon, no, most people in the world!”

Shaw Danon ignored him, but glared at him said: “Who the hell are you?”

Wan Ren Wang did not answer, but said: “You headed to the north, are you returning to Mount Jadeon?”

Shaw Danon startled a little, said: “What do you mean?”

Wan Ren Wang smiled: “You don’t know it yet do you? The Felkin has restored power, expanding their forces. Recently they had gathered at Billows Mountain of East Sea. Your Jadeon sent many people there and meeting with other factions. Probably there will be a huge battle soon. Why don’t you go and have a look?”

Shaw Danon was stunned, said: “Really?” But as he raised his head, saying:

“This doesn’t concern me, I ask you again.....” He stopped before he could finish, just a second of work, Wan Ren Wang had already disappeared like a ghost. Even the tea stall keeper left no trace behind. Only thing left was a lonely and empty tea stall and Shaw Danon.

Shaw Danon looked around him blankly, although he was under the sun, he could feel wave of freezing chill.

After a while of standing, he moved his feet, left the large tree and headed to east.

A short while after Shaw Danon left, three people came out from behind the large tree. The first person was Wan Ren Wang, next was the tea stall keeper, and other person, if Shaw Danon see her, he must be surprised, was the Felkin girl—Bilu.

Wan Ren Wang looked at the east, nodded, and showed a smile: “This young man has a unbending determination, very solid mind, quite similar to me when I was young.”

The tea stall keeper was not the old looking man anymore, his eyes were bright and fierce. He said: “Archlord, he has our Felkin treasure, why don’t we make him stay?”

Wan Ren Wang seem very used to be called “Archlord”, he said feelinglessly: “For some reason, the young man had used his own blood and bloodsmelted the Sinister Orb and the Death Wand. Now except this young man, no one can use this esper, it is useless if we just rob it from him.”

Bilu snorted: “I noticed that the stick is so weird at Forsaken Abyss that day, so it has such great background.”

Wan Ren Wang turned to Bilu, his face was very gentle, he said: “Bilu, what do you think of that young man?”

Bilu’s face blushed, she scolded: “Dad, today daughter brought you here is to see what you think of him!”

Wan Ren Wang laughed: “This youngster is not bad. It is just he is poisoned by Jadeon too deep from childhood. To get him into our Holy faction, with his stubborn nature, it is going to be extremely difficult.”

Bilu’s face darkened, let out a sigh.

Wan Ren Wang held his hand out, patted his daughter’s hair softly, smiled: “But he could untie the knot in your heart that had troubled you for years, allow us to reconcile. We need to return this gratitude.”

Bilu happily asked: “Dad, you have a plan?”

Wan Ren Wang looked at the sky, a wave of prestige slowly came out, showed that he was a person who hold huge power, but in his eyes, there was a little grief; he said slowly: “To change a person’s nature, it is difficult, but doesn’t mean it is impossible.”

Bilu was very delighted. Wan Ren Wang turned around, looked at her and smiled. This was no different than a father seeing his daughter happy. Bilu smiled to her father, but the person next to them frowned, whispered to Wan

Ren Wang: “Archlord, this is only a nameless brat of Jadeon, does he really worth for us to spend so much effort on him?”

Wan Ren Wang shook his head: “That young man has the most dangerous esper that the world never have seen before. He can easily control it. In future, he will not be useless. If we can have such talent, he will be a great help for my ambition, not to mention he already helped me and my daughter.”

Bilu nodded: “I already told him that day, if he can enter our Holy faction, dad must be value him. He just doesn’t listen.”

Wan Ren Wang chuckled: “How will he listen? With his nature, and grew up in Jadeon, he hate our Holy faction deeply. However, heh heh, Sinister Orb and Death Wand are the most dangous objects, although strangely they become bloodsmelted esper, the evil energy is restrained, not showing. But carrying the two evil objects, how can there be no effect? I can predict, since this young man’s cultivation isn’t deep and stay with the dangous item all day, as time pass, he will be taken over by the aggressive energy. His nature will change greatly and thirst for blood. At that time, the Righteous will not let him alive, and we only need to do a little trick, he will have no choice but to join our Holy faction.” Then he laughed.

Bilu was startled, she couldn’t tell is she was happy or worry. She couldn’t say anything but to look at the east blankly. Under the bright sun of noon, on the road, the young man’s figure was already gone.

※ ※ ※

Shaw Danon left the tea stall and headed to the east by himself.

It was right at noon, the sun shone on the earth. Passed the Kongsang Mountain, it was fields of fertilized ground. Wide and low popularation. There was only an old road, with many people of the past and now had stepped on, extend directly through the open plain.

Shaw Danon did not fly. He quietly walking on the road alone. The conversation between him and Wan Ren Wang had gave him a great crush. Although his tone was righteous and determine when he was facing Wan Ren Wang, at this moment, when he was alone, he asked himself: am I really right?

The black fire strick lie peacefully at his waist. Faintly, coolness came from the stick.

Walking, walking, walking.....

Under the sky, above the road, a burdened heart young man suddenly stopped, looked at the sky.

The sky was clear blue, so high that could not be reached.

Shaw Danon looked at it blankly, his lips moved a little, eyebrows frowned together, watching the sky, like he was asking someone's heart softly:

“A person living in the world, what it is actually for?”

※ ※ ※

On the way, Shaw Danon endured the hardships of the travel. When he was

hungry, he caught some birds or hares. When he was tired, he slept under the tree of that night. Because he kept doing the bamboo homework, his body was quite strong, so he did not feel difficult.

If he use his fire stick and fly, it will be a lot faster. But Shaw Danon had no intend to do so. His mind was annoyed, there was always something bothering in his heart. So he rather to slowly walk, wished to clear the question in his mind.

Since mentioned it, the problem Shaw Danon has right now is how to let this young man to understand. Even if he blow up his mind, he still feel his clan's teaching is sacred. It is suppose to be like that, it will never be wrong; but as he think about Wan Ren Wang's word, it has sense and reason in it. This kept bothering him.

If it was other people, his sixth Shixiong Amandla for example, he will probably just laughed and throw that idea away. He is belong to Jadeon, of'course trust Jadeon. If it is his Da Shixiong Xavion, with his serious nature, he will never trust the word coming from the Evil's mouth. He won't even think about it.

But Shaw Danon with his stubborn temper, he felt it was a challenge for his belief. He wanted to think, to find out an answer.

Just like that, he had pondered and walked for three days, but still couldn't think of an answer.

That day, Shaw Danon suddenly felt there were more travelers on the road. He looked and found there was a small town ahead. It was not large, but there were many people on the road.

Excitement passed through Shaw Danon's heart, and forgot his concern temporary. For the past three days, there were not many people. Now he saw a small town, it raised his spirit.

As he walked near, next to the entrance, there was a stone carved with the words "Laguna Collective". This was probably the town's name.

Shaw Danon entered quickly. The sound of people was getting louder. The road passed straight through the town. On the sides of the road, some were residences, some were shops, but the most were peddlers showing their goods directly on the floor next to the road. Sound of peddle hitting against his ears. It was just like a drawing of the world.

Shaw Danon walked into the crowd, smiled showed on his lips. When he was still young living in Grasstemple Village, he could remember it was something like that. The mortal world is a different experience than the cultivation on Mount Jadeon.

"Dong dong dong dong dong dong dong....."

When Shaw Danon was still in his past memories, suddenly a sky shocking gong sound came from the road ahead. It surprised him. Then the residents next to him increased their pace toward the sound. There were several of people talking along their way: "Hurry, the chief is having a gathering speech."

“I think it is about that thing.”

“Yeah, I heard the chief, marshal Li and scholar Fan had discussed about it for the entire last night. I wonder have they think of a plan yet?”

“Wish they have a plan, otherwise I don’t know how I am going to live on with this!”

.....

As Shaw Danon heard the conversation, his curiosity was hooked, he followed the crowd. Just a minute, several hundreds of people had gathered around a stone platform in the center of the town.

Shaw Danon stood within the crowd of people, looking at the center. The stone platform was half-man high. It seem quite smooth. Three people were standing on it. Two were old and one was young. They were probably the chief, marshal Li, and scholar Fan.

When everyone was gathered, the oldest man stepped forth, waved his hand toward the residents. The residents became quiet.

When it was completely quiet, the old man looked around. With a heavy tone, he said: “Folks, about today this gathering, I believe everyone already know why. Three months ago, that devil came and began to live inside the ‘Dark Drake Cave’ ten miles away. Since then, it kept troubling this town. And recently at this months, it was getting worse. Each night it came and robbed countless of livestock. And then, three days ago, the Wang family resisted for their last ox, they were.....unfortunately killed in the hand of that devil.”

Sigh of sadness rose among the residents, some people even cursed. Shaw Danon understood the picture, but he still did not know what kind of thing is the devil.

The chief continued: "Old fellow as a chief, but can not give the town peace, it is very shameful. After a discussion with marshal Li and scholar Fan last night, we believe the devil is not like the normal one, not normal people like us can resist. So we are going to make a notice to ask for some cultivators to come and capture the devil. As for the cost, we need the support from everyone."

After he was finished, discussion rose among the crowd: "The chief is right, we really need to hire cultivators to capture the devil."

"If this continue, we probably going to get eaten up by the devil, why we need to care about money?"

"Right, right....."

The three men who stand on the stone platform saw most of the residents had agreed, the chief was relieved, said: "Alright, last night I also asked scholar Fan to write a notice. Put the notice up." Then he nodded to the scholar looking young man. The scholar replied, and took out a piece of paper. There was writing on it. He walked down from the stone platform and putted up the notice on a brick wall.

The residents immediately gathered around it. Shaw Danon also went there and have a look. The paper said:

There is a three-tails fox spirit living in Dark Drake Cave ten miles away from town, often trouble the town and steal livestock at night, and even harm people. But the devil magic is too powerful, we specially asking for powerful cultivators to help the people and remove the devil. Laguna Collective is willing to pay five hundreds silver for the work.

Shaw Danon knew the money was payed by the Laguna Collective's residents, and the residents were all agreed. He hesitated for a moment. He wanted to help, but as the think of what the residents and the chief said, this devil must be very powerful. His skill was weak. Unable to defeat the monster is nothing, but if he dies and ashamed his master, this is not something he can burden with.

When he was in hesitation, there was suddenly a disturbance within the crowd. He quickly raise his head, surprised to see a large man walking in. He passed through the crowd by softly push the people to the side easily like they were water.

When the large man got near, Shaw Danon could see him clearly. This person's age was not old, around twenty. A pair of thick eyebrows and large eyes, square face and wide ears, very fit for this surprisingly large body. Wave of prestige came out from him.

Among the people, the tallest could only reach this man's shoulders. With this, he was like crane standing among the chicken.

He walked to the wall, read through the notice, then, without saying anything, he ripped it off.

The crowd exclaimed. The large man turned around, his eyes swept across the people around him. The residents became quiet. The large man said in a deep voice: "I am 'Vajra' master 'Herald of Valor' only disciple Onara. Under master's order to come out practice. Today here, I will help everyone to do a righteous work."

Shaw Danon startled. Searched through his mind, he couldn't find a cultivation faction called "Vajra".

Everyone was staring at him. The chief and others also arrived in front of Onara. The chief carefully said: "This.....brave man, that devil is very powerful, not, ahem, not just pure strength is require to defeat it. It can be very dangerous, are you sure?"

That large man nodded, glanced at the chief, then said in his deep voice: "You don't believe me?"

The chief was stared by the large eyes, his heart was a little afraid, but he forced himself said: "No-no, I am only reminding you."

The large man looked around, after a moment, his eyes landed on the brick wall that used for putting up the notice.

"Do you need this wall?"

The chief startled, asked in confuse: "Normally it is no use. Today we just use it for the notice."

Onara laughed, then shouted: "Move out of the way."

The sound was loud as thunder, Shaw Danon felt his ears were ringing, not to mention about the residents. Everyone's face lost their color. Just a second, they stepped back and created a large opening, only the large man was standing there.

He frowned and putted his hand flat, then stamped heavily on the ground with his right foot. He formed a mark with one hand. His mouth was quickly mumbling incantation, then shouted:

“Rise!”

Waves of fierce wind came out from the large man. They could hear the wind screaming against their ears. It almost knocked them over. Their feet fell backward. Gold light rose, the large man summoned a large golden spiked club. It lay horizontally across the air, glowing with gold light, with the word “Shatterer” carved on it, added a bit solemn.

Everyone immediately cheered. Shaw Danon stood within the crowd and frowned. When Puzhi taught him the incantation of “Fawin Wisdom”, although there was no guided him, he understood a little about Fuwa's art from his continue secret practice. The spiked club Onara summoned glowed with solemn gold light and his casting posture were similar to Puzhi, probably has some relationship to Fuwa's cultivation.

The glowing golden staff was very large, even larger than its owner. It was controlled by Onara in the air. Onara's eyes widen, pointed his finger, then in the whistle of wind, the spiked club crushed on the wall from the above.

Everyone exclaimed!

“Boom”, within the loud bang, cloud of dust stirred. A good wall had turned into dust in the matter of second under Onara’s power.

“Wow.....” Every residents were stunned, then everyone turned into smile. With Onara’s strong magic, to get rid of the three-tails fox spirit is very easy. The chief stepped forth, laughing: “Warrior Onara has great talent, this affair is all rely on you.”

Onara nodded.

The chief paused, hesitated then said: “But there is one thing wish warrior Onara can understand.”

Perhaps Onara’s voice was born to be deep, his voice remain the same: “Senior please say it.”

The chief said: “As for the payment, it is our residents’ hard-earned money, so wish after warrior get rid of the devil first, then.....”

But unexpectedly, Onara waved his hand: “No worry. Before I departed, master had reminded me, we Righteous must step up without hesitation if there is devil, just see it as an opportunity to practice. As for money, no need to mention it. All you need to do is feed me a meal so I will have the strength to fight the devil.”

The chief was very pleased, such cheep thing was surely the best. He quickly replied: “Of’course, of’course. Come with me, I will make sure you satisfy.”

When Shaw Danon heard Onara's word, he felt ashamed. In the past his master and shi niang often taught the disciples like that, but now the opportunity was in front of him, he felt scared. He really shamed his master.

His blood was boiling. He felt he is from a famous faction, how can he ignore this affair. Then he was about to announce his identity and go with Onara.

But when he was about to do so, he suddenly heard a worry, anxious voice next to his ear: "Ah, this young sir, you have a dark cloud over your head, your glabella is black, death on your face, something unfortunate is going to happen!"

Shaw Danon was very confident, the words were at his throat and about to do a righteous thing, but unexpected to hear such word. He was surprised and took back the words. Carelessly, he stepped on a wrong spot. He stepped on a piece of dog poop.

This anger was not easy. Shaw Danon jumped up, but still felt his foot stink. Even with the shoe, he could feel the chill, he shivered. He turned around angrily to see who the hell was that person?

There was an old man. His beard and hair were all white with a plain, clean face. He looked like a celestial, highly cultivated person. The first impression was respected. Next to the old man, there was an eight or nine years old girl with two plaits. She look playful and cute. She was enjoying the lollipop in her hand.

Shaw Danon was paused by the old man's appearance. He could not curse on him but to think what to say. That old man looked at his foot, there was no apology, but more anxiety: "Look, look, isn't that an omen?"

Shaw Danon was surprised, asked: "What?"

The old man glanced at him, said in a meaningful tone: "You never heard of the saying: Step on dog poop, bad luck comes to you; nine die out of ten, misery fills the sky?"

Shaw Danon startled, said: "No, but I heard my shixiong said, when someone meet a good fortune, people will say he is on dog poop luck....."

The old man was stunned, then shook his head: "Fool, fool, such nonsense."

Shaw Danon said: "How?"

The old man said: "Put it is this way, do you step on dog poop on purpose all the time?"

Shaw Danon was surprised. On Bamboo Peak, because he was the youngest, he sometimes need to do the dirty work. As for Tian Bolis' dog Big Yella was.....

He immediately shook his head.

The old man nodded: "Then have you seen a person step on dog poop on purpose?"

Shaw Danon shook his head: "How can there be such thing!"

“Correct!” The old man clapped his hand: “If there is such thing as dog poop luck, why people avoid it; also, dog poop is a very dirty thing, so stink that everyone hates it. When you step on it, how can it not be bad luck but good luck?”

Shaw Danon felt it was quite correct. It seem like heself was wrong. Then as he remembered what the old man said, it was really scary. He couldn't help but let out cold sweat, said: “About what senior have said about me.....”

The old man frowned tightly, examined Shaw Danon, until Shaw Danon was very uncertain, he said: “Well, you seem to be in a great disaster. Why don't you come this way, I will give you a palmistry examine.”

“Palmistry?” Shaw Danon startled, then noticed the old man was holding a bamboo pole, with a white cloth tied on it, written: Immortal's Guidance.

So that old man is a fortune-teller. But Shaw Danon did not look down on him. The reason is because the founder of Jadeon, Master Jadeon was also a fortune-teller. Though no one in Jadeon practice this now, but Jadeon always very friendly toward the fortune-tellers, or else is it that disrepect the founder?

Shaw Danon hesitated, but he knew when he was talking to the old man, the residents already surrounded Onara to far away already. He thought it won't be bad to let this old man to have a look at him. The chief already said that large man will fight the devil after the meal, so Shaw Danon still have time.

Then he turned and said to the old man: “That's fine, I will need to trouble senior to help me have a look.”

That old man laughed, then pointed to a tree on the road side: "Let us talk over there." After that, he turned away.

When Shaw Danon was about to follow, suddenly a clear voice said: "Big brother."

Shaw Danon was stunned. It was the little girl who was standing next to the old man eating a lollipop. He did not know why she called him. Shaw Danon looked at her rosy cheeks, she was very cute. He bended down and smiled: "What it is, little girl?"

The little girl chewed, the spitted out several nuts, looking at Shaw Danon, half smiling: "There is still dog poop under your foot, very stink!"

"Ah!" Shaw Danon immediately blushed, jumped up and kept shaking his foot, trying to get rid of the dirty thing.

The little girl looked at his embarrassed situation, she laughed, the skipped to the old man under the tree.

Chapter 49 Divination

Finally cleaned up the dirty thing from his foot, Shaw Danon turned around and saw the little girl already went to the old man, whispered to him about something. The old man nodded and smiled.

Shaw Danon blushed, maybe they were saying things laughing at him. After a hesitation, he went to them, said: "Senior, you said I am in great danger, what does that mean?"

The old man squinted his eyes, smiled: "Young sir, although the center of your forehead is plump enough, your cheeks are a little thin, probably not in a rich family, right?"

Shaw Danon trusted him more, he nodded: "Senior is right, I born in a farm."

That old man smiled, softly tapped his robe, said normally: "I see your eyebrows are quite thick, straight and high, but at the right end there is a small mole. This place indicate parents. I am afraid your parents are probably gone already?"

Shaw Danon was surprised, he believed him even more, he nodded: "Senior

you have eyes of wisdom, my parents were dead when I was young.”

The old man said: “Why don’t you hold your hand out and let me see it, young sir?”

Shaw Danon was already quite believe in the old man. He held out his hand. When the old man was examining it with a smile on his face. The little girl suddenly came out, grabbed Shaw Danon’s hand. Shaw Danon was surprised. The little girl examined at his hand like her grandpa, then she laughed and ran away, leaving several stickly crystal sugars. It felt really bad.

Shaw Danon was stunned, but he could not yell at the little child. He could only convince himself that he was unlucky. The old man handed him a handkerchief, smiled: “My granddaughter is naughty, don’t be mad on her.”

Shaw Danon smiled bitterly, then used the handkerchief to clean him his hand. When he lifted his head, he saw the old man was chatting with his granddaughter again, wonder what they were talking about.

The old man noticed Shaw Danon’s eyes, he smiled: “Okay, let me see young sir’s palm?”

Shaw Danon held out his hand while his eyes were fixed on the little girl, feared she will fooling around again. This time the little girl was very quiet, she only giggling at Shaw Danon, wonder what she was laughing at?

After a moment, the old man’s face color changed, “My god.”

Shaw Danon was surprised, asked: “What it is?”

The old man did not say much, he pointed to Shaw Danon's palm, said:
"Young sir, do you see your life line?"

Shaw Danon glanced at it, did not know any meaning about it, he said in confuse: "What?"

The old man said solemnly: "I see your life line is very different than normal people. At the beginning, there is already a large gap. That mean there was a terrible disaster when you was young. That was so horrible that most of your family and friends were involved in it, only slim chance of survive! It seem like your parents were unfortunately passed away during that disaster."

Shaw Danon's heart was sour, now he believed that old man completely. He said sadly: "Senior you-you are a living god. You are completely right."

That old man sighed, then said: "Originally, you can not escape from this disaster, but there is good fortune in your life. Between the gap, there is a 'new jade square', continue your life line and continue your life. It is a great fortune in the misfortune."

Puzhi's face suddenly floated in Shaw Danon's mind. Silenced for a moment, he gritted his teeth, said: "Today senior said I am in danger, please instruct me is it good or bad!"

The old man smiled, then coughed: "This, this....."

Shaw Danon asked: "What is it, senior?"

That old man smiled: “Not to hide it from young mister, when I started this business, I made a rule that I must receive payment when giving divination, so.....”

Shaw Danon realized, quickly asked: “Senior, how much is it?”

That old man looked at him smiling: “Each time ten silvers.”

Shaw Danon putted his hand at his waist, he paused when he heard it, said: “That expensive, but I only brought four silvers.”

That old man frowned, said: “Anyway, let it be four silvers then. I see fate allow us to know each other, I will help you this time.”

Shaw Danon was very pleased. The silvers was not very useful for him anyway. He could survive in the wild. So he gave the old man four silvers.

The old man putted the silvers into a safe spot, then examined Shaw Danon’s face again seriously, said: “Young sir, I see your glabella is black, dark cloud over your head, your luck isn’t too good. If you advance there will be a lot of dangers, why don’t you return, then everything will be fine.”

Shaw Danon was surprised: “That’s it?”

The old man nodded: “Correct.”

Shaw Danon hesitated: “But I have important affair to the east.....”

Old man tried to convince him: "Young sir, what is it that is more important than your life, it is better to return." Then, he saluted, "We can meet here, that mean fate meant it to happen. We will see each other again in future, farewell."

Shaw Danon frowned, and nodded absently, watching the old and the young disappeared with the crowd of people. Shaw Danon was standing there, seem lost his direction.

At the corner of the street, the old man and the little girl hid and stuck out their heads, looked at Shaw Danon. That young man stood among the stream of people, he seem lost. After a while, he turned and walked away.

"Ho ho, an other four silvers." The old man's attitude suddenly changed. Took out the silvers from his waist, kept on laughing. But the little girl remained calm, peered at him, said: "Grandpa, why are you doing this again?"

That old man laughed, putted away the silvers, smiled at his granddaughter: "Tonni, you are really useful as my granddaughter. You can already see through the past life and yet you are not even ten years old. When the time comes, you will be a very outstanding talent in divination."

Tonni snorted: "I can't see how are those easy books to be difficult. It is clear that grandpa you did not work hard in the past, and yet you still have the face to talk about it."

The one with the actual talent was Tonni. She read a little about Shaw Danon's fortune, and secretly told her grandpa when there was a chance.

The old man was clearly very dote this granddaughter. He did not care about what she said, he smiled: “Don’t underestimate the books that grandpa gave you. ‘Mingli Jiu Suan’ and ‘Yu Zhu Xiang Xue’ are passed down by our ancestor Jadeon. That mean you are gifted at divination. If it is other people, ho ho, me for example, I can’t figure out what the book is talking about for my entire life.”

Tonni cursed him, turned around and saw Shaw Danon was already gone. She turned back and said: “You said that his future is filled with dangers, what is that?”

The old man giggled: “Of’course I was lying to him. But what do you see from him, is he really in disaster?”

Tonni shook her head: “I can only read ‘Past Fortune’, as for ‘Future Fortune’ I can only know a little, can’t be sure about it!”

Old man nodded: “Correct, Past Fortune is fixed, can not change, of’course it is easy; Future Fortune is unknown and unfixed variable of future, it is the highest level of divination, no way it is going to be easy.”

Tonni shrugged, followed her grandpa walking, said: “But from what I can see, that person’s fortune is very awkward, it is the ‘Chaos Life’, the most difficult to predict in the divination book. This life is pretty rare.”

“No need to bother with him, we get the money anyway. Come, grandpa bring you to eat.....”

“Oh.....right, grandpa, you mentioned about Master Jadeon. You always said

our ancestor was from Jadeon, why don't you go there and tell them. With the position Jadeon hold today, and your age, aren't you going to have good food and anything you want?"

"Shush....." The old man was surprised, looked around and saw no one heard them, he relieved, whispered: "What does a little girl like you know? Jadeon is the best cultivation faction of the world, all we know is just the divination from Master Jadeon. If we go there mindlessly, they probably going to think we are scammer and jail us for several hundreds years. And beside,"

He smiled, the celestial like manner when he was talking to Shaw Danon repeated: "I Tanis Ka is not the type of person who flatters the powerful."

Tonni startled, said happily: Grandpa, can't expect you to have such moral, is it really....."

"Ah!"

Before she could finish, Tanis Ka's eyes brightened, he stepped forth and stopped a rich looking fat woman, said solemnly: "Madam, I see your have a dark cloud over your head, your glabella is black, death on your face, something unfortunate is going to happen! What about let me to give you a divination, how it is?"

Tonni was stunned, but her grandpa kept giving her a look, so all she could do was pretending to be naive and cute, carefully examine that rich, fat woman's face.

※ ※ ※

Shaw Danon walked across the street, unwittingly he had left the small town. He got delayed while he was in the town, also with thing in his mind, Shaw Danon discovered it was dusk already.

The sun shining in a slanted angle, marked the night sky with bright red fire, also pulled his shadow. It was already night, every houses had went back home. There was no one outside of the town, only he was there, very lonely.

He looked at his own shadow, his heart was frustrated.

From what he heard from Wan Ren Wang, all Righteous factions were sent to East Sea, Billows. He could guess his master Tian Bolis will probably be there. He wanted to reunion with them, but today he met an “old immortal” that told him not to go there. But if he return to Jadeon and discover no one is there, what should he do?

Since the time he escaped from Forsaken Abyss of Kongsang Mountain, he wished he could see his master as soon as possible to tell them he is safe. But these days with many things in his mind, he was slowed. But today something told him to turn back, he couldn't make the decision.

When he was uncertain, suddenly foot steps came from behind him. He turned around and saw it was the large man Onara. He was leaving the small town.

When he got near, he stopped, glanced at Shaw Danon, then ignored him. He looked at the sun set at the west, murmured to himself: “Where the sun is at is the west, um, the chief said the Dark Drake Cave is ten miles to the north. It should be that way.” As he found the correct direction, he began walking to

that way.

Shaw Danon heard it, then yelled: “Onara.....warrior, are you going to Dark Drake Cave?”

Onara startled, stopped and turned around looking at Shaw Danon said: “Correct, who are you?”

Shaw Danon’s mind was racing, he thought: Since I can’t go to the east, why don’t go take out the devil with this man. When master ask about it, I did a good deed, it is easier when talk about it in front of his master.

After he made the decision, he smiled: “I am also a cultivator, I saw everything clearly today inside Laguna Collective. I was planned to go with you, but there was some affair that caused delay. But fortunately I got here in time, does mister willing to go with me?”

Onara examined Shaw Danon, said in a deep voice: “This is not for fun, there are many dangers. I see your age is not old, which faction are you from?”

Shaw Danon startled. Onara’s age was not old either, and with his naturally honest, simple looking, Shaw Danon did not expect him to say such thing. He smiled: “I am under Jadeon Head of Bamboo Peak Tian Bolis. The level of cultivation is still basic, I will still need mister Shi’s assistance.”

Onara was surprised, widen his eyes, said: “What, you are a Jadeon?”

Shaw Danon nodded: “Yes.”

Onara’s eyes were filled with admire, said: “Ah, sorry sorry. Jadeon is the top cultivation faction today. I have already heard Jadeon’s amazing arts are admire by the world. For the disrespect that just happened, please forgive me.”

Shaw Danon was stunned, his mind was glad that his clan was so well known out here, he smiled and replied: “Mister Shi over praise me. Let us go in there together so we can help each other when we are trying the get rid of the devil for the people.”

Onara laughed: “Good.”

※ ※ ※

Dark Drake Cave located in the wood at ten miles north of Laguna Collective. On the way, Shaw Danon and Onara had got used to each other’s name during the conversation. Shaw Danon was a honest person. Onara’s body was large, but he was not rude, but passive, also a honest type of person. The two were soon calling other’s name directly.

The sky began to darken, with the remaining sunlight weakly shining at the ground.

Shaw Danon saw the woods were getting thicker, they were probably going to arrive at the forest soon, he called out: “Brother Shi.”

Onara answered: "What?"

Shaw Danon said: "Today morning I saw you summoned a golden, spiked club esper with solemn energy. And the incantation seem like belong to the Fuwa. Although I heard Fuwa does not have spiked club, but I feel that is a Fuwa item, am I right?"

Admire flashed through Onara's eyes, he said: "Xiao Fan, you are really live up to be a Jadeon disciple, you know a lot."

Shaw Danon flushed.

Onara spoke again: "We Vajra have very little number of people, normally just one heir per generation. My master Herald of Valor encountered me in a small, remote village. He said my courageous potential is just perfect for practicing his Vajra cultivation. He senior had once said that back in ancient time, Vajra has relationship with Fuwa. But the distance of time is long, no one remember anything. Generations after generations, the incantation had became very different, can not be compare to Skysong the true Fuwa cultivation."

Then Onara paused, he smiled: "My master said, although my cultivation is not high, also without many buddhist rules, as a cultivation, we need to do some good deeds. So if encounter any devils, we must get rid of them."

Shaw Danon was admire, said: "Ah, your master is so cultivated!"

Onara nodded: "Yeah, my master is very righteous."

Shaw Danon smiled quietly, but then strangely he remembered the

conversation between him and Wan Ren Wang. He secretly thought: If Onara's master know the esper I am using is also an evil object, is he probably not going to let his disciple to travel with me?

Then again, the elders in Jadeon will also hate this evil object badly!

And then, what about himself who is using the evil object?

Am I already an evil person.....

Shaw Danon turned silent. Onara assumed Shaw Danon was being vigilance since they were getting closer to Dark Drake Cave. He didn't mind it. He, too, searched through the surrounding, prepared for a battle with the devil.

The sky, finally darkened.

When the first star rose from the edge of the sky, the two arrived at the outside of the forest.

Onara took a deep breath, told Shaw Danon: "I heard the chief said: the Dark Drake Cave is inside the forest. The cave is rich with blackstones. In the past, the local residents often came here and used the blackstones to repair the road. Of'course they can't go here now. The cave is unpredictably deep, we need to be careful."

Shaw Danon nodded, thought: No matter how deep it is, it won't be deeper than the Forsaken Abyss in Kongsang Mountain's Cave of Fangs. The two prepared themselves, just when they were about to step into the dangerous place, suddenly, at ten yards away from them, there was a panic cry:

“Ouch!”

They startled and turned to the sound. Shaw Danon was very surprised. There were two people running toward to them from the right, they were the one that gave him a divination during the day. The little girl was still fine, but old man was gasping for air, where was the celestial manner?

Shaw Danon stopped in front of them, said: “What happened, you two?”

Tanis Ka was in a hurry and suddenly saw a person appeared before him. He was surprised. But then he realized it was the silly boy earilier, so he was relieved. He looked back and saw the road was quiet, no sign of anyone. He exhaled a long breath, stopped the pace, and told his grand daughter Tonni: “Tonni, stop running now, seem like that person did not follow us.”

Tonni was breathing heavily, but her hand was still holding a strand of lollipop. It was appeared she really love that kind of sweet. After she heard what Tanis Ka said, she stopped running after a distant, gasping for air.

Onara arrived next to Shaw Danon, seeing the old and the young were like homeless dogs, he asked: “What it is?”

Shaw Danon also have the same question. But before he speaks, Tonni was already complaining loudly: “It is all because of you grandpa, scammed that fat woman is not enough, and still went to that young lady. I already saw that she is extremely sharp, you think we can trick her?”

Tanis Ka said angrily: “You didn’t tell me this earilier, it got me, grandpa,

slapped by that woman. It is still hurt right now. If not because I have ancestor's secret Art of Earth Sink, we are already.....”

Before he could finish, there was a clear shouting suddenly came from the night sky: “Old scammer, let see where you can go!”

Everyone was surprised. A beam of white light striked toward Tanis Ka from the sky in the speed of lighting. Tanis Ka did not know any cultivation, and since he was unprepared, he did not have time to use any tricks. He was about to get hit by white light.

Shaw Danon couldn't ignore it, for they knew each other a little, and also the situation is dire. Although from what they said, he felt he was scammed by them, but at this moment he couldn't care much. He waved his hand, the fire stick flew out and blocked the hit for Tanis Ka.

“Bang”, a loud noise. The white light was blocked. A surprised female voice came from the air. After the white light disappeared, a lady landed on the ground before them.

After that, Shaw Danon was stunned. The lady was in a watery green dress; a little golden bell hanging at her waist, making clear ring; A jade clear white flower between her fingers. At this moment, her face was smiling. She was no longer looking at the old man, but her pair of bright eyes were looking at Shaw Danon, she laughed softly: “So timely, Shaw Danon.”

Who can this be if it is not the Felkin girl Bilu?

Chapter 50 Fox Spirit

Shaw Danon startled. He could never expect to meet her again so soon. He wanted to refuse to admit it, but after all, going through life and death together in Forsaken Abyss Blooddrip Cave had left him a bit of feeling. He could only smile embarrassingly: “How come you come here?”

Onara noticed Shaw Danon was acting a little weird, he asked: “Xiao Fan, who is this person?”

Shaw Danon blurted out: “She is.....” Then he realized if others know Bilu’s identity, plus his relationship with Bilu, it will be great trouble. He pulled back the words from his mouth.

Onara was puzzled why Shaw Danon stopped, Bilu smiled, said: “Don’t ask him, we only met for short time, only saw each other for once, he doesn’t know anything about me.”

Onara got it, but seeing Shaw Danon’s face, he suddenly gave a weird smile, and whispered in Shaw Danon’s ears: “Brother Zhang, I see your expression isn’t right, do you like that lady?”

Shaw Danon was shocked, face immediately turned pale, quickly said: “You can’t speak unreasonable like this, I-I have no relationship with her!”

Bilu was looking at him filled with smile, but after hearing what he said, her face darkened, snorted, laughed coldly: “Correct, why would I have any relationship with this shameless, dirty thing?”

Everyone startled. They thought of her delightful surprise look on her face when she saw Shaw Danon, and now turned back on him faster than turning a book, plus the “shameless, dirty” in her words, everyone was looking at Shaw Danon with a strange look.

Shaw Danon was very embarrassed, did not know how to explain it. But from anyone’s eyes, they would probably think it is just argument between a pair of couple. Everyone smiled.

Onara looked at the sky, told Shaw Danon: “Brother Zhang, the time is getting late, we should get going.”

Shaw Danon was very eager to leave this embarrassing situation. He quickly answered, but as he spoke, Bilu suddenly shouted: “Old scammer, stand still for me!”

They turned around and discovered Tanis Ka and Tonni were trying the sneak away, but they were spotted by Bilu. The Heartending Flower in Bilu’s hand glowed with white light again. The chill energy rose Shaw Danon was surprised and immediately stopped walking, said: “Wait, wait. How did they offended you?”

Bilu glared at Shaw Danon, seem like she was still angry, said coldly: “None of your business!”

Shaw Danon was rejected right in his face, he became a little gloomy. But Tanis Ka had suffered from Bilu, now there was a person who is willing to stand up for him, how can he let it go. He quickly said: “Young mister, you need to save me. When I was in the small town, I gave this lady a divination due to kindness, but she ignored the truth. When it was not as same as her wish, she began to use violent on us.....”

Bilu said angrily: “Lies, you old scammer, filled with mouthful of lies, scam money from people, and now you frame on me, you ask for it!”

Then she moved her hand, the white light of Heartending Flower brightened, shined the surrounding like morning. Seeing she was about to strike, Shaw Danon said in hurry: “Bilu, wait.”

But it was like Bilu did not hear it, after a second, Heartending Flower left her hand, flashing in mid-air. After a soft sound, just in an instant, the bright white light had caused the moon and the stars to lose their color. The sky was filled with bright and shining petals with strong fragrance hitting against the nose.

This was a very rare scenery, but in Tanis Ka’s eyes, it was like seeing a ghost. Color lose from his face, he immediately grabbed Tonni and ran while his right hand reached into his clothes, took out a small yellow paper. It looked quite similar to Taoist’s talisman that used for capturing ghost.

Shaw Danon knew the power of Bilu’s esper, and Tanis Ka on the other seemed like he did not know any cultivation, Shaw Danon stepped forth and stood before Tanis Ka, summoned the fire stick in front of him and helped Tanis

Ka to block this round.

Bilu frowned as she saw Shaw Danon suddenly came up. A smile flashed across her face, the flowers in the sky suddenly stopped in mid-air, dancing before Shaw Danon. Her face remain stern, said coldly: "What are you doing?"

Shaw Danon glanced at her, his heart was scared a little, mumbled: "They are not cultivators, why you make it difficult for them, can you let them go?"

Bilu snorted, waved her hand. The flowers in the sky suddenly flew back and reformed into a white flower under the radiance of the moon and the stars, returned to her hand: "Why don't you ask him what happened?"

Shaw Danon was also wondering, he turned and began to ask Tanis Ka. At first Tanis Ka was still trying to cover the truth, but Bilu kept on interrupting at the important part. With that going, Shaw Danon and Onara understood what happened: after Tanis Ka successfully earned money off from the fat, rich woman, with his greedy heart, and noticed Bilu's clothing was expensive, he went to her without caring Tonni's eyes that were trying to signal him to stop.

But Bilu was extremely intelligent that can not be compare to normal people, how could she get fooled so easily. At the beginning, Tonni was correct with Bilu's past. But Bilu continued asking, Tonni could not tell Tanis Ka directly, so Tanis Ka made up stuff and immediately showed the flaw. Bilu turned rage and about to teach the two scammers a lesson.

Tanis Ka realized he was in great trouble. He knew nothing about cultivation, but he still got some life saving teaching that passed down from Master Jadeon, and that include Art of Earth Sinking. He used it to escape for a moment. But his skill was not good enough, unable to control the direction, coincidentally landed

near Shaw Danon and Onara.

Bilu was not expected that old man will do that, but she was Vim Archlord's only daughter after all, such little trick could not trouble her. With only one spell, she immediately found out the old man's location, then came after him in the blink of an eye.

Shaw Danon startled for a while, stared at Tanis Ka, said: "So my dangerous future you have told me this morning is fake?"

Tanis Ka rolled his eyes, before he got the chance to speak, Bilu already laughed: "So you fell into his trap!"

This laughter immediately melted her icy cold look. Shaw Danon was very embarrassed. He thought helping Tanis Ka was very not worth it, and he was ashamed in front of Bilu. He straighten his face and walked away.

Tanis Ka was surprised and his heart complained. Onara saw the embarrassing situation, he reminded Shaw Danon: "Brother Zhang, we should go in there, the affair is important."

Shaw Danon nodded, ignored other people and entered the woods with Onara. Bilu startled, asked: "This forest is filled with evil energy, what are you two doing?"

Shaw Danon answered: "We are going in there to get rid of the devil."

Then he pulled Onara, entered the forest in quick pace. Onara turned his head and looked at Bilu and the old man, then followed Shaw Danon. The scene

turned quiet instantly. Bilu colded her face and turned to Tanis Ka. Tanis Ka immediately held up his hand before his chest, ready to defend himself, but can he manage to do that was another story.

Unexpectedly, Bilu did not attack. Pondered for a moment, she asked Tanis Ka: “Do you know what are they doing in there?”

Tanis Ka startled. He was also in Laguna Collective, surely he knew what it is, he said: “Of’ course, there is a Dark Drake Cave inside of the forest, a three-tails fox occupy there. They are going to get rid of it for Laguna Collective. What it is?”

Bilu snorted, lowered her eyes, said quietly: “With his little bit of cultivation, he.....”

Tanis Ka saw that she was lost in thought, it was a great opportunity and how could he let it go. He took Tonni’s hand and walked away stealthly. When Bilu’s mind returned, they were already gone far, only shadows of their back remain.

With Bilu’s skill, catch up to them is piece of cake, but it seemed like she had no intention to do so. Instead, she turned and stared blinkly at the darkening forest under the color of moon.

※ ※ ※

Shaw Danon and Onara entered the forest. The woods were tall and lush, blocking the moon light, caused the forest became dark. As they walked, the

surrounding was silence, in the deep of the forest, there was a veil of thin fog.

They looked at each other, Onara whispered: "Be careful."

Shaw Danon nodded. They summoned their espers, cautiously advanced.

After a while of walk, the ancient trees were towering to the skies, waves of Yin energy surrounding them. It seemed like they had arrived at the deepest part of the forest. At that moment, they suddenly heard a soft, plaintive lady voice coming out from the fog among the woods:

Small pine hill, moon as frost,

Man like wandering flower and hurt.

Few decades, three thousands years,

But wish we still remember each other even we are separated.

The female sound was mildly, softly whispering. Though they couldn't see her, they could feel the sadness coming from her. Shaw Danon and Onara looked at each other, their faces changed. It was deep mid-night, and in this desolated place, it was most likely the spirit devil. The two cautiously walking toward to the sound.

The thin veil of fog soon swallowed them.

Not long after they entered, a green figure appeared at the spot where they stood, looking at the fog in the darkness. She frowned, pondered for a moment, then entered it.

The color of the night dimly shining in the woods. Few lines of moon light passed through the gaps of the leaves, shined at the wood, softly wagging.

Around them, there was only the quiet sound of the insects.

Suddenly, Onara grabbed Shaw Danon's shoulder. Shaw Danon was surprised, said: "What?"

Onara said quietly: "Listen."

Shaw Danon paid attention. He heard a soft sigh coming from ahead.

A beam of moon light, like a beacon in the darkness. A line of cold moon, softly shining at the fog, directionlessly flowing. A white clothes lady slowly came out from the deep of darkness. She stood under the light, looking toward them lightly.

Shaw Danon and Onara held their breath.

She was a gentle and charming lady. Long and straight beautiful hair lay on her shoulders, as soft as water; on her white skin, there was a pair of graceful eyebrows, a delicate nose, a light red lip, her watery eyes looked at them as it was like they can see through their heart.

She was a type of girl that could cause people to feel sad for her. She timidly standing under the moon light, staring at them.

The time, seem stopped at that moment.

“You, are coming to kill me?” She asked ghostly.

Shaw Danon and Onara were surprised. Onara bit his lip, stabled his mind, shouted: “Are you the devil called Three-tails fox spirit?”

Her watery eyes swept across Onara, then Shaw Danon’s face. Shaw Danon could felt it was like his face was touched by a gentle hand.

He was surprised. He could not imagine there can be such bewitched woman, she was totally not a human.

She did not answer, only frowning her eyebrows. It was like a line of sadness carved between her eyebrows.

She looked at the moon again. The bright moon was flawless, hanging in the sky.

“It is me.” She said ghostly.

※ ※ ※

The night was dark, it seemed like there was something hiding in the darkness

behind her.

Onara darkened his face. The large golden spiked club “Shatterer” glowing with gold light in his hand, turning the nearby woods into gold. Shaw Danon stood next to him, taking deep breath.

The lady didn't react. She glanced at them, then walked away softly to the side. Her snow white sleeve softly waved. The bushes moved away, showed a well. Looking at it from far away, they could see moss on the stone of the well. It appeared the well was very old.

She walked next to the well, looking down, she softly combing her hair with her hand.

They did not dare to move from seeing the strange action she was doing.

The lady's voice drifted within the forest: “This is a three thousands years old well. Legend said when you look into the well with a sincere wish during the full moon, your wish must be realize.” In her voice, there was sadness, “but, since I arrived here, I have looked into it three times, why, his illness still isn't getting better?”

Shaw Danon and Onara were stunned. From her tone, it was clearly a sad lady who was trapped by love. But Onara's mind was more solid than Shaw Danon's. He frowned, stepped forth. The sound of the wind rose in the forest. He said angrily: “Shameless devil, you dare to bewitch the people, hurry come here and receive your death!”

That lady turned around, her watery eyes glanced at them, ignored Onara, but looked at Shaw Danon. She suddenly said softly: "In your heart, is there a girl you deeply missed? Come and have a look."

Wind went past the forest, the chill got heavier.

The treetop was rustling.

Shaw Danon was blank, unwittingly he took a step.

Onara was surprised. Without saying, he rose up in the air, the Shatterer's golden light glared, whistled in the air, and crushed toward that lady's head. With such strength, not to mention a weak woman, even a tough man will still get crushed into sauce.

That lady's body was like fallen leaf, blew off by the strong wind of Shatterer and float backward, dodged earth shattering strike. After that, she floated in the air, opened her arms. After a moment, the devil energy became very strong. The sound of the devil howling. At the same moment, in the darkness behind her, countless of large eyes opened.

When Onara was unaware, with countless of wild calls, many dark black, vicious shadows came out from the darkness, passed the lady's white figure and rushed at Onara with their claws and fangs. And that lady was not looking at Onara, her gentle eyes were looking at Shaw Danon who was walking to the ancient well step by step.

The moon light shined on him, like frost, like snow.

In the deep of his heart, is there a person he missed deeply?

He was out of his mind.

“Xiao Fan!” A cry came from behind. Bilu appeared, quickly flew to him, said in a hurry: “Do not look!”

At that instant, Shaw Danon startled. The gentle lady in the mid air who was watching him, her face changed a little.

But then, he still looked into it.

So, deeply looked into it.

The sound of the wind stopped, everyone held their breath.

What did he see?”

Onara roared and shocked away the monsters. His large body grabbed the esper Shatterer. Red glow flashed on his face, it was like blood was about to come out. He charged up into the air, then sudden fell down like a loosen arrow. “Puff”, Shatterer inserted into the earth deeply, his mouth gave a heaven shocking roar at the same time:

“Shatter!”

It was like the entire stopped at this instant.

The earth within two yards diameter suddenly sunk in along with the trees. It was like a giant invisible hand pulled everything to underground. Only the earth near the well where Shaw Danon was standing did not get affected.

The Shatterer that was insert into the ground absorbed something, the entire staff was shining brightly. As Onara shouted the word “Shatter”, countless beam of light came out. As swift as lighting, they striked on the black shadow monsters in the air. At that moment, the pitful scream lingered at their ears. Some black shadow monsters fell on the ground, some just disappeared into thin air.

The gentle lady’s face changed, her face became pale, said: “Absorb earth and tree’s spirit into devil destroying energy, ‘Shatterer Staff’!”

Onara finished deal with the monsters, his first action was to look at Shaw Danon. Bilu also stopped, looking at him.

Shaw Danon raised his head. His face was nothing unusal, just a little confuse. But he soon became sober. He stood next to Onara, facing the gentle lady floating in mid-air.

That lady looked deeply at him, suddenly said: “What did you see?”

Publisher:

[TooLate](#)

From [doswap](#)
